





REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION



GEN

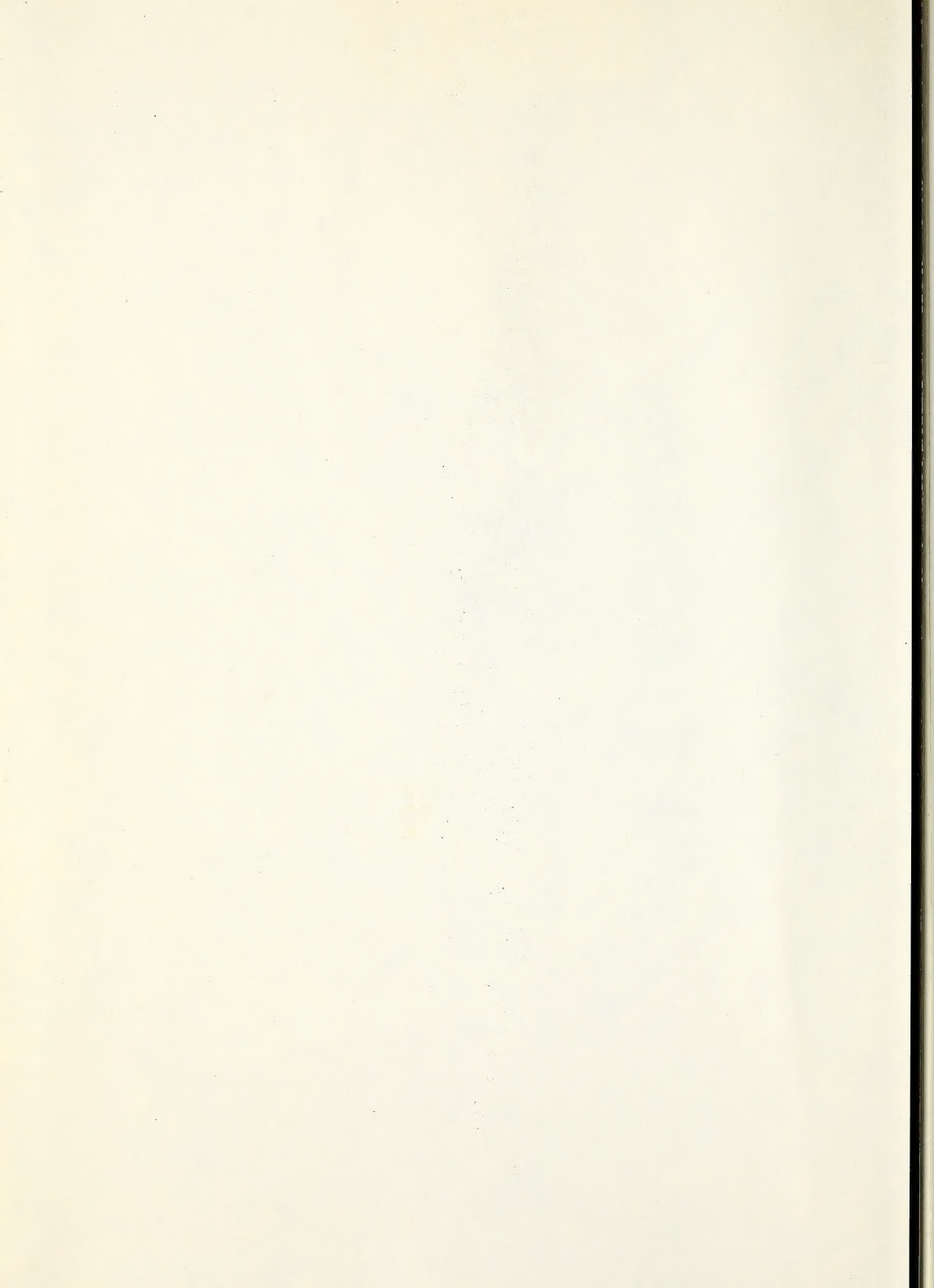
ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01777 1558

GENEALOGY  
974.402  
S049SHS  
1906-1915













Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2013

<http://archive.org/details/historicleavesv5v9some>

# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOLUME V

Historic Leaves

volumes 5-9

1906-1915

Published by  
THE E. M. WILSON HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Spartanburg, S. C.

Historic Lawes

Volume 3-9

1900-1915

1911 A TA

1911 1912 1913

1914 1915 1916



X 703133

# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOLUME V.

---

April, 1906

TO

January, 1907

---

Published by  
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Somerville, Mass.

93501





# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1906

Vol. V

No. 1







## CONTENTS

---

SOME OLD TREES—NUMBER 1	Sara A. Stone	Page 1
GUY O. HAWKINS PAPERS—NUMBER 1		10
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1925	Frank Mortimer Hawes	15

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and Curator Albed Morton Cutler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

---

### PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio*, SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE







# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. V.

APRIL, 1906

No. 1

---

## SOME OLD TREES. — NUMBER 1

By Sara A. Stone

The full title of this paper should be "Old and Historic Trees in and about Boston," for some of the trees mentioned are simply old, and have no connection with history properly speaking; that is, they are not connected with events of importance in the nation's annals.

There are a number of trees now standing which date back as far as the Revolution, a time which is rich in "local color." The Washington elm is the first of these to occur to the mind. Of the trees simply ancient, the Waverley oaks and the Hemlock wood of the Arnold Arboretum are prominent examples. Around these trees there is an atmosphere which fires the imagination. We long for the genius and the pen of a John Muir to penetrate the mystery and interpret the charm which surrounds these patriarchs. The emotion they awake is akin to awe, and is like that which inspired the writers of some of the grandest psalms, the psalms of nature. It stirs the reverent side of our being, while the feeling with which we view a tree like the Washington elm, in addition to our respect for its age, is that of pride and patriotism.

When we think of the events which have happened since the time of the early settlers, when this tree was young, or in its prime,—their struggles with nature and the Indians, sometimes with each other, the events which led to the Revolution, the birth of the constitution, the rise of the anti-slavery movement, and the final triumph of its advocates, the progress of science, the inventions which contribute so much to our happiness, the birth of





literature and art in America,—when we think of what all this means, the thought of human achievement stimulates us to try to keep up to the high standard set by our predecessors, especially those who rocked the “cradle of Liberty” in the troublous times preceding the Revolution.

On the first complete map of Boston, drafted by Captain John Bonner in 1722, is a record of three trees only, standing at the time the first settlers came. One of these, represented as the largest, was the “Old Elm” on Boston Common, blown down in the great storm of 1876. The two others were near the middle of what is now Park street, both long since victims of the march of time. A chair made of the wood of the “Old Elm” is now in the Boston Public Library. One of its descendants was planted on the hill where the Soldiers’ Monument stands in 1889, but it is not marked.

Shawmut, as the new settlement was first named, thus presented a striking contrast to Charlestown, which is said to have been covered with timber at that time. Fuel was obtained from Deer Island. So the first duty of the new comers was to plant trees, and with an eye to domestic economy the first trees planted were probably fruit trees.

There were large gardens on the summit of Beacon Hill, and also some belonging to the residences along Summer street. A quaint story of one of these old gardens is given in an article entitled, “A Colonial Boyhood,” in a recent number of the Atlantic Monthly, and it runs as follows:—

“Come with me out of the Subway station at Scollay Square. You will have been expecting to plunge at once into the bustle and hurly-burly of one of the busiest corners of Boston, a passing glance at Governor Winthrop’s statue your only tribute to old times. But we have been traveling not only under the streets of the city, but through two centuries and a quarter of time, and emerge to find ourselves on the outskirts of Boston, on the hill-side road which in the old days skirted the foot of Cotton Hill. We are higher up in the world than we had expected to be, and the water of the town cove comes in nearly to the foot of the hill on which we stand.





"A more distant outlook is over the roofs of houses and the masts of ships to the beautiful land-locked harbor and island-studded bay. In another direction, where we had thought to see the massive pile of the new Court House, a steep, grassy knoll rises behind the scattered houses, which with their gardens lie between it and the road.

"Let us enter the front gate of the nearest of these houses. An old gentle-woman and a child, perhaps five years of age, are walking in the 'South garden which lieth under it.' They are none other than little Nathaniel Mather, Increase Mather's second son, and his grandmother, Mrs. Richard Mather, with whom he is spending the day. . . . They have a basket between them in which to gather fruit, and the grandam is telling her little charge that she picked the first apples that grew on that early tree, long ago when Grandfather Cotton lived there and was minister to the first church."

While we are in this hill garden, let us take a look across the basin of the Charles and see if we cannot perceive the outlines of another orchard lying in the edge of Watertown, which was planted about the same time on land which Simon Stone chose for his dwelling-place soon after his arrival in 1636. The old gardens on Beacon Hill have long ago made room for modern buildings, but one of the trees of the orchard in Watertown, a pear tree, is still standing in Old Cambridge Cemetery, twisted and gnarled by the storms of two hundred and sixty years. Until within a year or two, it has borne fruit, hard and knotty like its own trunk.

Tree vandalism is not a new thing, for in 1635 the town passed an order to "prevent the trees planted in the settlement from being spoiled." So tree-planting went merrily on, with as little conception of the great events which should take place under their branches a hundred years or more later as we have when we plant for the future on Arbor Day.

Of the other trees on Boston Common, the oldest are those in the Beacon street mall, set out in 1815 or 1816. This was the mall which Doctor Holmes so loved, where the Autocrat and the Schoolmistress were walking that famous morning when





they decided to take the "long path" for life, together. This mall was also the scene of the farewell parade of the regiment which afterward covered itself and its young commander with glory at the siege of Fort Wagner, an event which is now fittingly commemorated by a magnificent bronze bas-relief.

Several old trees once stood close about the Common, planted probably soon after those first ordinances for the purpose. "The finest English elm in town" stood alone in its glory in what was known as Phillips pasture on Fort Hill, and dated probably from 1700. There was also a very tall English elm on Sudbury street, on the old Storer estate; and on the edge of High street, in what was then Quincy place, stood three handsome English elms, supposed to have been set out early in 1700.

Opposite the Old Granary Burying Ground stood a row of fine trees, which originally formed an avenue known as Paddock's Mall, which were planted in 1762. As Paddock was coach-builder to the Tory gentry, these were spared by the British during their occupation of Boston, but the trees suffered, later, from the hands of the patriots. Some of them survived until 1874, when they were removed, an act which excited the indignation of Longfellow, and doubtless others, when he read in the morning paper the news of the felling of the last of the Paddock elms. An elm, believed to have been one of the Paddock elms transplanted, was sacrificed in the location of the Congregational building. Had it been within the Granary Burying Ground, perhaps it might have been saved. "The Listener" has this to say about the Paddock elms and the Old Granary Burying Ground:—

"The missing foliage of the majestic collection of British elms that Major Adino Paddock, the London coach-maker, planted and guarded through his life against all indignities more vigilantly than the city forester of our times did, is made good to some extent by the Granary Burying Ground's trees, which go to form one of the most important and characteristic features of the old town. Seen from Washington street, as one turns into Bromfield street, this high bank of massed frondage is crowned in just the right place by a segment of the dome, that in the sun-





light is itself a sun-burst, and tree-tops and the dome's pure arc together lead the mind along to the green and gold of the common, whose 'contiguity of shade' is only separated from the Granary's by the beautiful spire of Park-street church. As one faces the solid and glorious greenery of the common, shot underneath with streaks of yellow sunshine on the slants of the hill-sides, one agrees with Professor Sargent that the room in the Subway was well lost to save every rood of this oasis, magnificent heritage from the old Boston of our pride, when sentiment was ever first and the material considerations second."

Perhaps the most famous of all the Boston trees no longer in existence was the old "Liberty tree," near the tavern of the same name, the latter still standing in 1883. The junction of Essex and Washington streets, which was in Revolutionary days known as Hanover square, was marked by a number of splendid elms, the largest of which was first called the "great tree." It was not till 1765 that the name "Liberty tree" was given it, at a patriotic celebration in honor of the expected repeal of the Stamp Act. It had already figured in many demonstrations of revolutionary feeling. On the repeal of the Stamp Act, in 1766, all the trees in Hanover square were decorated to assist in the jubilant celebration which followed; and at that time a plate was affixed to the "Liberty tree"; it read, "This tree was planted in 1646, and pruned by order of the Sons of Liberty, February 14, 1766." This would prove the tree was one of the very earliest in Boston. The grand old patriarch witnessed and inspired many stirring scenes after that, during Revolutionary times, for the anti-tea party was organized here November 3, 1773, and the Sons of Liberty always met beneath its branches, or in the tavern close by, until it was cut down by a party of foistering British in 1775, when it supplied the Tories with fourteen cords of wood. The trees in the Granary Burying Ground were planted in 1830; those on Copp's Hill in 1843.

Leaving Boston, our first thought turns naturally toward historic Cambridge, where we shall find many old trees. The first of these to pass before our mind's eye is the Washington elm. A monument set at its base bears this inscription, written





by Longfellow: "Under this tree Washington first took command of the American army, July 3, 1775." This is perhaps the best known of all living American trees, the most honored, and certainly one of our oldest trees. It is said that Washington had a platform built in its branches. One writer on old trees says that in 1850 "it still retained its graceful proportions, its great limbs were intact, and it showed few signs of age."

From the Washington elm imagination takes a short step to the "spreading chestnut tree," dearly loved by Longfellow, and made famous by him in two poems. In the poem of "The Village Blacksmith," the most familiar of these, he has endeared to us that homely vocation and exalted the dignity of labor thereby. Blessed is he who can truthfully say:—

"Something attempted, something done,  
Has earned a night's repose."

The graceful act of the children of Cambridge in presenting him with a chair made of the wood of the tree was as gracefully recognized by Longfellow in his poem, "From My Armchair." The chestnut tree grew at the corner of what is now Story street and Brattle street, opposite the Washington school. A fine elm is standing now on the opposite corner, and the branches of the two trees must have formerly arched together. A fine elm grows beside Craigie House, far over-topping it.

The group of willows on Holmes' field, originally a marshy lowland, are supposed to be a relic of the first palisado built to protect the infant town from Indians and wild beasts.

Harvard College yard can boast of a liberty tree and a rebellion tree, though they are not known by these names. The first stood south of Harvard Hall, and witnessed many gatherings of students in revolt against unpopular tutors. The name was afterward transferred to the Class Day tree. The rebellion tree, standing at the eastern front of Hollis Hall, was planted in 1792, and was the centre of patriotic meetings, and also meetings for the purpose of protesting against what they considered college injustice and tyranny.

The father of Colonel T. W. Higginson set out many of the





trees in the yard about 1818. To President Josiah Quincy, also, we owe much of the beauty of the college yard.

Inseparably connected with Harvard College and Cambridge is the thought of Lowell and his beloved Elmwood. Among its noble trees are two sturdy elms brought from England before the Revolution. Lowell's fondness for these and other trees near his home often crops out in his letters and poems. The group of willows on the bank of the Charles river near the Longfellow park are especially notable. Three of them are included in the River Front park.

"These willows, doubtless of an older date than the town of Cambridge itself, apart from their romantic association with a poet's nook of inspiration, should certainly be cherished for their own beauty and venerable dignity, which cannot fail to impress one gazing up at their gnarled and time-worn branches." This spot is called one of the most sacred in all sacred Cambridge. The neighborhood of the common may be called one of the most beautiful, from the profusion of elm and other trees which adorn it, many of them in their prime.

A short distance over the Cambridge line, in Arlington, stands the great Whittemore elm, which is said to have been set out by Samuel Whittemore in 1724. Not very long ago there were two trees, standing on opposite sides of the street, which together formed a most imposing entrance to the pleasant town of Arlington.

In an article on historic trees in the New England Magazine for July, 1900, from which many of the statements in this paper are taken, we note that the elm outranks all others in the number of times it is mentioned. Elms, singly or in groups, are mentioned thirty-five times, while oaks are mentioned only six times, fruit trees nine times, willows and pines three times, other common trees only once. Elms brought from England are mentioned eight times. The reasons for choosing the elm as a shade tree might be given as follows: It is comparatively rapid in growth, is safely transplanted, requires little care, admits of severe pruning, and combines in a remarkable degree, when old, size and beauty. Oaks, having a long tap root, thrive best on the spot where the acorn is planted.





While the Waverley oaks are not as large nor as old as the big Redwoods of California, they are the largest and oldest trees we have, and we are correspondingly proud of them. Doubtless there is not another group of such notable trees in the eastern states. There are twenty-five of them, the largest sending up its trunk eighty feet into the air, and measuring eighteen and one-half feet, five feet above the ground. In 1845, one of the smaller trees was cut down. Lowell counted the rings and found they numbered seven hundred and fifty. So that Agassiz' estimate that they must be in the neighborhood of a thousand years of age was not far wrong. The distinguishing mark of the oak is its horizontal branching. Dr. Holmes has spoken of this and says: "All the rest of the trees shirk the work of resisting gravity; the oak alone defies it. It chooses the horizontal direction for its limbs, so that their whole weight may tell, and stretches them out fifty or sixty feet, so that the strain may be mighty enough to be worth resisting." Here is an object lesson from nature, illustrating the strenuous life advocated by President Roosevelt.

Here also is the repose which comes from native strength and endurance working in harmony with the laws which underlie all nature. For eight hundred years or more these trees have braved the storms of winter and thrived under the sun and rain of summer. Like the Redwoods of California, they are our "emblems of permanence."

"There needs no crown to mark the forest's king."

In their patient strength they seem to tower above all petty human concerns, and yet—is not the human mind and soul greater still?

The Waverley elm, near Beaver Brook, must be at least one hundred and fifty years old.

Closely associated with the oaks in point of age are the trees of the Hemlock wood in the Arnold Arboretum. One writer calls it as primeval as those forests described by Longfellow in "Evangeline." An atmosphere of mystery and solemnity pervades these woods; the very earth is carpeted in order that the silence may be more profound. The height of the trees,





some of which rise a hundred feet, their straight trunks relieved by glints of sunlight, is ever an inspiring sight. On a quiet Sunday morning we may

“Find tongues in trees, books in the running brooks,  
Sermons in stones, and good in everything,”

while sitting on the slope of this hill. The silence is relieved by frequent bird-songs, and the sombre hues of the evergreens by the flash of the tanager's wing as he flits to and fro.

Many of the towns around Boston are the proud possessors of single trees of noble dimensions, and it is hoped they may long be landmarks. Milton, Dedham, and Quincy all boast of trees worth mention on the point of age and beauty. In Dedham and Quincy are trees which figure on the seals of those towns, and there is a tradition that a large pine tree in Malden served as the model for the tree on the seal of the state of Maine. The Dexter elm, in Malden, on the corner of Elm and Dexter streets, must be at least two hundred years old. The Stone elm, East Watertown, stands near the corner of Washington and Grove streets. It is said to have been brought from Fresh Pond in 1763.

On the Brooks estate, at West Medford, are several old trees, and some of them, the hickories, if tradition may be believed, were in their prime at the time of the Revolution. A black walnut was planted on the estate some time previous to 1768. Mr. Peter C. Brooks set out a horse-chestnut in 1810, and an elm tree at a later time.

On Main street, Medford, are three elm trees which are of interest, not so much from their age, which is said to be fifty or sixty years, but from the fact that their immediate ancestor was brought from England in a bandbox at an early date.

Until within ten or fifteen years a row of fine elm trees could be seen over-topping the houses along Inman street, Cambridge. They marked the line of an old road, which is shown on all Revolutionary maps, which led from Charlestown to that part of Cambridge where the City Hall now is. A very few of these trees are still standing.

(To be continued.)





## GUY C. HAWKINS PAPERS.—NUMBER 1

In 1905 the Somerville Historical Society received through Mrs. Alice E. Lake, one of its loyal members, a package of papers that formerly belonged to her father, the late Guy C. Hawkins, of Somerville. They were all penned with his own hand. Several of these documents relate to the separation of Somerville from Charlestown, and possess much general interest. They give us some idea of the feeling which prevailed in this section before the decisive step was taken. It is the purpose of the editor to give to the public some of these manuscripts from time to time. The one selected for this number of "Historic Leaves" bears no date, but from another, which appears to be a rough draft from the one in question, we infer that it was written in 1824 or 1825, and that the statistics were taken from the town records for the fiscal year 1823-4. It will be noticed that Mr. Hawkins classes himself among "the young men."

(The orthography is that of the original.)

## Petitioners for a Separation of the Town of Charlestown.

## Names of Resident

Landholders	Houses &c	Acres	Tax
Samuel Tufts	House, Barn & out B. . . . .	93	107.06
John Ireland	Do do . . . . .	31½	29.18
Simeon Copps	Do " . . . . .	47½	45.17
Samuel Kent	Do " . . . . .	57	29.50
Thomas Rand jr	Do " . . . . .	7	11.25
Jonathan Kent	. . . . .	..	3.15
Hall J. Kelly	House Barn &c . . . . .	24	41.70
Isaac Tufts	House Barn &c . . . . .	102	62.11
Bernard Tufts	Do do . . . . .	86	91.81
Joseph Adams	Do do . . . . .	100	86.20
Asa Tufts	Do " . . . . .	74	71.85
John Tufts	Do " . . . . .	62	52.83
Amos Hazleton	Do " . . . . .	13¾	19.67





## Names of Resident

Landholders	Houses &c	Acres	Tax
Christopher Hawkins	Do " . . . . .	7	.....
David A. Sanborn	$\frac{1}{2}$ Do " . . . . .	42	27.12
Robert Sanborn	Do " . . . . .	6	10.71
Nathan Tufts 2d	House Barn &c . . . . .	20	33.82
Alex. Geddes	House & Factory . . . . .	..	20.46
William Munroe	Do Shop . . . . .	..	12.12
Robert Vinal	Do Barns &c . . . . .	..	15.89
Phillip Bonner	Do .. . . .	4	.....
C Harrington	House Barn &c . . . . .	17	19.15
Edwin Munroe	Do do . . . . .	4 $\frac{1}{2}$	10.60
Joshua Littlefield	Do do . . . . .	..	13.74
Charles Tufts	House Barn &c . . . . .	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	25.72
Benj. Hadley	Do do . . . . .	15	25.70
Joel Tufts	House Barn &c . . . . .	50	39.12
Nath. H Henchman	Do " . . . . .	8	43.55
William Dickson	Do do . . . . .	10	.....
Wm. Whitmore	Do " . . . . .	36	36.96
John Swan	House Barn &c . . . . .	35 $\frac{1}{2}$	18.16
Henry Gardner	Do do . . . . .	32	15.36
Thomas Hutchinson	House Barns &c . . . . .	52	34.16
Daniel Tufts	House Barn &c . . . . .	16 $\frac{1}{2}$	38.89
John Odin	Do do . . . . .	4	50.29
A Spalding	House . . . . .	..	5.74
John Runey jr	House Barns &c . . . . .	18 $\frac{1}{2}$	28.85
Thomas Rand	House Barn &c . . . . .	48	36.17
(38 Resident Landholders)			
Young men			
William Rand	. . . . .	..	2.50
G C Hawkins	. . . . .	..	9.41
Samuel Adams	. . . . .	..	2.50
J C Magoon	. . . . .	..	2.50
Asa Tufts 2d	. . . . .	..	2.50
Oliver Tufts	. . . . .	..	2.50
Daniel Stone	. . . . .	..	2.50
(7 young men)	. . . . . (total)	1130 Acres	\$1236.17





Names of Tenants	Houses &c	Acres	Tax
A Newhall	. . . . .	..	2.50
John Tufts jr	House Barn &c . . . . .	30	30.81
Benj Tufts	do . . . . .	51½	36.52
David Wait	. . . . .	..	11.68
A Barnard	. . . . .	..	2.50
S Gerrald	. . . . .	..	2.50
Joseph Miller	. . . . .	..	11.47
Joseph Miller jr	. . . . .	..	6.94
E Gaffield	. . . . .	..	2.(torn)
Samuel Shed	. . . . .	..	..(torn)
Samuel Frost	. . . . .	..	(torn)
Luke Wyman	House Barns . . . . .	148	66.22
A Pierce	Do " . . . . .	27	.....
Zeba Thayer	. . . . .	..	2.50
J Barker	. . . . .	..	2.50
S Saunderson	. . . . .	..	11.57
E Cobbet	House Barns &c . . . . .	235	190.21
M Griffin	½ do & Brickyard . . . . .	..	10.93
J Clark	. . . . .	..	6.39
J Ward	. . . . .	..	4.44
J Kidder	. . . . .	..	8.33
J Sowden	House Barn &c . . . . .	33	36.94
A Stone	½ do . . . . .	..	5.74
S Perry	. . . . .	..	2.50
H Shapley	. . . . .	..	2.50
A Richardson	. . . . .	..	2.50
D Angier	. . . . .	..	2.50
J Lovett	. . . . .	..	2.50
J Taylor	½ House & Brickyard . . . . .	..	11.57
J Blanchard	. . . . .	..	11.23
D Davis	. . . . .	..	2.50
J H Hill	. . . . .	..	2.50
32 Tenants)			
Non-resident Landholders			
Benjamin Joy	House Barn . . . . .	140	113.20
Wm Buckley	. . . . .	..	.....
Jotham Johnson	. . . . .	..	.....





Non-resident Landholders	Houses &c	Acres	Tax
A Davenport	. . . . .	69	24.08
N Goddard	. . . . .	8	6.59
S. Watson	. . . . .	6	2.38
T. Foster	. . . . .	33	44.17
Benj. Rand	. . . . .	5	.....
A. Cutter	. . . . .	3½	2.27
Wm Hunnewell	. . . . .	1	.....
T. Goddard	. . . . .	..	.....
W. C. Phipps	. . . . .	..	.....
J Phipps	. . . . .	..	.....
N. Austin	. . . . .	..	.....
A. Ward	. . . . .	10	19.44
Wm Frost	. . . . .	22½	8.54
F. Sawyer	. . . . .	4	2.59
L. Tappan	Bleachery & Printing . . . .		64.80

(18 N. R. Landholders)

829 \$792.86

1130 1236.17

1959 \$2029.03

Swan, Reed &amp; Wyman 200 80.

Acres 2159 \$2109.03

## Remonstrants against a Separation of the Town of Charlestown.

## Names of Resident

Landholders	Houses &c	Acres	Tax
A Babcock	House & Store . . . . .	18½	57.36
Edward Cutter	Do do . . . . .	43	41.47
Fitch Cutter	do " . . . . .	8	14.27
Timothy Tufts	do " . . . . .	3½	19.89
T Sargent	do " . . . . .	5	2.50
(torn)nny	do " . . . . .	5	25.51
(torn) Torry	do " . . . . .	58	53.80
(torn) eph Adams jr	House Barn &c . . . . .	25	27.44
James Russell	do " " . . . . .	41	41.70
P. R. Russell	do " . . . . .	70	54.14
S P Teel	do " . . . . .	22	18.91





Names of Resident Landholders		Houses &c	Acres	Tax
Eb. Cutter	.	.	6	10.18
T Gould	2-3 do	1-3 Brewery	..	39.22
J Hager	House	& Store	..	15.13
E Lampson	.	.	..	.....
L Stanton	.	.	6	5.63
Samuel Gardner	House	Barn &c	55	27.02
Jonathan Teel jr	House	Barn &c	36	16.92
Jonathan Teel	.	.	71½	41.40
(18 Resident Landholders)				
N. R. Landholders				
C Thomson	.	.	.	.....
Wm. Wyman	.	.	.	.....
N. Wyman	.	.	.	.....
W Dale	.	.	.	.....
C Wright	.	.	16	6.16
(5 N. R. Landholders)				
Tenants				
Charles Bradbury	House	& Brickyard	.	16.11
Jacob Page	.	.	..	2.50
S Childs	.	.	..	10.93
I Thorning	.	.	..	8.33
Benj Parker	.	.	..	8.10
A Cook	.	.	11	19.34
A Larkin	.	.	6	4.12
A Dickson	.	.	..	.....
Clark	.	.	.	6.38
9 Tenants				
Young men				
C Bradbury jr	.	.	..	2.50
J. Hager jr	.	.	..	2.50
Wm A Russell	.	.	..	9.74
T Teel	.	.	..	3.15
N. Lampson	.	.	..	4.77
S Lampson	.	.	..	2.50
S Gardner jr	.	.	..	2.50
(7 young men)			507	\$622.30





Names of Common Laborers	Houses &c	Acres	Tax
E Whitney			
N J Varnum			
S Sawyer	Tenant . . . . .		15.20
R Judkins	at Sawyers . . . . .		2.50
A. Thurston	do . . . . .		2.50
A. S. Tandy	do . . . . .		2.50
E. Chillis	at Greenleafs . . . . .		2.50
J Cooper	. . . . .		6.75
W Walsh	. . . . .		26.10
T Greenleaf	Tenant . . . . .		14.75
W Wilcolm	. . . . .		11.25
W Hovey	Tenant . . . . .		7.25
J Barry			
S Glillen			
C Knight			
J Green	at Brew house . . . . .		2.50
P Greenleaf	at Childs . . . . .		2.50
J W Loring	Tenant . . . . .		5.73
A Wheeler			
D Titus	at Torrys . . . . .		2.50
E Pearson	at Cutters . . . . .		2.50
D Ames	Tenant . . . . .		6.42
B Parker	. . . . .		8.03
H Hutchinson	at Parkers . . . . .		2.50
W Butler	at Bradburys . . . . .		2.50
J Mears	" Do . . . . .		2.50
L Stevens	at Cutters . . . . .		2.50
G Knowlton	at Do . . . . .		2.50
L Hathern	at Do . . . . .		2.50
J Jeemes (?)	.....		
L Blodget			
C Ford	at Torrys . . . . .		2.50
32 Common Laborers			139.18
			622.30

Tax paid 761.48





## CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825

By Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

It was voted in May, 1825, that Messrs. Edward Cutter, Chester Adams, and Rev. Henry Jackson of the trustees have charge of the Milk Row and Winter Hill schools; that Miss Charlotte Wayne be employed at the former, and Miss Eliza Wayne at the latter, to teach twenty weeks, at \$4.00 per week; and that Miss Sarah Perry be engaged for school No. 4 for the same time, at \$3.17 per week. Mr. (James) Russell was empowered to secure a teacher for ward 5, at \$3.00 per week. Voted that schools without the Neck be no longer permitted to be closed on the afternoon of Wednesday, and that five and one-half days' services each week be required of the instructors.

October 4, the president, L. M. Parker, reported that he and Captain Cutter had visited the school at Milk Row on Friday last. Fifty-two scholars were present out of a membership of seventy-five. The same date it was voted that schools in wards 3 and 6 be provided with a master the ensuing winter by Messrs. Cutter, Adams, and Jackson, and that Messrs Parker and Russell attend to that duty for wards 4 and 5. October 6 Miss Perry's school was examined, also Miss Cutter's (ward 5). October 14 the Winter Hill school was examined. Number enrolled, thirty-five boys and twenty-three girls; present, seventeen and eighteen respectively. There were present of the trustees Messrs. Adams, Jackson, Cutter, and Pool. Remarks were made by several of these gentlemen, and the exercises were closed by an address to the Throne of Grace by Rev. Mr. Jackson. Mr. Joshua O. Colburn was employed to teach the winter school at ward 3 five months, to begin the first Tuesday in November, at \$30 per month; Mr. John Parker, of Chelmsford, was engaged for the ward 6 school, at \$32, from November 15; Philemon R. Russell, Jr., received the appointment to ward 4, at \$27; and Bowan A. Tufts for ward 5, at \$26, both to begin





November 1 and to continue through the season. The number of pupils without the Neck in October was 199; in the whole town, 1,144. Of bills approved at this time, Charlotte Wayne 'received \$84; Eliza Wayne, \$88; Cornelius Walker, \$200; Sarah Perry, \$63; Jane Hobbs, \$16; Eliza Ann Cutter, \$60; Samuel Bigelow, \$150; and (in February) Samuel Barrett, \$150.

Seven primary schools went into effect May 16, 1825. They were located according to the recommendation of last year. For the first time we are permitted to give the names of the primary teachers of Charlestown, for up to this date, except for a brief period about 1813, these schools were of a private character, and the mistresses depended upon their patrons for reimbursement. They were: Mrs. Polly Jaquith, Mrs. Mary Thompson, Mrs. Hannah Rea, Mrs. Mary Walker, Miss Lucy Wyman (succeeded by Miss Rebecca French), Miss Adeline Hyde, and Miss Roxanna Jones. The whole number in these schools was 445; present at the examinations, 385. "The trustees are free to declare their belief that the benefit of these institutions will fully meet the most sanguine anticipations of their friends. The children are put upon a regular course of instruction, alike in all these schools, and are kept in good order. The trustees are confident that a school of fifty children of ordinary capacity, from four to seven, who shall give their general attendance, will be far better prepared to enter the higher schools than the same number have heretofore been when promiscuously admitted from private schools." The estimated expense for the coming year is \$6,000. Signed by Chester Adams, for the Secretary.

#### 1826 - 27.

Voted that Mr. Hall J. Kelley have charge of wards 3 and 6, and Mr. Nathaniel H. Henchman of wards 4 and 5. These gentlemen were requested to draft a set of rules and regulations for the schools outside the Neck, and to report the same to the board. Later, on the death of Mr. Henchman, "whose appearance and deportment gave promise of a valuable and efficient





service," William S. Phipps, of the trustees, was assigned to Mr. Henchman's place on committees. Mr. Benjamin Whipple was made secretary of the board in place of Mr. Jackson, who was ill. Samuel Bigelow is still teacher of the school at the Neck. Voted that salaries for teachers of summer schools outside the Neck shall not exceed the sums allowed last year, and that the length of the term be the same, twenty weeks. Voted to pay the primary teachers a salary of \$225 each. The trustees also considered the expediency of allowing the female scholars in the primary schools to practice needle work. Of bills approved in May, Cornelius Walker received \$200, Samuel Barrett, \$151.88 (teacher of the Female school), and Peter Conant, \$200.

Thursday, September 21, 1826, the ward 4 school under Miss Knight was examined by Messrs. Kelley and Phipps. "The school is in a condition to deserve their unqualified disapprobation." "They made an attempt to visit school No. 5, kept by Miss Frost, but owing to a want of punctuality on their part in regard to the hour assigned for it, they found the school-house closed and consequently no examination of that school took place." Friday, September 22, Messrs. Kelley, Phipps, and Whipple visited schools No. 3 and 6. "The former, kept by Miss Flanders, owing to the great number of very small children with which it was crowded, was found in rather a languishing condition. No. 6 at Winter hill, under Miss Whipple, was found in a state of improvement seldom surpassed by schools of that class, which evinced great industry and attention in the scholars, and some capacity and faithfulness on the part of the teacher. The very flattering condition of this school may also be justly attributed to another cause, and which ought not to be overlooked or disregarded; the scholars, forty-four in number, not one of whom were absent at the examination, exhibited an appearance of neatness in their persons and of attention and docility in their deportment which proved that they had not been neglected at home; that the parents had contributed their full share to the prosperity of this school."

October 3, 1826, Ann E. Whipple and Miss Flanders each





received \$75 for services. It was voted that Miss Whipple be permitted to continue the school at Winter Hill two weeks longer.

Voted that the winter schools outside the Neck be for five months in wards 3 and 6, four months in ward 4, and three months in ward 5; that Mr. Phipps be empowered to procure wood for the school at the Neck and at Winter Hill, and that Mr. Kelley perform a like duty for the other outside schools. It appears that Mr. Kelley, himself a teacher in Boston, but a resident on Somerville soil, was the author of a spelling book which the trustees voted not to introduce into the Charlestown schools.

November 7, of bills approved, Hersina Knight received \$65; Martha Frost, \$62.30.

April 3, 1827, "voted that teachers of the grammar schools (within the Neck) must be present at their schools ten minutes before the time appointed to open, which must be at 8 o'clock A. M., and two o'clock P. M., precisely. No scholar is to be admitted without written excuse from his parent, guardian, or master, and no scholar shall be admitted on any pretense after school shall have been opened fifteen minutes."

The winter schools without the Neck were examined as follows: No. 6, by Messrs. Jackson and Whipple, the others by Messrs. Walker and Kelley. The number of scholars on the rolls was, eighty-two for Milk Row, forty for ward 4, thirty-eight for ward 5, and sixty-seven for ward 6 (Winter Hill). The teachers of these schools received for services as follows: Ezekiel D. Dyer, \$150; Philemon R. Russell, Jr., \$112; Charles Tidd, \$102; Andrew Wallis, \$160. In the report for ward 6 we read: "This school in point of order and discipline has deteriorated since our last visit. The teacher, although he has been uncommonly industrious and devoted, yet a want of that system and method so essential was very apparent. The writing was generally very ordinary, but the trustees do not mean to be understood to say that nothing useful has been taught or learned in this school. On the contrary much has been attempted and learned beyond the requirements of our public schools."





Cornelius Walker ended his labors as teacher of the "Latin Grammar school" October 24, and went to the Eliot school in Boston. Charles Peirce was chosen his successor. The salary of male teachers within the peninsula was \$600 at this time. Josiah Fairbanks was appointed to the female school in Austin street, as Mr. Barrett resigned in July. Miss Ann D. Sprague, assistant, resigned (March, 1827) and was succeeded by John Holroyd. "This school contains 250 females whose character and habits are rapidly forming, and who are soon to exert a silent but powerful influence upon the manners and morals of the community around them. The building is badly constructed and much crowded. The standard of public education is undoubtedly rising in consequence of the establishment of the primary schools." The number in the primary grades is 476, in the grammar and writing schools, 632. The estimated current expense is \$6,500. Signed by Benjamin Whipple, Secretary.

#### 1827-28.

The schools without the Neck were put under the charge of Messrs. Kelley and J. Stearns Hurd, and May 19, Miss Ann E. Whipple was assigned to the Milk Row school. "The committee to whom was referred the subject of alterations and repairs on the schoolhouses beyond the Neck, reported (May 25) that it appeared upon examination that the house at Milk Row had been cleared of its desks, benches, etc., by Mr. Kelley, and that a new arrangement of the same had been commenced by him, the exact plan of which they had not ascertained, and that the work was suspended by your committee until they should receive further order from the board. It is the opinion of your committee that the schoolhouse at Winter Hill may be made convenient and comfortable by merely placing the desks farther apart and altering the form of the seats, with the addition of crickets, without the removal of the partition or the addition of a porch." The committee was given full powers with reference to both houses. Miss Susan Ann Warren began the summer term at Winter Hill June 4; the next week Miss Gardner





at No. 5, and Miss Ann Brown at No. 4 opened their schools. The last mentioned, being transferred to one of the primary schools on the peninsula, was succeeded by Miss Elizabeth Gerish, July 3. About this time Mr. Kelley resigned, and Chester Adams was assigned to his place on committees. At the same meeting it was voted to authorize the treasurer to purchase three maps of the world and three of the United States for the three grammar schools. The outside schools had their usual fall examinations in October. Dr. Hurd was authorized to secure teachers for the winter school in wards 4 and 5. Ira Stickney was engaged for the Milk Row school, and Joel Pierce for the Winter Hill road. The former was relieved February 5, 1828, on account of ill-health, and the latter probably did not serve that season, as the teachers, according to pay-roll, were Philemon R. Russell, Jr., \$124, Bowen A. Tufts, \$98, and A. G. Hoit, \$137.60. Bills approved: Elizabeth D. Gardner, \$63.40; Ann E. Whipple, \$80; Susan R. Warren, \$80; Elizabeth Gerish, \$52.31.

In the autumn of 1827 the people at Milk Row were allowed to use their schoolhouse during the recess for a private school. No 2 primary school was vacated by the death of Miss French, and Miss Ann Brown was given the position. "The trustees have considered it expedient to continue the children in the primary schools until they are eight years old."

In the eight primary departments there are 533 scholars, with from thirty-five to seventy-five in each. In the three grammar schools there are 691. "The trustees call attention to the poor state of the school on Town Hill. The interior was originally intended to meet the purposes of a schoolhouse, and to accommodate the town with a place of meeting to transact the public business, and so it has been used many years. The forms and desks were always inconvenient, and are now so much worn as to be entirely unfit for use. The floors and stairs are also in bad condition. The expense of refitting will be \$500." The next year we learn that these repairs exceeded the appropriation by \$180.

In consequence of the unsatisfactory conditions at the





female school on Austin street, as noticed at the end of the previous year's report, we find from the warrant for town meeting, to be held March 5, 1827, that measures were taken for a new school building. The site afterwards chosen was on the Training field, and the building committee, consisting of Thomas Hooper, Josiah Harris, and Lot Pool, made their final report in the following December. We learn that the building was fifty-six by thirty-two feet, and stood on a piece of land with ninety-one feet frontage (other dimensions given), and that in the yard was a good well of water with a pump. The entire cost was \$5,859.92, which left a deficit of \$1,359.92 above the \$4,500 appropriated. In the school report for this year we find that \$300 had also been appropriated for building a primary schoolhouse in the yard of the female school. The records state that on the completion of the Training field school the female school in Austin street removed thither, and Mr. Holroyd, having resigned, Lemuel Gulliver was chosen his successor.

Mr. Aaron Sargent, who lately addressed the alumni of the Bunker Hill school (January 30, 1906), and whose address was subsequently printed in the Somerville Journal, thinks the new building above referred to was probably the forerunner of the Bunker Hill school, and was located near the present one of that name. He was doubtless led to this opinion because he interpreted the wording of the original warrant, "within the Neck," to mean "at the Neck." I have shown in previous articles that other careful historians, even Frothingham and Wyman, were led astray in some of their references to a school at the Neck. If anyone will take the trouble to re-read the previous articles in this series, I think he will find, substantially, all that can be known about the Neck school up to the time which we are considering. In 1827 there was a brick schoolhouse there of several years' standing, and, as Mr. Sargent says, in May, 1830, the town voted to repair this building at an expense of \$300. The records of the school board are so explicit that the new building of this year can be no other than the one at the Training field.

The Bunker Hill Aurora, Vol. 1, under date of December





20, says: "A new brick schoolhouse on part of the Training field was erected and occupied early in the last month. The building is 56x32 feet and two stories in height. It has one room with 144 seats, and two small rooms in each story. The cost was \$5,500. There are now 200 to 250 pupils, or 90 to 100 in the first story, where writing and arithmetic are taught, and 120 to 140 in the second story, where they are instructed in reading, grammar, geography, etc. All the scholars are girls. The boys attend at the old brick schoolhouse near Rev. Mr. Fay's. Children are admitted between seven and fourteen years of age. Near by is a primary school, now having sixty to seventy pupils between four and seven years of age, and also kept open the year round."

From this same newspaper we learn other interesting facts relating to schools.

"The highest salary paid to male teachers (in Charlestown) is \$800, which does not include the profits of some of them in the book and stationery trade."

The Rev. James Walker, of the board of trustees, and later the president of Harvard College, delivered the Phi Beta Kappa oration at the commencement exercises August 29, 1827. The next year, June 14, 1828, he delivered the Election sermon.

A number of advertisements relating to private schools in Charlestown appear in this volume:—

### Female School

"The winter term of Miss Mary A. Clark's school for the instruction of young ladies in the solid branches of education will commence on Monday next. Application for admission to this school may be made to Benjamin Swift, Chester Adams, Henry Jaques, committee. Charlestown, November 15, 1827."

June 7, 1828, the private school kept by Nathaniel Magoun opens.

Under date of August 9, 1828, appears the notice of a select school to be kept by Moses A. Curtis. Latin and Greek will be taught.





But most interesting of these advertisements is the following, under date of February 9, 1828:—

“The Ursuline Community,

Mt. Benedict, Charlestown,

Admits ladies from six to fourteen years of age. The garden has two acres, the whole farm twelve acres. Each pupil is to bring with her her bed and bedding, six towels, six napkins, and her table furniture, consisting of table and tea spoon, knife, fork, and tumbler, all which will be returned at her departure. The uniform of the young ladies consists, on week days of a gray Bombazette dress, and white on Sundays. Three months' notice of a removal is requested. No boarder is allowed to sleep out, except in case of illness. Permission to drive out is given once a month. No visitors are allowed on Sundays. The religious opinions of the children are not interfered with. Terms: Board and tuition per annum payable quarterly in advance, \$125. Ink, quills, and paper, \$4.00. Books at the store price. Extra charges: For each of the languages, except English, per quarter, in advance \$6.00; piano, \$6, harp \$10, guitar and vocal music, \$6. Use of instruments, \$1. Flower, landscape, and figure drawing, \$6. Painting on velvet, satin, and wood, \$6; ditto in oil colors, \$6. Dancing at the master's charge.

The first care is to instruct pupils in the great and sublime truths of religion, etc. The other objects of instruction are: English, French, Latin, and if required, Spanish and Italian (grammatically), history, ancient and modern, chronology, mythology, geography, use of the globe, astronomy, composition, poetry, rhetoric, logic, metaphysics, moral philosophy, writing, arithmetic, geometry, every kind of useful needlework, etc.”

We will close our account of this year with Rules and Regulations of Charlestown Free Schools for the Government of Schools with out the Neck.

The children shall be at least four years old.

Children shall commence their course with a spelling book, such as may be agreed upon by the Trustees, and shall use no





other in school until they can read and spell promiscuously and with readiness all the reading and spelling lessons, and shall have learned perfectly all the stops and marks, and their use, the abbreviations and the use of numbers—and letters used for numbers—in reading.

The teachers shall divide this part of their schools into such classes as they may think proper. The scholars in each school who shall have attained the knowledge of the spelling book required above, shall be divided into four classes for the purpose of reading, spelling, geography, and English grammar, and the following are the books to be used until further order of the trustees:—

Fourth Class.—Spelling book and Testament. This class shall be exercised daily in spelling from the Testament as well as from the spelling book.

Third Class.—Murray's Introduction to his English Reader and Cummings' First Lessons in Geography and Astronomy. This class shall be exercised in spelling from the "Introduction."

Second Class.—Dictionary (Walker's), Murray's English Reader, and Murray's English Grammar, abridged by Alger.

First Class.—Dictionary and the Grammar (continued), American First Class Book, Morse's Geography and Atlas. The teachers will be careful that none be advanced to a higher class until they shall have made such progress as fitly to entitle them to preferment.

In the study of arithmetic the scholars shall first attend to Robinson's Elements. They may also be examined in Colburn's Mental Arithmetic, after which the American Arithmetic by Robinson is recommended.

The teachers will see that the children have constant and full employment, and give close application to their studies. Whispering and talking should not be tolerated for a moment. A school should be a place of order and industry, each scholar attending to his own lessons without noise or disturbance of any kind.

The teachers are required to maintain good order by a pra-





dent and vigilant course of discipline, and a failure in this respect will be considered good cause for removal.

The hours of school shall be from 9 to 12, and from 1.30 to 4.30, except through the three summer months, when they shall be from 8 to 11 and from 2 to 5. Teachers shall be punctual and require like punctuality of their scholars.

The following shall be the holidays: Fast Day, the Day of the General Election, Fourth of July, Thanksgiving Day, and the rest of the week thereafter. The afternoons of Saturdays.

---

## A SHORT AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF GUY C. HAWKINS

[In connection with the Guy C. Hawkins papers begun in this issue of *Historic Leaves*, the following short autobiographical scrap may be of interest. We are indebted to Mrs. Alice E. Lake for this contribution.]

It is a melancholy pleasure to look back upon those who have passed away, who exist in our memories, as the relics of departed joys, and who yet make up a part of the countless ligaments which bind us to life. The changes of a short transitory life are matters of little moment except to the individuals themselves, unless the example is a warning or pattern to those who come after us.

I was born and bred in a village of New England contiguous to the capital, the son of a farmer of some property, formerly an officer in the army of the Revolution. The individuals composing this community were in a comparative equality, for although a part were owners of the soil and others but tenants and laborers, yet industry gave all an independent support, and the children of the whole mingled together in the same free school.

Educated thus, I imbibed a domestic spirit, which has held by me through life. For in my early days I discovered that in my own happy country there was a heaven of aristocracy work-





ing in the veins of the showy and fashionable part of the community, independent of that natural superiority which grows out of acknowledged integrity and intelligence.

The first nineteen years of my life were spent with my father and brother in the cultivation of the soil. During this period I had gone through the course of a common English education, had something of a taste for reading, and was acquainted with some of the best English authors. This period I consider the holiday of my existence. Blessed with parents who had watched over me from my infancy with unceasing kindness, surrounded with equals who had grown up with me from the cradle, divested of cares and anxieties which cling to us in maturer life, I scarcely had a wish unsatisfied.

At this period one of my brothers had engaged in mercantile pursuits, and I united my fortune with his. I spent one year in the Southern states and then returned to the metropolis of New England, and for thirteen years continued my commercial operations. We were not engaged in foreign trade, but our transactions in the productions of the Southern states and in the manufactories of our own were extensive.





# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1906-1907

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	James F. Whitney
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Treasurer . . . . .	Seth Mason
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. William B. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. Ella P. Hurd
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	Alfred M. Cutler

## Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot

Miss Anna P. Vinal

L. Roger Wentworth

## Committees for Year 1906-7

### Publications

Sam Walter Foss, 249 Highland Ave. Sara A. Stone, 19 Central St.

Frank M. Hawes, 257 School St. Samuel C. Earle, 7 Electric Ave.

### Military Records

Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.

John H. Dusseault, 42 Sargent Ave. Miss Mary A. Haley, 117 Summer St.

### Hospitality

William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury, 17 Dartmouth St.

Mrs. William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. Mrs. H. M. Heald, 438 Broadway

Mrs. F. D. Lapham, 3 Hathorn St.

### Necrology

Professor D. L. Maulsby, 80 Curtis St. Miss E. A. Waters, 132 Perkins St.

Rev. Francis A. Gray, 19 Dartmouth St.

### Historic Sites

Joseph O. Hayden, 174 Summer St. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.

Aaron Sargent, 290 Broadway

### Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Wakefield Miss Florence E. Carr, 69 Oxford St.

Seth Mason, 32 Madison St. William E. Brigham, 4 Hillside Ave.

Mrs. J. F. Ayer, Wakefield

### Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, 234 Medford St. Miss Edith B. Hayes, 52 Dartmouth St.

Mrs. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.

### Photographs

Benj. F. Freeman, 2 Mt. Vernon St. Albert L. Haskell, 422 Somerville Ave.

James F. Whitney, 40 Dartmouth St. Mrs. C. L. Maynard, 14 Greenville St.

### Press and Clippings

Miss Lucy M. Stone, 15 Central St. Miss Annie S. Gage, 32 Marshall St.

Miss Anna P. Vinal, 9 Aldersey St. Mrs. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.

Mrs. Ella P. Hurd, 55 Columbus Ave. Miss Mary E. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1906

Vol. V

No. 2







## CONTENTS.

---

	Page
ELIZUR WRIGHT'S WORK FOR THE MIDDLESEX FELLOWS	<i>Eliza M. Wright</i> 23
GUY C. HAWKINS PAPERS—NUMBER 2	40
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825	<i>Frank Mortimer Holmes</i> 65

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and  
Curator Alfred Morton Cutler, 284 Medford Street, to whom all  
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

---

### PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE





# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. V.

JULY, 1906

No. 2

---

## ELIZUR WRIGHT'S WORK FOR THE MIDDLESEX FELS.

By Ellen M. Wright.

(Condensed.)

No man, however gifted, sets his pen to work for right against might or manimon with any great chance of becoming anything but poorer, and in 1839, after seven crowded years of such work in the anti-slavery cause, two events occurred which brought Mr. Wright so near destitution that for a number of years his life was a hand-to-hand fight with the wolf at his door. In 1837, while secretary of the American Anti-Slavery Society in New York, he chanced, at De'Behr's repository of foreign books, to come upon a cheap copy of La Fontaine's 'Fables' in the French, with some 200 wood cuts in it. His little son, he tells us in his introduction to his translations, was just "beginning to feel the intellectual magnetism of pictures," and, to please him, he bought the book. The pictures alone, however, were not enough to satisfy the child; he must have the stories, too; and from putting them into English by word of mouth, the father became quite as fascinated as the child; and finding no English version, "resolved to cheat sleep of an hour every morning till there should be one." A year later, at the call of the "political action" abolitionists, of which he was one, he left the national society to become editor in Boston of the Massachusetts Abolitionist, the state organ of his party. The committee under which he acted, however, did not feel sustained in employing him a second year. As they were poor as well as prudent, they were also unsustained in paying him fully for the first. In this strait, the publication of the fables, the music and merit of which had





so beset him in his translating as to turn his task into the most irresistible of pleasures, did not seem so forlorn a hope, or an investment so very unpromising, and under the encouragement of his generous and well-to-do brother-in-law, who was ready to help him financially, he ventured upon the undertaking,—doing editorial work for other anti-slavery papers in the meanwhile, and importing for his fables the expensive and speaking illustrations of Grandville. While the publication was in process, his brother-in-law failed, and the cost became wholly Mr. Wright's. His earnings were hardly enough for home needs, and there was nothing to do but to take his book from door to door. He did this, going from city to city, first in his own country, and then in England and Scotland. It took three hard, desperate, courageous years, but every copy of the edition was at last sold, and his debts paid; not wholly from the proceeds of his sales, but from them and later earnings.

It was while pushing this cruelly slow work in London that Mr. Wright first realized the great necessity of parks to crowded and growing cities. In England he kept sharp watch on all from which he could get knowledge or inspiration.

Mr. Wright's discovery of the Fells was not till 1864, when he came to live in Medford, and until 1880 his time was still pressed with other important work, but he did not forget the city's need of a park. In Medford, with his home on Pine Hill, and from its top rock a glimpse of the city and ocean, and on all other sides rocks, dells, hills, and the almost unbroken woods, another site, nearer Boston, richer and more varied in its wild pictures, and with a larger promise of a future forest, had revealed itself in the "Old Five Mile Woods," or Middlesex Fells. Loving nature and humanity, and knowing the interdependence of each with each, it is little wonder Mr. Wright should very soon have made himself master of the extent and resources of this great waste and wasted region, or that he should have seen in it the grandest possible future park for Boston, or later should have made its cause his own.

Had the Fells been taken in the way he urged, we should have had under a wholly unitary control its entire natural





acreage, for by his law of 1882 nothing of the people's fresh air and other benefits went into the pockets of any man, and his plan, by stimulating public spirit in the Fells owners, and by taking all the land at one time, was as well secured against money greed as it is possible in the nature—or, rather, human nature—of things for a plan to be. But at first his hope for his object lay in the city government; and all undaunted—if he ever heard of it—by A. S. Hilliard's remark to H. W. S. Cleveland, who in 1857 urged on one occasion the same object, that "you might as well try to persuade the Common Council to buy land in the moon as the Fells," his first step was this very trial. No man of the city's executive, who could be persuaded to go, but was taken through the Fells, and there seconded by the multitudinous facts of its glorious predestination. Mr. Wright urged its claims to be secured at once. When Mr. De las Casas, of the present Park Board, in his historical sketch for the New England Magazine of 1898, says of Mr. Wright, "He was trained in his line of thought by association with the anti-slavery movement and by a residence in England, where he had watched the use of the common lands by the masses," he says truly, for the former had certainly taught him that until some determined man or leader of men, ready to wear the thorns, and let others take the laurels, has gone ahead to pave the way, the last thing the "masses" have anything to hope from is this mammon-ruled administration. Before it was possible to inoculate a single grain of anti-slavery manhood or abolition action into legislative halls anywhere, he and his anti-slavery co-workers had seen their petitions flung under legislative tables, their presidential candidates reviled, and earlier their homes mobbed, presses destroyed, and their most dispassionate arguments burned. But Mr. De las Casas does not speak truly when he says that Mr. Wright, in behalf of his Fells, "naturally enough began to agitate and seek the assistance of those with whom he had worked in the anti-slavery cause." The Fells cause and the cause of the slave were common causes and the interest of all, and he therefore invited the assistance of all; but it was only the money men and the politicians that he





sought—or had to seek; the men of soul came of their own accord, and, in so far as they were his anti-slavery co-workers, consisted of Theodore D. Weld, John G. Whittier, and Samuel E. Sewell. When Sylvester Baxter, in his "Boston Park Guide," said of what Mr. Wright's persistence had created, "The public sentiment aroused by this agitation finally led to the Metropolitan Park System," he was writing history, not politics.

The hearings before the City Council Committee took place in 1869. Of the General Court action, which in 1870 was the outcome of these hearings, Mr. Wright in his "Appeal" called "The Park Question," wrote: "The well-guarded Park bill of last year, which submitted the whole problem of the future beauty and grandeur of our city to a competent and impartial commission, was defeated in the interest of projectors who have manifest private ends to serve. Everybody has private ends; and the public is not about to forego its own ends lest somebody should be privately benefited by it. It ought and it will do the best it can for its whole self without injury to any individual, and if any individual is enriched by it, so much the better for him or her. Let us have fair play and no dog in the manger."

The report of the City Commission proved its impartiality, and the papers, of which there were a large number, were all strongly and ably in favor of a park or parks; but since the Fells was the only easily and cheaply accessible location then urged that had anything like the extent of territory, the woods, rocks, waters, and other requisites for the city's future beauty and grandeur, "Mt. Andrew Park" alone offered the city problem a solution; and in the later working out of the problem, no greater proof of the necessity of just such means as Mr. Wright employed could be had than lies in the legislative results of the meetings, which are in brief as follows:—

With a proviso seventeen, by which as a law it couldn't take effect without a two-thirds vote of the city's legal voters, the bill was passed, and by its failure to get the vote, defeated. This law, section 4, empowered Boston to locate her park or parks "in or near her city limits"; and in so doing closed the door in the face of the Fells and Blue Hills, Boston's only chance of the





park continuity and forest benefaction, so indispensable in every healthful and happy way to her growth, present and future.

From time to time Mr. Wright issued public invitations to the people at large to visit the Fells, offering himself to act as guide. He kept the subject alive through the papers, taking care to stimulate all the interest awakened, and before long a number of able writers had come to his aid.

His literary and mathematical powers at this epoch had so far got the better of his poverty that he was enabled during the years from 1870 to 1880 to purchase as his own contribution to the park some fifty or sixty acres of wild woods. During this ten years of effort for the Fells, in addition to labors which hardly gave him time to draw a long breath, Mr. Wright hoped that younger men, and men who, though wise and good, were not so strongly identified with unpopular good causes as to have incurred the enmity of the ruling mammon powers, would take the matter up. But no independent effort was made, and in 1880 he put his own wits to work. His hearing before the city council was twelve years later than the day of Mr. Cleveland's urging, and yet in 1880 Mr. Hilliard's governmental hopelessness must still have been true, for before the more practical Metropolitan movers ventured into the legislature, twenty-four more years had been added to the twelve. In 1880, then, the situation would seem to demand a measure by which, without further loss or delay, it would be practical for the people, if they wished, by their own effort and generosity, to secure their Fells for themselves, and which, should they fail in so doing, would by its co-operative, social, and educational character have overcome that stubborn governmental hopelessness. At any rate, Mr. Wright meant no effort on his own part should be wanting in furtherance of this two-fold aim. His plan proposed to secure the Fells by a two-thirds vote and appropriation from the municipalities, and to encourage this vote it called for a voluntary contribution sufficient to extinguish private titles, which at the appraised value of that date he found to aggregate about \$300,000. The contribution took the form of a pledge, the payment of which was conditional upon the vote being favorable. It was a contribution in which





he meant Boston to share in proportion to her benefits, if not her wealth. The Forestry Law, Chapter 255, which he caused to be passed in its behalf, vested the title of the Fells park in the commonwealth, and the park was to be held under unitary control, the Board of Agriculture acting as a Board of Forestry, in perpetuity for the benefit of the municipalities in which it was situated. It will be seen that, under this plan, there was not the same danger of defeat, or blocking to the wheels of its progress by the greed of owners, as there would have been had the Fells acreage not been wholly secured at the same time.

On October 15, 1880, Mr. Wright called together some 200 people, and on Bear Hill in the Stoneham Fells formed a small association to devise plans and to discuss the means of carrying out any one that might be agreed upon. Two plans were sketched, Mr. Wright's and that of Wilson Flagg, who, years before Mr. Wright's discovery, had pleaded the Fells cause and made his own unsuccessful appeal to the government in behalf of its salvation as a Forest Conservatory, a wild, natural garden for the indigenous fauna and flora, and for the purposes of science and natural history. Mr. Wright's plan might well be made to embrace this distinct and yet harmonious feature, and was the one adopted. During the next two months these able advocates had made such headway that the mass meeting held in Medford January 1, 1881, was crowded and addressed by speakers who, having just returned from a smart drive through the Fells, were strong for action in its favor. 1881 later on was the year of the Ravine woods desecration, and this disastrous destruction Mr. Wright tried hard to prevent, but the proprietor of the woods, in an attempt to take advantage of his public spirit for the Fells, charged a price evidently beyond what could be hoped for from any other source, and far beyond Mr. Wright's ability to pay, or in the prescribed time—although he and one other of his associates were ready with \$1,000 from their own pockets—to get subscribed.

A tree with Mr. Wright was something almost human and wholly divine, and in no other part of his Fells had God blessed a spot with trees older and grander than in the Ravine woods.





"Possibly," he writes in an appeal of 1884, "those health-giving trees were destined to be sacrificed to save their race. If Boston could see them as they lie there, tears would flow, if not dollars." And he determined it should be no fault of his if they did not at least prove the saviours of their own little Fells brotherhood. By 1882 he had obtained in his Forestry Law all the legislation necessary to his plan and the taking of lands in behalf of forests anywhere in Massachusetts, and had enlisted a competent board of trustees to take charge of the conditional obligations. This done, the object of his labors was to direct as broad a public attention as possible to the fact that a way was now open to secure the Fells, the practical success of which lay within the power of the people themselves. This he did through the press, by the strength and argument, science, wit, earnestness, and frequency of his appeals, and socially, by a series of yearly "Forest Festivals," held in different parts of his Fells, that the able speaking which it was his care to procure might be supplemented by its different attractions, and that his trees, "most eloquent in the golden silence of their sunlit branches," might still help to plead his cause and their own.

The Fells as a park, glorious among the parks of nations, made appeal quite as strong to the ambition of the wealthy as to philanthropy and public spirit; and although little outside his own personal influencing was achieved toward the indispensable voluntary pledge, the spring of 1883 had hardly begun before Mr. Wright's words of March 17, "Everybody seems to be enthusiastically in favor of having the thing done—at the expense of somebody else," had become literally the truth. In other words, the popularity, including the favor of wealth so indispensable to administrative action, of the Fells cause, or park cause, had become an established fact. How well established I have some reason to know, for, hoping to help a little myself, as well as to save Mr. Wright some of the many little expenses which he so constantly and gladly met out of his own purse, I undertook to conduct an entertainment in each of the Fells municipalities and in Boston. And, in seeking the co-operation of other ladies, of the sixty or seventy calls I made, most of them





at the palaces, city or country, not a door was closed against me. The words "For the Fells" on my card was "open sesame" enough, and I left no house, rich or poor, without its "Godspeed" to Mr. Wright, in the great and good end he was so nobly struggling to gain. Quite a number, too, with whom I corresponded responded with voluntary contributions of their own, and all took hold with right good will in selling the tickets.

Finding the old saying, "What's everybody's business is nobody's," too unkindly true in his case, in 1884 he determined his plan should have the benefit of canvassers, and his next step was to begin himself the work of organizing "public domain clubs" in the Fells municipalities and in Boston, which, acting in concert with the Fells Association, might elect committees and employ them. Such a club, comprising some 200 members, he organized in Medford; and it only needed that some ten or twenty others as enterprising and as willing to work should, without his aid or prompting, effect the other organizations. Such help was not forthcoming; and his last Forest Festival, held, I think, in 1885, the year of his death, had for its object so to strengthen his little Fells Association as to help him in gaining this help. In 1885, too, by his invitation, the National Forestry Congress was held in Boston. Towards its success, and still that of similar forest parks for other cities, he made every effort. This was in September, and feeling his strength lessen, his work till the morning of his death was to see such men as he hoped after it might take his place. And on November 21 he died, bequeathing to the Metropolitan plan the success his own had earned, and with it, through the love of his children, the beautiful woods of Pine Hill and its neighborhood.

After quoting the passage which I have given, and which was written in the July of 1883, Mr. De las Casas takes leave of Mr. Wright with, "His death was thought to have been hastened by overwork in this cause, and to be an irreparable loss to the whole movement. The agitation became more energetic when real estate speculators bought the woods along Ravine road, cut off the grand pines, and turned the scene of beauty into the hideousness of a logging camp. The Appalachian Club took up the





matter, and April 2, 1890, appointed Charles Elliot, George C. Mann, and Rosewell B. Lawrence to arrange for a meeting of all persons interested in the preservation of scenery and historical sites in Massachusetts." And this meeting, according to Mr. De las Casas, by a sequence of other efforts and events, resulted in the Metropolitan Park law of 1893. Mr. Wright was a member of the Appalachian Club, and somewhere between 1881 and 1885 he had the pleasure of escorting a very large portion of the membership through the Fells, and in 1884, the year he was trying to get organized help on his subscription, such as they as a club had the power to give, he lectured before one of the meetings on "The Functions of a Forest." Mr. Wright was not only open to conviction, as his record would show, but was as magnanimous as he was generous, and although the approval given his plan by many of the club had done much to encourage both his work for it and his hope for aid in that most important contribution, had the meeting in behalf of another been called while he was alive, he would have rejoiced. The magnificent and broadly beneficial Metropolitan idea, including as it did both his Fells and Blue Hills, would have made him supremely happy, and its carrying out, whatever the means, so long as they were honest, would have had his heartiest co-operation.

Rosewell B. Lawrence, secretary of the Appalachian Club, publishes the following from the pen of T. W. Higginson in his pamphlet, "The Middlesex Fells," of 1886, which was delivered before the club after Mr. Wright's death: "We miss from among us the face of that devoted friend of all outdoor exploration, Elizur Wright. I have known him almost all my life; first as the fearless ally, and at times the equally fearless critic of William Lloyd Garrison; then as the translator of La Fontaine's Fables,—a task for which he seemed fitted by something French in his temperament, a certain mixture of fire and bonhomie, which lasted to the end of his days; then as a zealous petitioner before the legislature to remove the lingering disabilities of atheists; and then as the eager, hopeful, patient, unconquerable advocate of the scheme for setting apart the Middlesex Fells as a forest park. I served with him for a time on a committee for





that seemingly hopeless object, and shall never forget the inexhaustible faith with which he urged it. In his presence it was almost impossible not to believe in its speedy success; all obstacles seemed little before his sanguine confidence. Scarcely any one was ever present at these committee meetings except the three old men in whom the whole enterprise appeared to centre, Wilson Flagg, John Owen, and Elizur Wright. They were all of patriarchal aspect; as they sat leaning toward each other, with long, grey locks flowing, I always felt as if I was admitted to some weird council of old Greek gods, displaced and belated, not yet quite convinced that Pan was dead, and planning together to save the last remnant of the forest they loved." That Mr. Wright was enthusiastic to a greater degree than most men with large reasoning powers is not to be denied. I could quote many passages from his pen which in the light of to-day's events read as a prophecy.

To the motion of Philip Chase it is due that the Wright homestead, with the care and use of the immediately surrounding land, is allowed to remain in the family during my own, its former owner's, life. It is an affectional privilege which I dearly appreciate, and in token thereof, the public are as welcome on my grounds as in any other part of the park, and it is my effort to keep these grounds free from all that is unsightly, and as wild and beautiful as possible. Should visitors hurt my trees or throw banana skins and salmon cans on my grass, I should cry, "Janet, donkeys!" but otherwise the place will never be more theirs than it is while I live. It was also the vote of the Board to make a fair allowance in my favor for loss occasioned by the delay in our settlement; but as there hadn't been any loss, and my wish was to keep to my own terms, it was again, on Mr. Chase's motion, decided that the money should go toward the erection of a little stone structure on Pine Hill in honor of Mr. Wright. The motion, in the contribution of such money as remained in its treasury, was seconded by Mr. Wright's Medford Public Domain Club of 1884; and as Mr. Wright did not let the stones of his Fells cry out in vain, it is fitting, but it is not necessary. To him the stones and all else cried, "Save the woods"; and, thanks to the





Metropolitan share in so doing, the sort of column Mr. Wright would best have liked is already in progress. In the words of his old friend Whittier to another unselfish worker for humanity, there are "grateful hearts instead of marble shaping his viewless monument." That any part of his share in this gratitude should be given to others would not in the least have troubled him. Indeed, could he be assured that its inspiration would always remain still the wild Fells forest, he would gladly pluck the last laurel from his own brow, and himself place it wherever it might be thought best for the good of the cause to have it.





## GUY C. HAWKINS PAPERS.—NUMBER 2.

[Sketches of some of the reasons which may be adduced before a committee of the Legislature in favor of a separation of the town of Charlestown.]

This appeal of the petitioners to the Legislature for a separation from the town of Charlestown is made to you under peculiar circumstances and from more than ordinary reasons. Not only do we contend that the territory is sufficient for two towns, and that as a matter of convenience it is highly expedient, but we do complain of a variety of oppressive grievances, of unjust and unequal burthens. I would have it distinctly understood, however, that, although we do insist on these considerations as our most important reasons for a division, yet we do not implicate the town or charge its officers with partiality. As individuals, as a municipal community, they have our most unlimited confidence and respect. This inequality is in the nature of things; it grows out of the unnatural connection of the two sections, nor can it be remedied but by a separation. We shall endeavor, first, to convince the committee that the territory and population is sufficient for two towns, and that as a matter of convenience the measure is expedient, and shall then proceed to state some of the reasons connected with this subject, growing out of our peculiar situation, and developing facts in which we, the petitioners, are deeply interested.

The town of Charlestown is an irregular figure nearly or quite nine miles long; with a very unequal breadth, containing in 1820 somewhat short of 7,000 inhabitants. Seven-eighths of this population is confined within the limits of the peninsula, a territory short of two miles in length, and this is connected with the country part of the town by an isthmus or narrow neck of land. There is the contemplated division of the two sections. The publick buildings and offices are all located at the extremity of the peninsula, and the inconvenience of this to the western section must be apparent to every one. The number of inhabitants in this section will not vary much from 1,000, and although the





number is small in comparison with the territory, yet when we consider its vicinity to Boston, its other natural and local advantages, this I think cannot be considered as an objection. The extent and singular form of this town running seven miles into the country, and almost encircled by four other townships, whilst the principal part of the population are confined to the eastern extremity, cannot, we think, but impress every mind with the necessity of a division.

But these are considerations of but little importance in the eye of your petitioners, in comparison with others, the consequence of this unnatural connection in which our interests are deeply involved. We contend and we expect to prove to the satisfaction of the committee that we pay into the town treasury a much larger amount than is expended upon us. This is not idle assertion grounded on loose conjecture, the rantings of a heated imagination, but a truth which we conceive to be incontrovertible. By the assessors' books of 1823, the amount of taxes in the westerly section amounted to a fraction over \$3,500. The expenditures in the same section during the same year (according to the printed account and other authentic sources) amounted to somewhat short of \$1,100. This, the committee will discover, is not one-third part of the amount paid in, but we are aware that there are some other expenditures, such as our proportional part of the salaries of town officers and support of poor, which ought to be taken into this account, but after everything is included which the most scrupulous could suggest, we are confident the result will be decidedly in our favor. So sure are we of this that we challenge our opponents to prove the contrary. Nor do we admit that we are contending for a trifle, for although we do not pretend that we can accurately ascertain the precise sum which we shall save by this change, yet we are sanguine it will not amount to less than from one-third to one-half of our present burthens. As this is an important point to sustain, I shall proceed to state some of the causes which produce this inequality. The two sections are altogether different in their occupations, views, and habits—the one is a seaport, the other an agricultural community: the one by its contiguity with Boston imitates the





expenditures of the city, the other, more frugal in their habits, disclaims all such rivalry; the one has sources of expenditure peculiar to itself, the other participates only in a few of their mutual wants; perhaps it would not be an exaggeration to say that one-fourth of our annual expenditures are devoted to objects in which we have no particular interest. Some items of these expenditures which occur yearly are night watch, lighting lamps, repair of pumps and fire engines, and those which occasionally occur, the purchase of such articles and a variety of expences to improve and ornament the peninsula. But this is not all. Apparent as it must be to every mind, from the causes just mentioned, that we are disadvantageously situated in reference to the peninsula, another view of the subject will show that on another point we are suffering by this connection. We of the westerly section do not pretend to compete with the eastern in point of wealth, yet even on this subject what says the tax book? We pay one-sixth part of the burthens and yet contain not one-eighth part of the population. How can this be, if the easterly section is the most wealthy, without impeaching the integrity of the assessors? It is simply this, our property is seen and tangible, theirs unseen and therefore difficult to be traced. We are taxed not only for what we own, but what we have in possession; they from the nature of their property frequently are not taxed to the extent of their wealth. Under these circumstances, I expect the committee will be surprised, will be astonished that the inhabitants of the westerly section have not long since appeared at the bar of the Legislature to make known their grievances and to vindicate their rights. This is to be attributed to a variety of causes, some of which are the smallness of our numbers, scattered population, local attachments and prejudices. Some of these inequalities are so palpable and apparent that they have long been felt and acknowledged by all; others are of such a nature as to require investigation, but are equally oppressive. I will now draw the attention of the committee to the particular interests which are conflicting, and leave it to the candor of all to decide whether the suffering party has not the highest claims on the Legislature, not only for support and redress, but for





patronage and favor. Agriculture or the cultivation of the soil has ever been considered in all ages and in all countries as the grand support and pillar of all governments; it is the aliment on which all the other classes depend and without which the ligaments of civilized society would fall asunder and man revert back again to his original barbarism. In a government constituted like ours, where the rights of man are fully recognized, based on the principles of equality, it exhibits itself in another amiable point of view. Its gains being slow but sure if attended with industry and frugality, it keeps up that equality which the constitution recognizes, and which is the beau ideal of theorists. In this point of view it may be considered as the safeguard of America and the bulwark of liberty. The commercial and manufacturing interests which we contend (in reference to our little community) are preying upon the vitals of their common father, in a national point of view are doubtless deserving the patronage and protection of government, but no one, I presume, will contend that these interests are more important than that of agriculture. In fact, wherever there is a conflict of interests in a municipal community, it is idle to pretend that one part of the community should be taxed for the support of the establishments of the other. This is so inconsistent in itself, so palpably absurd and unjust that few are to be found who would not be ashamed to avow such a principle, yet to what other cause can we attribute the present opposition to this measure from within the peninsula? I know they would endeavor to have a pretense because we are not united to a man in our own section. But has this any weight? What right have they to interfere in a question of interest which relates to ourselves? We expect satisfactorily to prove to the committee that this opposition is more in sound than reality; that more than four-fifths of the landed property and three-fourths of the taxable property are on the side of the petitioners. But admitting it was not so, admitting that we were equally divided upon this subject amongst ourselves, is it for the town of Charlestown to decide which of the two parties are the most disinterested and which the most selfish? But what course has the town pursued on this subject? In the first instance, they





agreed to a separation provided the line of demarkation and the terms and conditions could be settled between the parties. In accordance with this vote, a committee was chosen to confer with a committee of the petitioners to settle these points and to report to the town. After a laborious investigation, the parties agreed, and a report was made. The town then, without making any substantial objections to those terms, rejected the report and instructed their representatives to oppose a separation on any terms whatever. I now ask, Where is the consistency, where the sincerity of the town in the course they have pursued? If they were determined to oppose us, why did they not take that stand at first, and not have added insincerity to opposition? For as the affair has terminated, can we believe otherwise than that they intended to play upon the credulity of the petitioners? That they intended that they should give them a pretense for opposition when they were already from pecuniary motives predisposed to oppose them? Since the town has shown no substantial reasons why they oppose a separation, we cannot but attribute it to an admission of one of the committee who had thoroughly investigated the subject, namely, that the westerly section pays into the town treasury annually \$2,000 more than is expended upon them, which goes to support the general municipal concerns of the town. Whether an argument of this kind ought to have any weight upon this question, I leave it to the good sense of the committee to decide. I shall now endeavor to develop some of the motives which actuate the remonstrants upon this subject. In our opinion, the opposition from this quarter can be traced to a particular point,—two individuals who have long enjoyed (we think from courtesy) certain privileges on a fishing stream are, we think, the backbone of the remonstrants. We do not pretend to say that all who are upon the remonstrance are influenced by these men, but we do contend, and we think truly, had it not been for this fishing stream, the remonstrance upon your table would not have been presented to the Legislature. These individuals, one of which, by the various offices he sustains in the town and his long being a member of the Legislature, has scattered his crude and one-sided opinions far and





wide. He has not seemed to hesitate at anything that would further his object. Not only has he roused local prejudices and presented bugbears to the weak, to influence their opinions, but he has made the grossest misrepresentations and descended to the meanest personalities. His course has been that of a factious demagogue engrossed by his own personal views of avarice and ambition. At his heels he has carried a train of kindred or dependants, who have yielded to his influence or dread his power. The question then reverts, Shall an insignificant faction thus organized, grounded on ambition and selfishness, defeat an object of general utility, defeat the declared will of a suffering community who have made known their grievances and ask relief?

“If it be possible, live peaceably with all men.” It is a peculiar characteristic of the Christian religion that it discourages a spirit of conquest in nations and in rulers, and in private life inculcates the milder virtues of humility and forbearance. This opposition to the darling inclinations of the human heart is the highest possible proof that it had not its origin in human wisdom or human power. Man is a restless, ambitious being, delighting in a succession of untried adventures, covetous of power, and eager in the pursuit of glory. Whatever has a tendency to raise him above his fellows stimulates his exertions and presses him forward in his ambitious career. In his course he is too apt to pass by the unobtrusive virtues and sacrifice all to the love of splendor and vain glory. It is the part of Christianity to chasten and allay these turbulent passions, to encourage a quiet spirit, and to place our happiness in temperance, cheerfulness, and humility. “If it be possible, live peaceably with all men.” If it be possible. Here, even, our great exemplar did not inculcate as a duty an entire spirit of non-resistance; neither would I. As the world is, it is at times justifiable as a community and as individuals to resist oppression and to assert our rights.





## CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825.

By Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

1828-1829.

The affairs of wards 3 and 6 were assigned to Robert G. Tenney, and of wards 4 and 5 to Luke Wyman. Miss Whittemore was appointed to school No. 4, Miss Stearns to No. 5, Miss Ward to No. 3, and Miss Gerrish to No. 6, all for the summer term. For the winter term, Philemon R. Russell, Jr., was engaged to teach in ward 4, Samuel Pitts in ward 5, Joseph W. Jenks in ward 3, and Francis S. Eastman in ward 6. As the last-named did not accept, C. C. King was secured in his place. The report for the year says there were about 200 scholars outside the Neck, that schools No. 3 and 6 had ten and one-half months of school, the other two schools nine months.

Of bills approved, Lemuel Gulliver received \$125; Eliza D. Ward, \$88; Miss Gerrish, \$88; Miss M. Whittemore, \$71.50; Miss Maria H. Stearns, \$65; Philemon R. Russell, Jr., \$120; Mr. Pitts, \$98; and C. C. King, \$160.

Within the Neck, at the examinations, 1,035 were present out of an enrollment of 1,235. Two additional primary schools have been started, making ten in all. Another may be needed in the near future. "The trustees now have two primary school-houses on the training field lot, all on the town's land, and connected with the larger school establishment." We may infer that the other eight primary schools were held in rooms leased for the purpose, except, perhaps, the one at the Neck, which was probably in the (brick) schoolhouse there.

The trustees recommend that children remain in school till fifteen years of age rather than fourteen, as heretofore. The report, which is signed by Chester Adams, secretary, in closing says: "The children never appeared to the trustees so deserving of commendation as at the present time."

1829-1830.

From the report of Rev. Henry Jackson, secretary of the Board of Trustees for this year, we learn the following facts (concerning Charlestown school affairs):—

The schools without the peninsula were taught from nine to





eleven months each. At the examination of the primary schools (within the peninsula) 486 children were present out of a total of 580. The first two classes of the grammar schools were publicly examined in the Town Hall, by a special vote of the trustees. "It is believed that an annual examination of this character would be exceedingly beneficial and would excite in no small degree a deeper interest in the public schools." Four hundred and eighty-seven pupils were present, although the rolls exhibit 641 names. There are now ten primary and five grammar and writing schools within the Neck, and four common schools beyond the peninsula, making nineteen schools supported at the public expense, and comprising 1,432 children. All the schools show a fearful list of absences; thus nearly one-fourth of the good effect "is suffered to pass away."

Seven thousand dollars is asked for next year, and as "the brick school at the Neck is suffering for want of immediate repairs, an additional appropriation of \$400" is asked for that purpose.

"Several citizens in the village beyond the canal bridge make a request that the school boundaries in that part of the town be so altered as to admit their children to attend the school at the Neck. It will be recollected that the present boundaries were established several years since, at the time when the Winter Hill schoolhouse was built in consequence of their special application."

It is voted to retain the children in school until the age of fifteen.

The trustees' records give as additional information for this year the fact that the school districts were re-numbered, that at Winter Hill being known henceforth as No. 4, that at Milk Row as No. 5, the one in the Alewife Brook neighborhood as No. 6, and the one at the extremity of the town as No. 7. Mr. Tenny had the care of No. 4 and No. 5; Mr. Wyman of No. 6 and No. 7.

The summer schools were examined Wednesday, October 14, and the teachers, according to this numbering, were Miss Mary Dodge, Miss Catherine Blanchard, Miss M. Whittemore, and Miss Maria A. Stearns. The two former received \$112, the two latter \$78.





The male teachers for the winter schools in these four districts were: Joseph S. Hastings, of Shrewsbury, for the "Woburn Road school"; P. R. Russell, Jr., for the "West Cambridge Road school"; William Sawyer, Jr., for Winter Hill; and Henry C. Allen, of Bridgewater, for Milk Row. All were to begin the first Monday in December. Lewis Colby, "of Cambridge College," seems to have taken Mr. Hastings' place for a few weeks. January 18, 1830, "Mr. Allen requested to be relieved from further services on account of some unpleasant circumstances having occurred from want of suitable discipline in his school." His resignation was accepted, and Lewis Colby, "a member of the Cambridge school," was put in charge.

From bills approved we learn that Mr. Allen received \$51.63; Mr. Hastings, \$98; Mr. Russell, \$120; Mr. Colby, \$76.40; and Mr. Sawyer, \$124. At the examination of No. 7, Messrs. Wyman and Jackson reported that Mr. Hastings had taught the school with much ability, and they were highly gratified. No. 6 was also commended by the examiners, Messrs. Wyman and Walker. Mr. Colby's school was examined by Chester Adams. Forty-eight were present out of a total of seventy-four. "This school has given the trustees much anxiety, but since it was under the present management it has improved, and appeared well at the examination." Captain Tenney examined No. 4 (Winter Hill). Thirty-five were present out of the fifty-two enrolled. "The captain did not commend the teacher or the school."

The Trustees (continued from Volume IV., page 90).

1830, Rev. James Walker, Rev. Linus S. Everett, Chester Adams (president), Paul Willard, Esq. (treasurer), Benjamin Thompson, Guy C. Hawkins, John Runey.

1831, the same, except that Mr. Walker was succeeded by James K. Frothingham.

1832, Paul Willard, Esq., Benjamin Thompson (secretary), Guy C. Hawkins, John Runey, James K. Frothingham (president), Henry Jaques, Joseph F. Tufts.

1833, James K. Frothingham (president), Benjamin Thompson (secretary), Paul Willard, Esq. (treasurer), Guy C. Hawkins, Joseph F. Tufts, Charles Thompson, Chester Adams.





1834, the same.

1835, Charles Thompson (treasurer), Paul Willard (secretary), Amos Hazeltine, Joseph F. Tufts, Captain Larkin Turner (president), John Stevens, Alfred Allen.

1836, Charles Thompson (president), J.W. Valentine, M. D., George W. Warren (treasurer), Alfred Allen, James Underwood, Charles Forster, Thomas Browne, Jr. (secretary).

1837, the same.

1838, Richard Frothingham, Jr., Charles Forster, Alfred Allen, Thomas Browne, Jr., George W. Warren, James Underwood, Eliah P. Mackintire.

1839, the same, except that John Sanborn succeeds Mr. Mackintire.

1840, Richard Frothingham, Jr. (president), George W. Warren, Charles Forster, John Sanborn, Eliah P. Mackintire (treasurer), Frederick Robinson (secretary), Francis Bowman.

1841, John C. Magoun, M. F. Haley, Philander Ames, Alfred Allen, Frederick Robinson, Richard Frothingham, Jr., E. P. Mackintire, Charles Forster, John Sanborn, Francis Bowman, George W. Tyler (?).

#### 1830-1831.

The (summer) schools beyond the Neck were kept six months, beginning with the third Monday in April. Miss Abigail Bradley (No. 4) and Miss Sarah A. Mead (No. 5) received \$16 per month, and Miss Miranda Whittemore (No. 6) and Miss Phebe W. Wiley (No. 7) received \$13 per month. Before the end of the term Miss Wiley was succeeded by Miss Mary Dodge.

John Runey and Guy C. Hawkins had charge of the outside schools, and were empowered to take a school census in wards 4 and 5. Later they report seventy-six scholars in the former and 109 in the latter, between the ages of four and fifteen. "The committee appointed to consider the subject of holidays allowed the schools report that, in their opinion, the weekly occurrence of the same is injurious to the order and progress of the schools, tending to dissipate the minds of the scholars and unfit them for much effort immediately after. This evil is considered as particularly attending the Wednesday holiday, the influence of the





Sabbath having a tendency to counteract the effects of the recess on Saturday. The committee would therefore recommend that the afternoon of Wednesday be no longer allowed as a holiday."

Holidays: Every Saturday afternoon, 'election week, Commencement week, the week including Thanksgiving, the week including the annual meeting of the American Institute of Instruction, Christmas Day, Fast Day, the first Monday of June, the Seventeenth of June, the Fourth of July, and the day next after the semi-annual visitations.

"The committee are aware that considerable abridgment is made of the time heretofore granted to the teachers, but when they consider that but six hours' service is required of them daily in school, and that by this arrangement they would still have more than nine weeks annually which might be devoted to relaxation and exercise, they cannot believe that the health of teachers or scholars would be hazarded by too close an application to their duties."

The winter terms for the schools beyond the Neck began the second Monday in November. The following were the teachers appointed: James Swan, for the "Russell district"; Jeremiah Sanborn, for Milk Row; Ebenezer Smith, Jr., for the "Gardner district"; and Moses W. Walker, Winter Hill. Before the end of the term, Mr. Smith had been succeeded by L. W. Stanton, and George W. Brown had charge for two months at Winter Hill. The schools at No. 4 and No. 5 are now allowed to be kept through the entire year. Messrs. Runey and Hawkins are empowered to make such arrangements as may be thought best in regard to the stove and chimney in the Winter Hill schoolhouse. They are also appointed to supply the out-lying schools with wood.

A committee appointed to examine the schoolhouse in Milk Row reported that repairs were necessary. It was left to Messrs. Hawkins and Thompson to make the same. April 25, 1831, John Sweetser was paid \$64.62 for these repairs.

The subject of permitting the children immediately beyond the Canal bridge to attend the school at the Neck having been submitted to the trustees, they have to report nothing yet done about it. It is believed that about sixty children would be better





accommodated if allowed to attend that school, agreeable to the wishes of their parents. If so, an additional teacher there would be required, and it would necessitate the removal of the Winter Hill schoolhouse to a different location." The matter was left on the table.

"The repairs at the Neck schoolhouse went beyond the appropriation, \$150. As is often the case in repairing old buildings, many things were necessary to be done that could not be discovered earlier in the work."

Within the Neck there are ten primary schools, with the scholars ranging from four to eight years of age, and averaging sixty-three in each school.

Early in the spring of 1831 L. Gulliver resigned as writing teacher at the Town Hill school, and Reuben Swan succeeded him. About the same time Mr. Conant, at the Training Field school, was followed by Amos Barker. The other male teachers on the peninsula at this time were Messrs. Fairbanks, Peirce, and Samuel Bigelow, the latter being the master at the Neck school. March 28, "Voted to expel John H——d from Mr. Bigelow's school for bad conduct." The same day a report relative to the establishment of a high school was read by Chester Adams, Esq., and after amendment was adopted.

#### 1831-1832.

The teachers for the summer term without the Neck, to begin April 1, 1831, were: Miss Catherine Blanchard, at Milk Row, who was to receive \$16 per month; Miss Abby Mead, of Woburn, at Winter Hill; Miss Whittemore, for the Russell district; and Miss Mary W. Jeffurds, for the Gardner district. The teachers for the winter term, with \$32 a month at No. 4 and No. 5, \$30 at No. 6, and \$28 at No. 7, were Moses W. Walker, John N. Sherman, S. N. Cooke, and E. W. Sanborn, respectively.

The trustees vote to hold their meetings "the last Monday evening of each month, as usual."

Mr. Frothingham is authorized, July 25, to commence prosecution against boys for engaging in breaking the glass in the Neck schoolhouse.





October 4 it is recorded that smallpox has appeared in town and threatens to spread in some of the primary departments. Consequently it is voted that no scholar be allowed to attend any of the public schools after to-morrow who has not been vaccinated. This order was rescinded December 26.

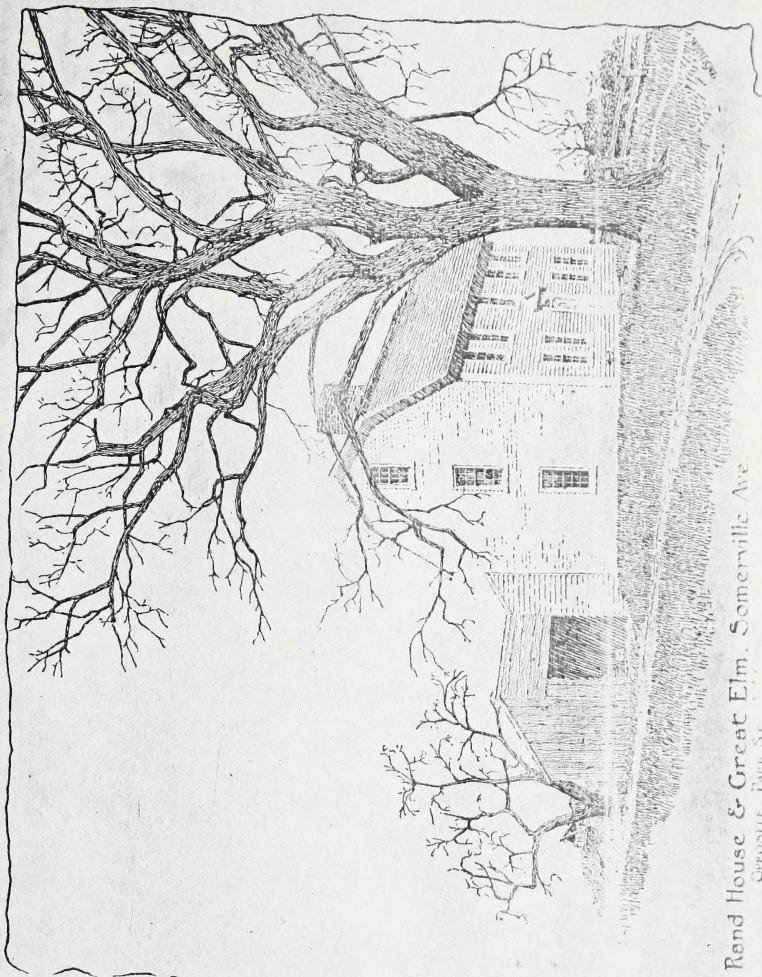
Voted that Election vacation stand as formerly, viz., the last week in May and the first Monday in June. Miss Gates and Miss Jaquith, of the primary teachers, resigned this year. February 2, 1832, the resignation of Samuel Bigelow, of the Neck school, was accepted, also that of Reuben Swan, of the Female Writing school, both having entered other occupations. The salary of the former was \$600, of the latter \$500. Moses W. Walker, of the Winter Hill school, was elected to the Neck school, and Thomas Stephenson to succeed Mr. Swan. As Mr. Stephenson's health was delicate, after two months he was succeeded by James Swan at the same salary, \$500.

At the close of the season, on the recommendation of Mr. Hawkins, the services of John N. Sherman were retained at Milk Row at \$360 per year. This is the first instance of a teacher on Somerville soil being hired by the year. "The trustees by this action incur the additional expense of \$72 for meeting the wishes of the people at Milk Row." It was voted at that time, April 9, 1832, that a uniform system of writing be introduced into all the schools as soon as possible, and that the secretary supply the schools with a sufficient number of Boston Slips for this purpose. At the end of the year the Board extended thanks to Chester Adams, Esq., who resigns his office, commendatory of his long term of service. It was also voted that boys beyond Canal bridge within the Winter Hill district from ten to fifteen be allowed to attend Mr. Walker's school at the Neck until the trustees otherwise order. All such boys must call on Mr. Runey and get a permit from him. The schools now number 1,450 pupils, and the annual cost of educating them is about \$5 per pupil. The school for boys is under Messrs. Peirce and Baker; that of the girls under Messrs. Fairbanks and James Swan.

(To be continued.)







Rand House & Great Elm, Semerville Ave.  
OPPOSITE PARK ST







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1906

Vol. V

No. 3







## CONTENTS

SOME OLD TREES—NUMBER 2	<i>Sara A. Stone</i>	53
SOMERVILLE		65
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825	<i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i>	67

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, *postpaid*

Single copies, 25 cents

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and  
Curator Alfred Morton Cudde, 234 Bedford Street, to whom all  
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE





# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. V.

OCTOBER, 1906

No. 3

## SOME OLD TREES. — NUMBER 2

By Sara A. Stone\*

(Read before the Somerville Historical Society November 7, 1906.)

Have we any old trees in Somerville? Yes, a goodly number. It is difficult to find out the exact facts in many cases, but, counting individual trees, there are over forty which are at least 125 years old, and some of them must be older. Half of the number are red cedars, which may be found in West Somerville and in the neighborhood of Albion street, the location which was formerly known as "Polly Swamp." They look worn and dusty beside the fresh foliage of the deciduous trees, and bring to mind the lines of Dr. Holmes:—

"Little of all we value here  
Wakes on the morn of its hundredth year  
Without both looking and feeling queer."

No doubt they are more than a hundred years old. Many of them are remembered by old residents in other parts of the city. One remembers them at the corner of Highland avenue and Walnut street, and adds, "They were considered a natural growth."

\*The following persons have aided the writer of this paper by suggestions and information: Mr. John F. Ayer, Mrs. Ellen P. Angier, Mr. George L. Baxter, Mr. Josiah Q. Bennett, Mrs. Martha E. Bowman, Miss Alice I. Bradford, Mr. George C. Brackett, Mrs. Hannah C. Brown, Mr. Joseph H. Clark, Mr. Richard E. Cutter, Mrs. Mary J. Davis, Mrs. L. W. Dow, Miss Frances Dow, Mrs. Helen F. Edlefson, Mr. Charles D. Elliot, Mrs. Annie L. Fletcher, Mr. Ellsworth Fisk, Mr. N. E. Fitz, Hon. William H. Furber, Mrs. Martha J. H. Gerry, Mr. Albert L. Haskell, Mr. Frank M. Hawes, Mrs. Helen E. Heald, Mrs. C. E. Henderson, Miss Bertha E. Holden, Mrs. Fannie C. Jaques, Mr. A. M. Kidder, Mr. George A. Kimball, Mrs. Eleanor G. Kirkpatrick, Miss Georgia Lears, Mrs. Martha E. Libby, Mr. Jairus Mann, Mr. David L. Maulsby, Mr. Henry C. Rand, Hon. Francis H. Raymond, Mrs. Raymond, Mr. Edwin F. Read, Mr. Aaron Sargent, Miss Ellen M. Sawyer, Miss Margaret A. Simpson, Mrs. Juliet G. Smith, Miss Susan S. Stetson, Rev. Anson Titus, Miss M. Alice Tufts, Miss Martha Tufts, Mr. Timothy Tufts, Miss Louise A. Vinal, Miss Anna P. Vinal, Miss Edith A. Woodman.





A few trees, mostly elms, were silent witnesses of the events of the Revolution which took place on Somerville soil. Many, not now standing, overshadowed old homesteads which have long since been demolished, whose inmates left honored names. Here and there an apple or pear tree, or remains of an orchard, testify to the thrift of former days. This may have been prophetic of the saying of this generation, that "Somerville is a city of homes." Nowadays, however, few bridegrooms have an opportunity to plant a tree in honor of the bride.

It is said that in the early days these hills were wooded. A military map of 1775 is generously sprinkled over with marks meant to represent trees, indicating a wooded country. Another fact would bear out the assertion. The soldiers encamped here during the Revolution cut down so many trees, in their desperate efforts to be comfortable, that the inhabitants protested. This fact and the lapse of time would make it highly improbable that even a single tree of the original woods is standing to-day. It would be safe to say that, with a few exceptions hereafter to be mentioned, all our trees have grown since the Revolution.

Many will remember the beautiful trees which bordered the drive into the McLean Asylum grounds. These probably dated back to the time of Joseph Barrell, who sold the estate for a retreat for the insane in 1816.

On Washington street, below the railroad bridge, there stood a row of elms of handsome proportions, which were sacrificed when that thoroughfare was widened in 1873-4. Before that time the car track was located next the sidewalk, and the elms were between it and the roadway.

Above the bridge, near the corner of Medford street, once grew a tree of a very rare species for this part of the country, an English walnut. It was planted by a member of the Tufts family, and yielded many bushels of nuts in its day.

Further on, in front of the Ives Hill house, was a Revolutionary elm, and in front of the Pope schoolhouse were three more. Here James Miller, "too old to run," was shot down by the British on their return from Lexington.

On the opposite side of the street, in a lot in the rear, is a pear tree, with a trunk more than a foot in diameter, which is in





the neighborhood of a hundred years old. It stood on the Shedd estate when a portion of it was purchased by Andrew Kidder eighty years ago.

A very large elm stands in the yard of the old Prospect Hill schoolhouse, near the foot of Bonner avenue, which is eighty or a hundred years old.

In a picture on the cover of the Somerville Journal Souvenir, published in 1901, is represented a tree of advanced age standing at the corner of Sanborn's grocery store in Union square, with a pump and drinking trough in front of it.

Two button-wood trees once grew in front of the house in Union square which was moved to make way for Pythian block. This spot was once part of the homestead of the Stone family. A few rods in from the square stood a very old pear tree and a few apple trees, doubtless part of an orchard.

Until a few years ago, back on the hill, on Columbus avenue, was a button-pear tree, said to have been over a hundred years old when it was cut down. Could it have been one of those pear trees mentioned by Miss Vinal in "The Flora of Somerville," which were believed to have grown from seeds scattered by the soldiers encamped on Prospect Hill during the Revolution? A pear tree is left among the shrubbery set out around the base of Prospect Hill park. This may be a descendant of those pear trees, which, together with locusts and red cedars, were common here a few years ago.

A group of willows and a fine button-wood tree once grew near the foot of Walnut street. A row of pear trees, with an apple orchard behind, extended from Walnut street to the Hawkins house on Bow street, where the Methodist church now is. A row of tall trees bordered each side of the walk to the house, one of them a thorn, a tree considered a rarity then. Two immense willows remained in recent years. Two large elms overshadowed the old Hawkins house on Washington street, near the railroad bridge.

The cemetery on Somerville avenue, the land for which was given by Samuel Tufts in 1804, has many interests. In it are two large willows, their trunks in an advanced stage of decay, and half their tops cut off, from the effects of an ice-storm five





or six years ago. A schoolhouse, called the Milk Row school, once stood on the front easterly corner, and it is said that a Revolutionary elm was cut down to afford room for the building.

Until the summer of 1905, a remarkably large sycamore tree stood at the foot of School street. It was six feet in diameter, the largest tree anywhere around. A lady ninety-one years of age remembers willow trees and other shrubbery growing in the cemetery near the Milk Row school, which she attended in her girlhood. She also remembers the custom among the scholars of sitting under a large sycamore tree at the foot of School street to eat their dinners on pleasant summer days, and that a large orchard grew in back of it. Doubtless this was an orchard planted by John Ireland, familiarly known as "Johnny Ireland" by old residents and passing travelers, who stopped for rest and refreshment at his little store at the corner of School street.

Possibly the few apple trees now found in the vicinity of Landers street and Preston road, streets cut through the Ireland estate, are survivors of that orchard. The pear trees there were probably set out by George W. Ireland, a grandson, fifty years ago. He was greatly interested in pear-raising, and amateurs in the art used to come to him to name their varieties. When asked how many kinds he had, his reply was, "Fifty too many!" The trees on the sidewalk were planted by him over forty years ago. They are elms and sycamore maples, alternating, the latter a variety imported from Europe about that time. A Lombardy poplar and a group of locusts also grew on the place.

His daughter writes: "The sycamore, or button-wood, as we used to call it, was the last of four I remember. One stood near Knapp street, and was hollow, and, as a child, I used to play in it, and remember a fine powder that covered the floor of the cave. A third stood on the other side of School street, nearly opposite Preston road, and the fourth was behind the house as it then stood, a little ways up Preston road on the right. The latter had twin trunks, and I remember that one was blown down in a storm, and nearly escaped injuring the house; then, for safety, the remaining half was cut down. I used to look out of my bedroom window at the great speckled arms of the one





opposite the house, and the sight of a sycamore tree to-day carries me back to my earliest memories.

"I remember an elm that was a landmark. It must have stood somewhere near Summit avenue and Vinal avenue. There was a stone wall running from Highland avenue to Bow street, and we used to go across the fields aiming for that tree by the wall, and from there across the old Revolutionary earthworks to the church on Cross street."

There was a group of willows near the brook which crossed School street, between Summer and Berkeley streets. A pond at the corner of School street, where the drug store now is, was the delight of some ducks. A spring on the opposite corner, covered by a roof, furnished water, which was carried to Cambridge through an aqueduct made of hollowed logs.

A row of ten elms of various sizes stands on Somerville avenue, between the Tube Works grounds and Park street. One of them, which appears much older than the rest, in front of the house formerly the headquarters of General Green, is one of two standing here which were of Revolutionary fame. Some of the others in the row, which in old times extended to the Middlesex Bleachery grounds, and numbered eighteen at the time of the widening of Somerville avenue in 1873-4, were set out by Samuel Tufts Frost about 1830. He carried them on his shoulder from the place where they grew.

A former resident of Laurel street remembers a large elm tree which loomed up from the vicinity of Dane's ledge, not probably very old, but noticeable, springing up from such unlikely surroundings.

The elm on Somerville avenue, near the foot of Central street, is one of the oldest in Somerville, and possibly the largest when in its prime. Twenty-five or thirty years ago some of the smaller branches from the centre of the tree nearly touched the ground. The widening of Somerville avenue brought the boundary line through the centre of the tree, and the change of grade left the large roots on the street side much above ground. These bulwarks were cut away, to the great injury of the tree, and this mutilation has caused it to age fast,





A seat was built around the base on the sidewalk, and formed a convenient resting-place for travelers. When that was worn out, the roots themselves were used for the same purpose, and the bark is quite smooth from constant friction.

It was attaining its prime at the time of the march of the British to Lexington,—at least, this is the tradition in the family,—and shaded an old house, unoccupied at the time, which was removed to Garden court in 1869, and is still standing. On the return of the British it afforded shelter for a wounded soldier, probably the one said to have been buried across the street.

Another old house, where the Widow Rand lived, stood near the other corner of Central street. Her son Thomas, it is said, in 1778, at the age of eighteen, set out the elm which was standing there till 1894. This tree, after the widening of Somerville avenue, occupied the centre of the sidewalk, and the fence was carried inward to accommodate travel. James Shute, the owner of the land at that time, was so interested to have the tree preserved, that he offered the use of his land for the sidewalk, that the tree might be kept as long as possible.

At one time, many years ago, a party of young people, some of them descendants of Thomas Rand, were passing there, when some one remarked, "We ought to take off our hats to this tree," and it was done. It was one of the few trees in Somerville old enough to command the homage of a younger generation, the members of which were directly descended from the one who had planted it. It was cut down to make way for building, and was found to be still sound to the core. Some of the wood was saved for the purpose of making chairs as mementos, and they are owned by descendants of the Rand family.

Up "the lane," as Central street was once called, on what are now the Unitarian parsonage grounds, grew a large wild pear tree, whose fruit made delicious preserves, and also tempted the boys, for their depredations often roused the then owner of the tree to indignation and strong language. The diameter of the tree was more than two feet at the time it was cut down, about fifteen years ago. Its removal was watched with interest by one who had remembered it from boyhood, and was an unusual spectacle, as it was cut down intact, and went to pieces like the





"Deacon's One-Hoss Shay." Before the top had touched the ground, the small twigs were broken into inch pieces, and after it had landed, a cloud of dust arose.

Old apple trees in the pasture known as Shute's field, on Central street, before it was cut up into house lots, were part of the Rand orchard. A very old apple tree on the easterly side of the street, the one shown in the frontispiece, which was made from a picture taken in "war-time," is still cared for by a member of the Rand family.

Benjamin Rand set out the row of maples next to the street, on the parsonage lawn, some time between 1850 and 1860. Columbus Tyler afterwards set out many others of different varieties on this place.

Rev. Augustus R. Pope began the good work of planting trees on the estate on the corner of Summer and Central streets, now owned by Henry Baker, about 1850. When it passed into the hands of Nathan Tufts, about 1860, there were many varieties, forty, between the gate and the front door. These were thinned out in after years, and others were planted in various parts of the grounds by Mr. Tufts. The horse-chestnut in the circle in the driveway was planted in 1844 in East Somerville, and transplanted here about 1860. The tulip tree, a gift of John K. Hall, was also removed a little later. A remark made by Mr. Hall that it would always be in blossom the Seventeenth of June was never forgotten. The larch trees, now so straight and tall, illustrate an old proverb, amended, "As the twig is un-bent, the tree is inclined," for one of them was tied to a broomstick when small to make it straight. The apple trees in the lower garden were moved from the grounds of N. E. Fitz on Winter Hill.

Old apple trees a few steps up Summer street challenge inquiry. One of them, on what was once the Thomas Brackett place, was brought there, a good-sized tree, in 1852-3 or 4.

In the fall of 1847, or the spring of 1848, fruit trees and an elm were set out on Harvard street, at the corner of the westerly part of Chestnut court, by Samuel Brackett. They probably came from some nursery. The tree next to the corner was set out by Lebbeus Stetson about 1850. The tree was quite large, and Mr. Stetson was laughed at when he insisted that it could





be transplanted and live. The price paid for it was \$6, and it was brought from a tract of land just across the railroad, very near the Franklin school. It out-topped the others in the court.

The apple trees on Ezra Robinson's place near by, on Spring street, now owned by John M. Woods, were good-sized trees in 1847.

The well-known "Round House," built by Enoch Robinson in 1850, has near it an elm set out by him soon after, and a double birch tree, which grew up of its own accord. A sweet-brier rose, brought from Polly Swamp, tempts the children in the springtime with its lovely blossoms.

At the foot of Spring street a tree of Revolutionary date stood in front of the old Kent house. A large willow once grew near Pitman street, and was the scene of many good times remembered by scholars of the Franklin school. The girls used to sit in the branches, which spread out near the ground, and the boys made whistles of the twigs, which led to trouble in school later.

The Franklin school yard, now a playground, is well stocked with shade trees, which were set out under the supervision of the school committee in 1849 or 1850. One of the scholars recollects that Deacon Charles Forster, so well remembered by residents of Winter Hill, was on the school committee and had a prominent part in the work. Another scholar remembers the willows at the foot of the yard in 1847. None are there now, but two or three peep over the high fence of the Bleachery, and a row of them probably once thrived on the border of a creek there.

A walk along Elm street reveals a thoroughfare in keeping with its name. A row of aged pine trees, however, on the corner of Cedar street gives a little diversion to the fancy. These pine trees were probably set out by John Tufts, son of that John Tufts whose house on Sycamore street has long been a landmark. Mr. Tufts lived for some time in the old house which stood on this estate until within a few years. There were some cedar trees in the front yard. Cedar street was probably named from the great number of cedars growing in the vicinity. Years ago it was a pasture, known as the "cedar pasture," and was owned and





used by Thomas Rand, whose grandsons drove the cows there and gathered wild rose leaves for distilling.

Old residents remember a small, round pond, with an island and solitary pine tree, just beyond Cedar street on the left. John Tufts set out the pine tree, it is said, and the place was a playground for the boys of the neighborhood. As is often the case, at one time they wished to build a fire. The tree was still small, and, with unusual thoughtfulness, they inverted a barrel over it to protect it from the heat. Pond, tree, and island are now things of the past, and looking at the spot, now built over with houses, it is difficult to see where a local poet drew his inspiration for the following poem, one of many dainty productions from the pen of a lifelong resident of Somerville, nearly, Lewis C. Flanagan:—

#### PINE ISLAND POND.

"'Tis even so; within our city's bounds  
We have a pond; not one with bottom paved  
And edges curbed with stone, but rough and plain  
From Nature's hand; nor large, nor deep, yet still  
A pond; and equi-distant from its shores  
An island stands; and though a modest lump  
Of earth, that may not be compared with those  
On which the salt waves lay their angry hands,  
By geographic rule as much an isle  
As Cuba's slope or Iceland's stormy pile.

"The urchin small, when asked to give at school  
Description of an isle, forgets his text;  
At which the teacher leads his truant mind  
To this, the spot which he himself has seen  
That very day; and though the growing boy  
Soon scorns to build upon domestic ground,  
But names some vasty pillar of the sea,  
The teacher tries again with younger minds,  
And smiles, perhaps, to see the lads refuse  
To own the step they once did gladly use,





"From out the turf a solitary pine  
Sends up its bristling spire to heaven;  
Its branches gently wave with summer winds,  
And bend and break to winter's ruder blast;  
Among its fragrant boughs the blackbird rears  
Her young; and in his pilgrimage the crow  
Will tarry long upon its tufty top;  
But not alone the 'feathered tribe' possess  
The tree, for at its roots two muskrats have their home,  
And oft abroad for food and pleasure roam.

"But now must close the pond's romantic praise;  
The red deer comes not now to bathe his flanks,  
Nor does the Wampanoag send across  
The wave his birchen keel. If erst they did  
Frequent the spot, they leave no sign; but in  
Their stead the docile heifer seeks the tide  
To slake her thirst; while on the shore the frog  
Sings pensive roundelay at day's decline;  
Yet, e'en with these, the eye is sometimes fond  
Of resting on the pine, the isle, the pond."

Continuing up Elm street, we come to the home of Timothy Tufts. Here are two large elm trees which were set out by Mr. Tufts' grandfather before the Revolution. On a knoll several rods back from Elm street is another old elm, notable for its size and thrifty condition, which was set out at or soon after the time he built a modest cottage there at his marriage in 1761. The tree is best seen from Banks street. Inquiry brings out the existence of another tree, a pear tree still bearing, which was also set out by Mr. Tufts' grandfather. A very large red cedar, whose trunk was more than a foot in diameter, once grew on Willow avenue not far away.

From Willow avenue to Davis square was a tract known as "Rand's woods." In the 'sixties it was a resort for enthusiasts in botany. A little further north, where the power-house now is, was another "cedar pasture," owned, as were the woods, by Benjamin Rand, of North Cambridge. Mrs. Rand was wont to





say that probably many a sermon had been rehearsed in the "cedar pasture." In the rear of the houses on Hall avenue is a group of these cedar trees, twelve in number, which may or may not have been set in place, they are so nearly on the boundary line. They seem like stranded waifs from the past looking on in wonder at the prosperity around them.

A large cherry tree on Cameron avenue has for a long time attracted the attention of an occasional passer-by by its size, knotted trunk and branches. Residents are so used to it they think nothing of it, except in cherry-time, when it is besieged by boys. It measures ten feet, four inches in circumference. It is one of three fine-fruited trees which grew here, together with many other excellent varieties of fruit, on what is best known as the Hayes estate. By rough calculation, it must be about seventy-five years old. The Hayes estate of fifty acres was purchased of Philemon Russell, and was remembered by a lady, now deceased, as an extremely pleasant place to visit sixty years or more ago. The cherry trees, red and black ox-hearts, golden porters, and other delicious varieties, a well, and a waving field of mowing, with a cart-path through it, left such an impression that, in after years, when in search of a place for a home, her thoughts turned to this spot, and she was fortunate enough to be able to purchase a lot here. During the Rebellion this tract of level field was used as a camp and drill-ground for soldiers, and was called Camp Cameron.

A large elm on the sidewalk in front of the Baptist Church on College avenue is well on towards a hundred years old, according to one who remembers it as a large tree in his boyhood. It grew up naturally along by the stone wall. A large elm further on, in front of an old house known as the Hall house, now demolished, still holds its own. There was an old elm tree at the junction of College avenue and Broadway.

On Broadway, nearly up to Clarendon Hill, is a group of beautiful trees, which seem like an old-time family, with its patriarchs and young people. Some of these trees have doubtless seen the fortunes of more than a hundred years. The largest one is nearly opposite Simpson avenue, and the trunk measures





thirteen feet in circumference. A near-by resident says: "It was a fine, spreading tree, whose branches came down nearly to the ground, so that the children of the Walnut Hill school used to swing on them. There was a pond near, but the sewers have drained it. Of the elms on the Walnut Hill school lot, adjoining on the east, the largest one grew up naturally; the others were set out by the town probably about 1849 or 1850."

The elm in the yard nearly opposite this group of trees is almost 100 years old. The above-mentioned writer tells this story of it: "I have heard my mother say, after she came here, sixty-six years ago, there was a man who, when he drove by, would stop his team, jump over the stone wall, and clasp his hands around the tree to see how much it had grown. He said, one Sunday, when walking out with a girl, they pulled up two switches, and set them out. His died, but hers lived. They did not know the man, and he came but seldom."

"One very cold winter's day father decided to cut the elm down. He ground the axe and came into the house to whet it by the fire. Mother did not want the tree cut down, and kept him busy talking till it was too dark. Next day there was other work, so the tree was spared."

A small elm was removed from this locality by Lorenzo W. Dow about 1852, and stands, a notable tree, in his yard on the top of Clarendon Hill.

On the golf grounds there is a stump of a chestnut tree, four or five feet long, and a yard in diameter, with new growth springing from the old root. The writer's theory in regard to this is, that it may have been a sapling left at the time the original woods were cut. Calculations based on the average rate of growth of chestnut trees would bring the age of this tree to 120 years at the time it was cut down, now many years ago, and carry the date of it back to the time of the Revolution. If this is correct reasoning, there is a chance to preserve in one of the young shoots a real child of the forest.

(To be continued.)





## SOMERVILLE

[Composition written in 1851 by a pupil, eleven years of age, of the old Franklin school on Somerville avenue.]

Somerville is a beautiful town, about three miles from Boston, the capital of Massachusetts.

There are two ranges of hills running nearly through the centre of the town, which adds much to its beauty and interest. These ranges were formerly called Prospect and Winter Hills. The view from these hills on a clear day in summer is said to be one of the most beautiful and picturesque in America, or perhaps in the world.

This town was formerly a part of Charlestown, from which it was set off and incorporated about twelve years ago, by the request of the inhabitants, and given the romantic name of Somerville.

The number of inhabitants at that time was about 1,500. They have now increased to more than 3,000, and the hills and valleys are nearly covered with neat cottages, splendid houses, and a variety of romantic dwellings, with gardens attached, in which grow flowers, fruit trees, bushes, and shrubbery of such descriptions as flourish best in this climate.

There is also in this town a large bleachery and dye house, also an extensive concern for the manufacture of brass tubes for locomotive boilers.

Brick-making is carried on extensively both with and without steam power. The McLean Asylum is in this town. There are three railroads that run through the town, the Fitchburg, Lowell, and Maine. There is also a line of omnibuses, so that you can go to Boston and return at almost any time of day. These facilities add much to the convenience and comfort of the inhabitants.

The schools of Somerville are said to be equal to any in the state. There are several primary, grammar, and also one high school, all of which are conducted on the most approved principles; and if the scholars do not learn it is not the fault of the school committee or teachers.





There are several places of public worship, which are well attended. Our schoolhouse fronts the very road on which the British soldiers marched to Lexington and Concord early on the nineteenth of April, 1775.

At the foot of what is now called Central street, on the southwest corner, stands a large elm tree. (It is a beautiful tree when covered with its rich, green foliage in summer.) A few yards towards the north is to be seen an old cellar, on which a dwelling stood at the time of the Revolution.

This dwelling was owned and occupied by a widow and her family. A little after twelve o'clock on the morning of the nineteenth of April, she was awakened by an unusual noise.

She instantly got up and went out, and, looking toward the road, she there saw large bodies of armed soldiers, marching silently on, the moonbeams glancing on their murderous weapons.

There was no sound of marshal music to stir the soldier's heart to battle or to victory, but they passed on, like midnight assassins, bent on deeds of treachery and murder, and such indeed proved to be their errand. The widow drew a long breath, and, leaving her place of concealment, she instantly aroused her oldest boy, a youth about fifteen years of age, and despatched him to the nearest neighbor with the news that the troops had passed up the road. This neighbor immediately mounted his horse and rode to Old Cambridge, where he gave the alarm. The bell of the parish church was rung, the intelligence, spreading, soon reached Lexington; the rest is matter of history.

The battle of Lexington was the beginning of the drama of the Revolution, which ended so glorious to our country, and for which we should be so thankful.





## CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825

By Frank M. Hawes

(Continued.)

1832-1833.

"For the ensuing summer term the trustees are happy to find they have been able to meet the wishes of the inhabitants of the several districts by the reappointment to every school of the former highly acceptable and competent teachers." These are: I. N. Sherman, at Milk Row; Miss Abba Mead, at Winter Hill; Manda (Miranda) Whittemore, at the Russell, and Mary W. Jeffurds at the Gardner districts. Miss Jeffurds is allowed to keep some private scholars not exceeding six, and to receive compensation therefrom. Messrs. Runey and Hawkins are empowered to attend to the schools outside the Neck, the same as last year. They engage for the winter term Miles Gardner, for the Gardner school; Elliot Valentine, for Winter Hill; and Joseph S. Hastings, for the Russell district. In September Mr. Walker resigned at the Neck, to go to the Hawes school, South Boston, and Amos P. Baker was elected to succeed him. The death of Mr. Baker was reported December 20, and Aaron D. Capen was placed over this school.

Through Amos Tufts and David Devens, Esq., executors of the will of Deacon Thomas Miller, the trustees received \$100, the income of which was to be used for the schools. Voted that the school recess shall not exceed ten minutes; that the trustees supply Mr. Fairbanks' school with three dozen slates; that all lady teachers in the primary schools be allowed nine afternoons in the course of the year to visit all the other primary schools; and that children may enter from the primary to the other schools at the age of seven, instead of eight, at the discretion of the teacher.

Among the bills approved is one for \$40.80 to Martin Draper. He may have finished out the winter term at the Russell school, as Mr. Hastings, January 28, requested to be discharged from the same, "with reasons."

At the final examinations in April there were enrolled in the ten primary schools 610 scholars; in the five grammar schools,





639; in the four schools without the peninsula, 280; making a total of 1,529. The lamentable number of absences is commented upon. "These absentees hang like a dead weight about the school; the course of instruction is greatly interrupted, and those who are punctual and constant are retarded in their progress. The remedy is alone with the parents."

The Rules and Regulations for the Government of the Charlestown Free Schools, adopted by the Board of Trustees, and bearing the date, January 1, 1833, is of interest at this point. After stating the age at which children may attend the primary and the grammar schools (from four to eight, and from eight to fifteen), the hours for the school session are given,—8 to 11 and 2 to 5, from April 1 to October 1; 9 to 12 and 2 to 5 during the other half year, except on short days, when the schools may be closed at sunset. Instructors are to be in their rooms and to ring the bell ten minutes before the time of opening school. After the school is opened, no scholar shall be admitted without written excuse from his parent or guardian. Each school is divided into four classes, sub-divisions to be left to the teacher.

The holidays shall be Wednesday and Saturday afternoons; Election Day in January; Fast Day and the day after examinations in April; Monday, June 1, and June 17; July 4; in August, the time of meeting of the American Institute of Instruction and the day of Commencement at Harvard; the day after examinations in October; Thanksgiving Day; Christmas Day. These rules are to be enforced in the schools outside the Neck so far as is advisable. This year, also, changes were made in the curriculum, and the following list was authorized and approved:—

Fourth class, primary, alphabetical charts, words of two syllables.

Third class, Introduction to the National Spelling Book, Worcester's Second Book.

Second class, Emerson's National Spelling Book, Easy Reader, Worcester's Second Book.

First class, the New Testament, Emerson's National Spelling Book, the Analytical Reader, Hall's Geography, Arithmetic Cards.





Fourth class, grammar school, the Spelling Book, the Testament, the Analytical Reader, Parley's First Book of Geography.

Third class, Beauties of the Bible, Worcester's Epitome of Geography, Worcester's Third Book, Boston Atlas, Frost's Grammar.

Second class, Murray's Grammar and Exercises, Walker's Dictionary, Natural Reader, Frost's Grammar, Field's American Geography and Atlas.

First class, the First Class Book, Young Ladies' Class Book, Walker's Dictionary, Murray's Grammar and Exercises, Worcester's Geography, or Elements of History, Progressive Exercises in Composition.

Writing schools, Emerson's Second Part, Colburn's Sequel, Boston Writing Slips.

The following books may be used by the consent of the teachers and trustees: Blake's Astronomy, Grund's Natural Philosophy, Woodbridge's History of the United States, Parley's First Book of History, Worcester's Sequel to the Spelling Book, The Academical (Boys') Speaker, Grund's Geometry, Bookkeeping. Sullivan's Political Class Book is to be put in the schools for reference.

#### 1833-1834.

It was voted early this season to retain the services of Mr. Sherman at No. 5, at the salary of \$360, and to pay the teacher at the Neck \$600. Miss Kezia Russell was appointed to teach the summer term in the Russell district, and Miss Abby Mead at Winter Hill. For the winter term the appointments were: Aaron B. Magoun to the Winter Hill school for six months, beginning the first Monday in November, at \$32 per month; and H. K. Curtis for the Russell district, four months, at \$30. The care of the outside schools was assigned to Messrs. Adams and Hawkins for the trustees.

At a special meeting held June 20, 1833, it was voted that teachers of the public schools be requested to parade their scholars on the day of the reception of the President of the United States, under the direction of the chief marshal, and





agreeably to the request of the committee of arrangements, and that the schools have a vacation during that day—June 24.

The petition of John Tufts and others praying for a removal of the schoolhouse in Milk Row was referred to Messrs. Willard, Frothingham, and (later) Hawkins. This seems to be the first move on record looking to the establishment of the Prospect Hill school on Medford street. "Voted that teachers receive no scholar into school after twenty minutes past the hour for commencing school."

The only reference to teachers within the peninsula this year was November 8, 1833, when James Swan was elected writing master at the Training Field school, Reuben Swan, Jr., writing master in the Town Hill school, and O. C. Felton as master of the school at the Neck. As the last-named did not accept, William D. Swan was put in charge of this school. All three teachers received a salary of \$650, which was raised to \$700 later on. About the time which we are considering, the school for girls, which had been at the Training Field, was transferred to the Town Hill side, and the boys' school at the latter place now occupied the newer and more commodious building at the Training Field. I find no mention of this change previous to the spring of 1834, but it may have been earlier than that.

December 30 it is voted that the seats in the primary schools are to have convenient backs added to them, but that the seats in the upper schools remain unaltered. March 31, 1834, a petition that James Swan be discharged from his school, signed by Bradbury Follet and others, was received and placed on file.

From the annual report read in town meeting that May, we learn that the average number of pupils in the ten primary grades is seventy to a teacher; that the Female school, now on Town Hill, with two male teachers, contains 240 pupils; that the Male school at the Training Field, with two teachers, contains 247; and the Neck school, with one master, 116. In the schools outside the peninsula there are 75, 127, 41, and 35, respectively.

1834-1835.

The teachers for the summer term this year were as follows: Miss Abby Mead, re-elected to the Winter Hill; Miss Ann





W. Locke, of the Milk Row district (later on a teacher in one of the primary schools); Miss Martha T. McKoun for the Russell school; and Miss Sarah M. Crowninshield for the Gardner school.

It was voted in May to make repairs at Milk Row school. These were all the more needed, for, June 30, we read: "It having been represented by Mr. C. Thompson that the windows in the schoolhouse there have been very badly broken, it was voted that the committee in charge get evidence and act as they think proper." Bills for work at the Milk Row schoolhouse were approved, among them being Isaac Kendall's for \$12.44, and John W. Mulliken's for \$97.41.

Miss Locke, following as she did a popular teacher like Mr. Sherman, seems to have had a hard school to manage. A petition signed by Alfred Allen and others was circulated for her removal, but the trustees voted to sustain the teacher. "They feel bound to say that their confidence in the talents, deportment, and qualifications of Miss Locke remain undiminished. They recommend that she continue in the school and be encouraged in the arduous duties assigned her." (Signed by Joseph T. Tufts and Charles Thompson.) We read of no further trouble, and her school was examined in its turn, October 24, at 9 o'clock. The winter schools outside the Neck were assigned as follows: At Milk Row to Luther (should be Calvin) Farrar; at Winter Hill to A. B. Magoun; at the Russell district to Henry I. Jewett; at the Gardner school to William E. Faulkner. As Mr. Magoun did not accept, Henry Bulfinch was appointed.

Paul Willard, who signed the annual report, says: "It would be unjust to withhold an expression of the belief that the three high schools within the Neck, under the care of five masters, have reached a standing not before attained by them." These five teachers were Joshua Bates (salary, \$800) and James Swan (\$700) at the Training Field school; Nathan Merrill (\$700) and Reuben Swan, Jr. (\$700), at the Town Hill, or Female, school; William D. Swan (\$700) at the Neck School. We are able to name the teachers who served in the ten primary schools this year, at a maximum salary of \$225. They were: A. G. Twy-





cross, Susan Sawyer, Mary Walker, Hannah Andrews, Hannah Rea, Betsey Putnam, Ann Brown, Emeline G. White, Elizabeth L. Johnson, Margaret W. Locke, Ann W. Locke, Eliza (Ann?) Cutter, Lydia A. Skilton. The permanent funds of the trustees of Charlestown schools in 1834 were:—

35 shares of Union bank stock.....	\$3,500
Town note on interest.....	1,200
Deacon Miller's legacy.....	100
Two primary schools, valued at.....	600
	<hr/>
	\$5,400

1835-1836.

The teachers for the summer schools beyond the peninsula were Miss Ann E. Whipple for Milk Row, Miss Abby Mead for Winter Hill, Miss Kezia Russell for the Russell, and Miss Anna B. Mead for the Gardner. These schools were assigned to the charge of Messrs. Hazeltine and Allen for the trustees. Among bills approved was that of A. W. Whittredge for \$52.50. The winter terms were to be taught by Norwood Damon at the Russell, Edward Wyman at Winter Hill, Timothy P. Rogers at the Gardner, and Miss Ann Whipple was appointed for the Milk Row school, at the same compensation as was given last winter to a male teacher. In the annual report Miss Whipple was highly commended. As Mr. Damon resigned November 30, Mr. (Samuel?) Swan was put in his place. The primary school occupied by Ann W. Locke, having been burned in the late conflagration (Monday, August 31, 1835?), was repaired.

It was voted April 16, 1836, to insert in the next town warrant an article to see whether the town will establish a high school agreeable to sections 5 and 7 of the twenty-third chapter of the Revised Statutes.

Many changes among the teachers are reported this year, but their names are not mentioned on the records. There were now twelve primary schools with an enrollment of 802 scholars, or nearly sixty-seven on an average for each teacher. The Male school had 228, the Female 211, and the Neck schools, both male and female, 129. At Winter Hill, Milk Row, Russell, and





Gardner schools the number of pupils was 80, 116, 29, and 30, respectively, making a total of 1,625.

During the year Nathan Merrill, of the Town Hill school, and William D. Swan, of the Neck school, asked for more salary, and it was voted to give each \$100, in addition to the \$700 they then received. The primary teachers presented a petition for more pay, stating as the cause the high rate of living and the additional quantity of fuel which has been needed in consequence of the unusual cold weather. It was voted to give them \$10 each, and to defer the subject of a greater raise to the next town meeting. Edwin Munroe and others of Milk Row district petition that the trustees will recommend the expediency of another school. Oliver Holden and others "urge the removal of the cupola and bell from the Town Hill school, as it obstructs the view of the dial on Rev. Dr. Fay's church from the inhabitants in the north section of the town. The boy who rings it has to go some distance. He is consequently unable to return on time to commence his studies with the rest of his class. It is also an interruption to the female department."

#### 1836-1837.

The teachers for this summer outside the peninsula were: Miss Abby Mead, of the Winter Hill school; Miss Ann E. Whipple, of the Milk Row; Miss Burnham, of the Russell; and Miss Wyman, of the Gardner. In accordance with the vote of the town, Messrs. Warren and Valentine were requested to look up the law relating to the establishment of high schools. February 23, 1837, they reported in favor of such a school, and their report was presented at the next town meeting.

The formation of a new district school in Milk Row by a division of the district, as referred to the trustees by the town, was next referred to Messrs. Allen and Underwood as a special committee to consider the matter and report later. They found, May 30, "that the number of scholars warrants a division of said district, commencing at a point in the Russell district, thence running easterly south of John Tufts' house to the south side of the wind mill on Prospect Hill; thence northeast of the house





of William Bonner, embracing in the present district the houses of Ephraim Hill and Charles Miller; thence from said Miller's to Cambridge line, west of Charles Wait's house. Exertions have been made to find suitable accommodations for a school by hiring a room, but the committee has been unsuccessful. They recommend the erection of a house to be located near the house of Edwin Munroe, a lot of land suitable for which will be presented to the town by said Munroe and C. Harrington, and may be erected for \$500." Messrs. Allen, Underwood, and Thompson are empowered to get a deed of this land and to build thereon. Later (in November) this section of Milk Row received the name of the Prospect Hill district, and \$600 was appropriated for the building. The committee in charge of this school were instructed not to allow the children of John Runey to remain at the school unless he consents to be set off from Winter Hill to Prospect Hill district.

In regard to "a petition of the teachers within the Neck for a vacation of the first week in June, as Boston teachers have, it was voted inexpedient."

The teachers for the winter term outside the peninsula were: W. S. Wiley, of the Gardner school; Levi Russell, of the Russell school; David Curtis, of the Winter Hill; Joel Pierce, of the Milk Row; and Norwood P. Damon, of the Prospect Hill. The three last-named received \$35 per month. Evidently the new school did not start under the most favorable auspices. The teacher was requested to vacate on the last day of March, and Levi Russell, who had finished his own school, was hired to finish out the term at Prospect Hill. The last weeks of the winter term at Winter Hill school were taught by Miss Abby Mead, who received \$17.50 therefor. She respectfully declined her appointment to the school for the next summer.

January 30, 1837, Dr. Valentine is authorized to visit the schools and see that all children are vaccinated. He is to present his bill for payment when parents are unable to pay. This vote was passed in consequence of finding that a large number of scholars had never been vaccinated. It was also voted that no children should be admitted into any free school of Charles-





town without vaccination certificates, and that no unvaccinated child should be allowed to remain in school after February 13, 1837.

From the annual report, read at the May town meeting, we learn that an average of eleven per cent., or over 200 scholars, have been absent from school the past year. "This is the cause of most of the corporal punishment which is inflicted in the schools, as those absent acquire habits which are altogether incompatible with order and discipline." The whole number of scholars on the rolls is 1,781, of whom 294 are in the five districts without the peninsula. The cupola has been removed from the schoolhouse on Town Hill, and a new one erected on the school at the Training Field. "This year assistant teachers have been appointed in all the grammar schools. This will enable the masters to dispense altogether with monitors, and to see that the younger members of the school receive a proper share of attention." (Charlotte Cutter was one of these assistants. Her services at the Neck school began April 17, 1837.) In conclusion, the report says that evidently another school must be established and a building erected. Such improvements can be made for \$2,600, and it is so recommended. (Signed) Charles Thompson, president; Thomas Brown, Jr., secretary.

1837-1838.

The summer schools beyond the Neck, for this season, were under the following instructors: Miss Ann P. Whipple, of the Prospect Hill school; Rachel T. Stevens, of the Milk Row school; Miss Mary B. Gardner, of the Russell school; Miss Irene S. Locke, of the Gardner school; and Miss Sarah M. Burnham, of the Winter Hill school.

Teachers in these schools were informed, through Mr. Underwood, that they were to teach on Wednesday afternoons as heretofore. It seems that a petition had been circulated in favor of the half-holiday, but the parents objected to it. The compensation for keeping fires and sweeping at Milk Row, Prospect Hill, and Winter Hill was fixed at twenty cents per week. This year, 1837, we have the first mention of an annual vacation, to begin August 17 and to continue to September 1. About





this time the trustees voted to consider the advisability of discarding the New Testament as a reading book for the second class in the primary grades. Voted that teachers be allowed to sell books and stationery to their scholars. Messrs. Warren and Underwood were authorized to examine Miss E. H. Dodge, one of the primary teachers, to see how often she had dismissed without leave and how often she had left her school in charge of another person. A change at her school was found necessary.

The teachers of the winter schools in the outside districts were: Levi Russell at Prospect Hill; Wymond Bradley at Winter Hill; Oliver March at Milk Row; G. A. Parker at the Gardner; and George P. Worcester at the Russell. As Mr. Parker fell sick, his term was completed by Rachel T. Stevens. The schools were examined "and gave general satisfaction."

From the annual report we learn that there are now fourteen primary schools on the peninsula, with 957 pupils, or an average of seventy each. In the three grammar schools there are 830 pupils, and in the five schools beyond the Neck, 276, making a total of 2,063. "The increase is due to the fact that the Irish have given up their own separate establishment and are now sending their children to the public school." Then, again, the schools of Charlestown are open to all between the ages of four and sixteen, for which there is no statute, the universal custom being to the age of fifteen.

"The board has made a great effort this year to procure the abolishment of corporal punishment, and requested teachers to keep an account of such punishment, and to give detailed information in each instance to one of the trustees. In the female grammar school punishment has been wholly abandoned, and in all the resort to it has been far less frequent than formerly. The large boys have of their own accord formed themselves into societies for the prevention of profanity among themselves, and for mutual moral improvement. Many parents have aided them in collecting a library of well-selected books for their use. The exercise of singing has been pretty generally introduced into the schools, and to good advantage. The teachers willing to devote





an extra portion of time for the purpose of giving instruction in this exercise is one of the proofs of their enthusiastic devotion."

The report closes with a reference to the State Board of Education that has been lately established. An appropriation of \$10,000 is asked for. \$9,962 will be needed next year for teachers' salaries, against \$9,415 of this year. "A sense of duty compels us to ask an appropriation of \$200 for the repair of the schoolhouse in the Russell district. The building has not been repaired since its erection: the seats and benches are in bad condition, and the whole interior needs refitting."

#### 1838-1839.

The teachers of the district schools this season were: Mary W. J. Evans, of the Gardner; Clara D. Whittemore, of the Russell; Sarah M. Burnham, of Milk Row; Elizabeth P. Whittredge, of Prospect Hill; and Abby Mead, of Winter Hill road. May 9 Mr. Forster was authorized to procure a teacher until Miss Mead is able to take charge. Miss Ellen A. Damon was elected to this position June 11. "These schools were assigned to the care of Messrs. Allen and Underwood for the trustees. They gave permission to children contiguous to the Neck who wished to attend the Neck school. It was they who had charge of the repairs made during the summer at the Russell school. "It was voted that the summer vacations this year be the first week in June and the last two weeks in August, and that the district schools be allowed a vacation every Wednesday afternoon during the summer." Voted that the form of Register received from the secretary of the Board of Education be adopted, and that the teachers begin with it the first of June, 1838. Voted that the board attend the convention at Lowell Monday, July 27, "and that teachers of the grammar schools be invited to attend with us."

Voted that a male teacher be elected for Winter Hill, to begin September 1, and continue until May 1. James Hovey received the appointment. Amos F. Allen was elected to the Prospect Hill school, Levi (should be Philemon R.) Russell to the Russell school, William R. Bagnall to Gardner Row, and Joel Pierce to the Milk Row school.





November 15, 1838, an attempt was made to arrange the boundaries between the Bunker Hill and Winter Hill districts. This is the first time I find mention of a Bunker Hill district. March 18, 1839, the trustees passed a vote that the Neck school hereafter be called the Bunker Hill school. A month before this, December 11, Benjamin F. Tweed was chosen to succeed William D. Swan at this school.

A petition from Charles Adams and others residing on the top of Winter Hill for establishing a primary school there, and requesting the board to present the same to the town in their annual report, was presented by Mr. Forster. Mr. Allen presented a report of the examination of the Winter Hill school, which was ordered to be placed on file. A petition from Clark Bennett and William Bonner to have the lines of the Prospect Hill school more properly defined, was presented and referred to the whole board.

The annual report for this year is very satisfactory in that it gives us much information. The schools are taken up individually, beginning with the Gardner district. "This school is about seven miles from the Town House, and is contiguous to the western part of Woburn, being a little less than three miles from Woburn meeting house. To reach it the road leads through the middle of West Cambridge, turning to the right as you go by the meeting house of that place. There are about fifteen or twenty families in the district. During the summer this school was under the charge of Mrs. Evans. The average attendance was seventeen out of a total of nineteen. The teacher had classes in geometry, algebra, and natural philosophy, nor were the common branches neglected. Also, there was instruction in the rudiments of music. The winter term was under William R. Bagnall, with an average of twenty out of twenty-four."

"The Russell district verges upon the town of West Cambridge, the schoolhouse being about one-half mile from that meeting house. During the summer this school was under Miss Clara Whittemore. Whole number, twenty-four; average attendance, eighteen, mostly small children. She had brought the school from a state of confusion to one of discipline. During





the winter Phila Russell had charge. Whole number, thirty-seven; average, thirty. His efforts and skill are worthy of the highest commendation. He insisted upon the thoroughness of all his pupils. His uniform practice is, if a pupil makes a blunder in recitation, he is compelled afterwards to repeat that part of his answer correctly,—as a word going around the class must be spelled correctly by each one who has failed, no matter how much time it takes. The schoolhouse here has been much improved by alterations made in pursuance of the recommendation in the last report. These two schools cost the town more than any others in town, in proportion to the number of scholars; in consequence of the change in teachers, probably they receive the least benefit of any." The wish is expressed that the Gardner district might unite with Woburn, and the Russell with West Cambridge. "The Milk Row school is adjacent to the town of Cambridge. Last summer it was under Miss Burnham, with seventy scholars enrolled, and an average attendance of fifty. This shows a culpable degree of absences. The committee spoke in high terms of the school while under this lady. During the winter the school was under Joel Pierce, with an average of sixty out of eighty scholars. He is an experienced, thorough teacher, very precise in his regulations and mode of teaching."

"The Prospect Hill school was erected three years ago to accommodate the inhabitants of that part, formerly a part of Milk Row district. Miss E. P. Whittredge was teacher last summer, and had an average of fifty out of sixty-one pupils. This lady received the decided approbation of the board. She was efficient and faithful. She divided the school into six classes, thus the youngest had more attention than usually falls to their lot. Amos S. Allen was the winter teacher, and had an average of forty-five out of a total of sixty enrolled,—a degree of irregularity wholly inconsistent with the interests of the district. A great improvement in penmanship was noticed. The teacher, though somewhat inexperienced, appeared competent to perform his duties and desirous of doing so."

"The next district is the Winter Hill, though the schoolhouse is situated at some distance from the eminence of that





name. This school was more unfortunate than its neighbors. The board had appointed for the summer term a female of high character, but sudden affliction in her family prevented her continuance. At a late hour another lady was chosen, after the school had been closed for some weeks. She taught one month, and after another recess a third lady was found for eight weeks. A child who attends such a school from the age of four to sixteen will have been under the plastic hand of perhaps twenty-four different teachers, or more than he has cousins or family relations. James Hovey, a graduate, next taught the school eight months. Average, thirty-one out of forty-five, and second term, thirty-three out of fifty-nine. The first class made manifest progress, and the penmanship of the whole school was creditable."

"In all the above schools instruction is given in penmanship, reading, orthography, grammar, arithmetic, history, geography, and sometimes to a few in algebra, natural philosophy, and astronomy. Some of the teachers may fail to make their pupils good readers for the obvious reason that they are not good readers themselves. It is not surprising that these schools have been stationary for the last ten years. Therefore the board would recommend for Milk Row, Prospect Hill, and Winter Hill an essential alteration in their school establishment. They ought to be placed under the same arrangement with the schools of the peninsula. The board would change these three district schools into primary ones for the younger children, and recommend that a grammar school or high school be established in the Prospect Hill district, making four annual schools. For this purpose it would only be necessary to raise the schoolhouse in that district so that a good schoolroom may be made in the basement story for a primary school. This would give an average for the four schools of fifty scholars. In the high school one master would be sufficient at present, and he should be qualified to teach in all branches of English study and in the ancient languages. His salary need not exceed \$600. The whole amount now paid to teachers in these three districts is \$990; by adding \$240, four permanent teachers can be procured under the new





arrangement. Thus, by increasing the expense one-fourth, the greater benefit to be derived will be fourfold. To make the Winter Hill and Milk Row schoolhouses more fit for primary schools, some repairs and alterations will be necessary."

Primary schools within the peninsula:—

No. 1, the school at the Neck, is kept in a building hired of T. J. Elliot. It has been under the charge of Miss Malvina B. Skilton over three years.

No. 2, at Eden street, in a room hired of J. K. Frothingham, is under Miss Mary Walker, who has been longer in this employment than any other of our teachers.

No. 3, in the vestry of the Methodist meeting house, is kept by Miss Charlotte A. Sawyer.

No. 4, in School street, kept by Miss Susan L. Sawyer, before the end of the year (1838) had an offshoot taken from it, which was put under Miss Esther M. Hay. An examination of both was held in Boylston chapel.

No. 5. This school is kept by Miss E. H. Dodge, in the vestry of the Universalist meeting house on Warren street. (The rental of the room was \$50 per year.)

No. 6 is held in a small rear room off Lawrence street, and is under Miss Betsey Putnam.

No. 7 is kept by Miss E. E. Smith, in a room on Harvard street, hired of O. Jaquith.

No. 8 is in a room under No. 7, with entrance from Prescott street. Miss M. E. Chamberlin is the teacher.

No. 9 belongs to the town, and is on Common street. The regular teacher, Miss L. A. Skilton, was succeeded towards the end of the term by Miss M. H. Dupee.

No. 10, also owned by the town, on the Training Field, in the rear of the Winthrop school, was under Miss A. W. Chamberlin, but now Miss Joanna S. Putnam is in charge.

No. 11, in a room near the square, was kept by Miss Crocker, but later by Miss Elizabeth B. Marshall.

No. 12, kept by Miss Ann W. Locke, is in the basement of Boylston chapel.

No. 13, at the Point, in a room hired of Mr. Ferrin, is kept by Miss Battles.





No. 14, at Moulton's Point, established in 1837, is in a new house erected by the board on a lot belonging to the town. The teachers there have been Mrs. M. H. Dupee and Miss Lydia W. Locke.

In October, 1838, a union exhibition of the first classes of the three upper schools was held in the Town Hall. It was a great pleasure to a large audience.

Of the three high schools, the Bunker Hill (Neck) is for both sexes. William D. Swan, the principal, goes to Boston, and will be succeeded by Benjamin F. Tweed. The assistant is Miss Charlotte Cutter. The Harvard school, on Town Hill, is for girls. The teachers here are Paul Sweetser and Charles Kimball. (His term of service began before May, 1837.) Assistants: Miss M. E. Jones, Miss C. A. Johnson, Miss Fernald. The Winthrop school at the Training Field is for boys, the teachers being Mr. Bates and Samuel Swan, and for assistants, Miss Symmes and Miss Hay:

Expenses appended to the trustees' report of May, 1839:—

The bills for repairs in Russell district went beyond the appropriation.

R. G. Tenney, for work.....	\$210.74
Benjamin Track, for work.....	4.00
Moses Bacon, for work.....	34.00

The auditors of all bills that came before the trustees were Richard Frothingham, Jr., and Charles Forster.

Special appropriation to repair Russell district

schoolhouse .....	\$200.00
Salaries: Joshua Bates (Winthrop school).....	900.00
and for teaching ancient languages. ....	100.00
Samuel Swan.....	800.00
Mary B. Symmes.....	200.00
Sarah G. Hay.....	200.00
Harvard school:—	
N. Merrill.....	45.00
Paul H. Sweetser.....	855.00
Charles Kimball.....	800.00





Mary E. Jones.....\$200.00

M. S. Fernald..... 200.00

Bunker Hill:—

William D. Swan ..... 724.25

Robert Swan..... 175.00

B. F. Tweed..... 157.50

Charlotte Cutter..... 200.00

Primary teachers, each \$210, fourteen

schools .....2,940.00

Winter Hill:—

Ann E. Newell..... 20.00

Ellen A. Damon..... 45.00

James Hovey..... 280.00

Prospect Hill:—

Miss E. P. Whittredge..... 120.00

Amos S. Allen..... 210.00

Milk Row:—

Miss S. M. Burnham..... 120.00

Joel Pierce..... 192.50

Russell district:—

Clara D. Whittemore..... 96.00

P. R. Russell, Jr..... 120.00

Gardner district:—

M. W. J. Evans..... 96.00

William R. Bagnall..... 120.00

(To be continued.)





# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1906-1907

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	James F. Whitney
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Treasurer . . . . .	Seth Mason
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. William B. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. Ella P. Hurd
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	Alfred M. Cutler

## Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot

Miss Anna P. Vinal

L. Roger Wentworth

## Committees for Year 1906-7

### Publications

Sam Walter Foss, 249 Highland Ave.	Sara A. Stone, 19 Central St.
Frank M. Hawes, 257 School St.	Samuel C. Earle, 7 Electric Ave.

### Military Records

Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.	L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.
John H. Dusseault, 42 Sargent Ave.	Miss Mary A. Haley, 117 Summer St.

### Hospitality

William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St.	Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury, 17 Dartmouth St.
Mrs. William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St.	Mrs. H. M. Heald, 438 Broadway
Mrs. F. D. Lapham, 3 Hathorn St.	

### Necrology

Professor D. L. Maulsby, 80 Curtis St.	Miss E. A. Waters, 132 Perkins St.
Rev. Francis A. Gray, 19 Dartmouth St.	

### Historic Sites

Joseph O. Hayden, 174 Summer St.	Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.
Aaron Sargent, 290 Broadway	

### Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Wakefield	Miss Florence E. Carr, 89 Oxford St
Seth Mason, 32 Madison St.	William E. Brigham, 4 Hillside Ave.
Mrs. J. F. Ayer, Wakefield	

### Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, 234 Medford St.	Miss Edith B. Hayes, 52 Dartmouth St.
Mrs. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.	

### Photographs

Benj. F. Freeman, 2 Mt. Vernon St.	Albert L. Haskell, 422 Somerville Ave.
James F. Whitney, 40 Dartmouth St.	Mrs. C. L. Maynard, 14 Greenville St.

### Press and Clippings

Miss Lucy M. Stone, 15 Central St.	Miss Annie S. Gage, 32 Marshall St.
Miss Anna P. Vinal, 9 Aldersey St.	Mrs. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.
Mrs. Ella P. Hurd, 55 Columbus Ave.	Miss Mary E. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

January, 1907

Vol. V

No. 1







## CONTENTS.

---

SOME OLD TREES—NUMBER 3

*Sara A. Stone*

PAGE

25

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825

*Frank Mortimer Hawes*

92

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and  
Curator Alfred Morton Butler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all  
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

---

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE







# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. V.

JANUARY, 1907

No. 4

---

## SOME OLD TREES.—NUMBER 3

By Sara A. Stone

The willows once growing on College avenue, near the golf grounds, were probably planted to protect a creek which ran into the Middlesex canal to keep it supplied with water. The canal was under construction early in 1800.

The Tufts College grounds, now so well adorned with trees, once presented a practically treeless hill. Early pictures of it show the lines of stone wall which divided the farms, and few or no trees. The last of the walnuts, which gave the name to the hill originally, were cut down by the soldiers encamped on Winter Hill for their log huts and back-logs. Aaron B. Magoun gave to the college in its first year a tree for every student from his nursery on Winter Hill. Otis Curtis, one of the trustees, superintended the planting of most of the trees on the hill, and set out the row of willows on College avenue, towards Medford. Ladies of the Universalist societies in the vicinity of Boston used to have "planting bees," with a public celebration and the planting of trees, from time to time. The row of elms set in front of the house of the first president are still standing, though the house has been moved away.

Of the tract formerly known as "Polly Swamp," a small piece, half an acre or less, remains on Albion street. A few oaks and some underbrush make a little spot of green, and eight cedar trees may be found in the vicinity. A few large elms, undoubtedly some of the original swamp, still grace several of the yards. This is all that is left of a large tract which once afforded fine cover for quail, which, in the memory of a well-known resident of Somerville, used to be seen crossing what is now Highland avenue.

On the southerly side of Broadway, not far from Magoun





square, are five large white-ash trees, which were set out by Joseph Adams some time previous to 1800. The largest of these is thirteen feet, ten inches in circumference, the smallest eight feet, six inches. Mr. Adams built his house, now better known as the Magoun house, on the top of Winter Hill in 1783. Of the orchard he planted there remain two apple trees. One of them has lately taken a new lease of life through the cultivation of a vegetable garden, and bears apples as fine in flavor as ever. (This tree was cut down December, 1906.) The other, and a very old cherry tree, are best seen from Central street, near Broadway.

On this estate a sweet apple tree was planted by one of the daughters, Rebecca, afterwards Mrs. Jonas Tyler, of Charlestown. As she died in 1804, the tree was in the neighborhood of a hundred years old when it was blown down in 1897. From some of the wood a frame for the charter of Anne Adams Tufts chapter, D. A. R., was made, and two gavels, one of which is the property of the chapter, and the other of the Coconia Club.

Near the spot where the ash trees stand was an encampment of soldiers during the Revolution, who made part of the havoc cutting down trees mentioned earlier in this paper. The logs which formed their barracks were afterwards used by Mr. Adams to build his barn. Mr. Adams built a fence with a red gate, an entrance to the field, the line of which the ash trees bordered. Miss Augusta F. Woodbury, one of the early pupils of the high school, in 1854 wrote a poem inspired by these trees, which may be of interest here:—

#### THE OLD RED GATE.

“By the old red gate 'neath the white-ash tree,  
In twilight's pensive hour,  
We have sat and watched the sun go down,  
Gilding each bud and flower.

“The dearest friends of childhood there  
Have sat and sung with me,  
Have sung the songs we loved so well,  
Beneath that dear old tree.





"We sat in the shade of the drooping boughs,  
And listened to the chime  
Of the evening bells, that solemnly  
Proclaimed the flight of time.

"The soft, green grass of the earth was our couch;  
No thought of sorrow then,  
As we listened to the singing of the birds,  
The flowers our diadem."

Before 1824 an orchard of four or five acres was planted on this estate, and fifty years ago was flourishing in its prime where Magoun square now is. Aaron B. Magoun had a nursery on Winter Hill at a later time. A hackmatack, planted by John C. Magoun in 1824, or a little later, whose top leans from long struggles with prevailing winds, is a landmark from distant points to those whose home interests centre around this spot.

A large horse-chestnut, four white mulberry trees, and several elms on the terrace opposite attract attention by their size and appearance of vigor. The elms, remembered by a near-by resident as large trees in her girlhood, are at least seventy-five years old. Two Lombardy poplars of advanced age stand in the yard of a house on Main street, and peep over the top of the hill at the observer. Three large chestnut trees, a butternut, and half a dozen other mulberry trees formerly grew here. The mulberry trees were raised by William Woodbury, who imported the seed from Italy at the time of the craze for silk-worm culture. From 1836 to 1841 the state paid a bounty on mulberry trees. Another mulberry tree of the same kind stands on Sycamore street close to the railroad bridge. A butternut grows in the yard of the house on the opposite side.

A sapling, now grown to be a noble tree in its prime, was set out some time in the seventeen-seventies by John Tufts, when he began to occupy the Tufts house on Sycamore street, soon after General Lee left it. Mr. Tufts set it out to shade the well, and if it could speak it would tell a tale of domestic quiet and happiness, rather than one of the bruit of arms. In the memory





of one, at least, of the children of the second generation born in the house are stored pleasant pictures of days gone by, when the golden robin built her nest in the long branches, and a swing hung from a branch over the road or driveway which led up to the house from Medford street. The Somerville Historical Society also has pleasant and inspiring memories of the years when the old house was its headquarters.

Sycamore trees grew on each side of the driveway, and gave the name to the street. They were cut down long ago, and boards made of the wood were used to re-floor a shed of the Tufts house. Wood from the sycamore tree is not suitable for use in places exposed to the atmosphere, and so the new floor was not very durable.

A row of sycamore trees grew on each side of Medford street, from Central to Thurston, where there was a well and drinking trough for the wayfarer and Mr. Tufts' cattle. From Thurston to School, the land being somewhat lower, Medford street was lined with willows. All these trees met overhead, and must have formed an attractive, shady avenue. At School street was a small pond with a large willow tree in the centre. A "resting-stone" near was often the stopping place on the way from school for one little girl, at least. Some of these willow trees still remain.

An orchard, with a great variety of fruit, was one of the attractions of this homestead, and there are left of it four trees, still bearing, three of which belong to a member of the second generation. Of the rest of the orchard, which was located across Medford street from the Tufts house, as well as back toward Central street, only the memory of a tree, the fruit of which was very sweet, though no larger than a crab-apple, remains.

Many of the trees on Forster street were set out by Deacon Charles Forster, who was interested in the formation of the first church in Somerville, and in other measures for the good of the community, when it was separated from Charlestown, in 1842.

Going down Broadway, one on the lookout for old trees is brought to a halt at the sight of a spreading apple tree on the estate of I. A. Whitcomb. Investigation leads one to conclude





that it is probably one of an orchard planted by Joseph Tufts, who lived in the Tufts homestead at the corner of Central street and Broadway, and died there in 1819. The orchard was located on both sides of Broadway. Four trees are still standing, two on the right going down, and two on the left in the yard of Selwyn Z. Bowman. The largest tree is said to have had a reach of seventy-two feet a few years ago.

Temple street may be called one of the oldest streets in Somerville, being originally the drive to the "Manor House" on "Ten Hills Farm," occupied successively by Sir Robert Temple, General Elias Hasket Derby, and Colonel Samuel Jaques. From detailed descriptions of people and events connected with "Ten Hills" already printed in *Historic Leaves*, one may glean the following facts about the trees:—

A winding drive led up to the house, "fringed on either side with the fragrant Balm of Gilead." "On either side of the house were magnificent elm trees. One, in particular, was unusually large, girding more than eleven feet, three feet from the ground. The spreading branches formed a fine support for a platform at a distance of thirty feet from the ground, and tea parties were given among the leaves, as many as eight or ten participating." Fruit trees abounded.

Fifty years or so ago there were seventeen elms in the vicinity. A boy of seven proudly fulfilled a contract for several years for protecting the trees from the ravages of the canker-worms by keeping a band of tarred paper freshly coated with tar during the season.

After the death of Colonel Jaques in 1859, brick-making was carried on, and the industry sounded the death-knell of the trees. In the boyhood of one, at least, of the present generation an interesting spectacle was the falling of the great stumps into the pits, as excavations undermined their stronghold. Under one of the trees near Jaques street was a fine well of water, which was often a halting-place for the boys on their way to the river for a swim.

Five elms of the Temple-Derby-Jaques trees are standing on Temple street now, but to which of the owners of "Ten Hills"





they may be credited it is impossible to say definitely. Temple street was formerly known as Derby street, and Colonel Jaques presented it to the city. After comparison with other trees whose approximate age is known, one is inclined to say they are something over a hundred years, perhaps one hundred and twenty-five years old. Probably the trees nearer the house were older.

On the corner of Sargent avenue and Broadway was an old pear tree and a very large Balm of Gilead in the early days of Somerville. The large elm at Walnut street, in the parkway, was in the yard of Chauncey Holt, whose house stood there and was removed when Broadway was widened. Mr. Holt lived in Somerville in 1842, and, in all probability, some years previous to that time. Large elms on Walnut street, in front of the Skilton estate, are from sixty to seventy-five years old. Those in front of the Gilman place were set out seventy years ago. Only one remains to-day, standing by the sidewalk.

A Revolutionary elm stood at the corner of Broadway and Cross street until 1860, when it was cut down. Two tulip trees are remembered growing on the Runey estate on Cross street. As tulip trees are slow in coming to their maturity, they must have been of great age.

Willows are remembered growing on Broadway, about opposite Walnut street, long before the land was made into a park. The present trees date from 1876, when, on the seventeenth of June, the park was dedicated and formally opened to the public. Many citizens, at the invitation of the city government, presented trees, which were set out and marked with the names of the donors. Only a very few of the names can be ascertained, as there was no official record kept, or if it was kept, it has been lost. Ex-Mayor Furber set out four for himself and family; ex-Mayor Brastow, Zadoc Bowman, N. E. Fitz, Aaron Sargent, and John C. Magoun each set out one. Jacob Glines set out a sycamore tree very near the flagstaff. Clark Bennett and Quincy A. Vinal, who was chairman of the committee for laying out the park, both furnished trees. Mather E. Hawes set out an English elm. Credit should be given to him as the originator of





the scheme for celebrating the centennial year by setting out trees on Broadway Park.

When the grounds in front of the Latin School were laid out, the graduating class of the year set out a tree, the one on the right in front of the steps of the building. Those on the left were set out some years later by members of the school, who came in working clothes, with the requisite tools, and made a gala time of it one afternoon, under the supervision of the principal, Mr. Baxter. Quincy A. Vinal furnished a tree for the grounds, likewise Charles A. Bradshaw, in the name of his mother, but neither of these trees lived. Robert A. Vinal, besides setting out all the trees on his own estate on Walnut street, furnished a tree for the high school grounds, the one on the westerly corner of the group in front of the Latin High School.





**CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825****By Frank M. Hawes**

(Continued.)

1839-1840.

The teachers of the summer schools outside the Neck were: Miss Mary E. Brown, of the Winter Hill; Elizabeth P. Whittredge, of Prospect Hill; Miss Mary Dodge, of Milk Row; Miss Clara D. Whittemore, of the Russell; and Miss Hannah S. Austin, of the Gardner. These schools were assigned to the care of Messrs. Allen and Underwood, of the trustees. The report of Charles Adams and others, reported at the last town meeting, was referred to Messrs. Forster, Underwood, and Sanborn, who are to ascertain the number of children at Winter Hill. This committee reported in favor of a school on the top of this hill, "on certain conditions," and a few days later it was voted to open this school Monday, June 10, for six months. Miss Caroline M. Sylvester was secured as teacher. The two schools in this district were designated henceforth as the Lower and the Upper Winter Hill schools.

Estimates were received from various persons on the cost of altering the school buildings in Winter Hill, Prospect Hill, and Milk Row districts, according to the last annual report. The contract was awarded to James Twombly, as the lowest bidder, for \$690.45. At the end of the year we find his bill of \$788.37 approved by the auditing committee. The report says: "The former schoolroom at Prospect Hill has been fitted up in such a manner as to make it one of the most desirable in town, having seats with backs, and raised as they recede from the desk of the master; and an addition has been made for the accommodation of the primary school." "The cumbrous desks have been removed from the Milk Row and Winter Hill schoolhouses, and these have been fitted up for the better accommodation of the primaries." August 12, voted to let the teachers dismiss their





schools Wednesday next, to attend the examination of schools in Boston on that day.

September 30 we have the first mention of the Prospect Hill grammar school, which is to be opened Monday, November 4, also the primary school there the same day; the salary of the master to be \$600, payable quarterly. October 14 Cornelius M. Vinson was elected the teacher of this school, and December 30 a clock was voted for his schoolroom. The spring examination occurred April 9, 1840, at 1 p. m. The report adds: "Thus far this school has succeeded beyond the expectations of the board. During the winter the attendance was so regular and full that additional seats were necessary. The discipline was good." There has not been a blow struck at this school since its establishment. The number of scholars enrolled was sixty-two; average attendance, fifty-eight.

As the teacher at Milk Row had not given satisfaction, Miss Sarah M. Burnham was unanimously chosen to her place November 30. For the winter the teachers in the Russell and Gardner districts were Philemon R. Russell, Jr., and Stephen A. Swan, respectively. Mr. Russell received \$120 for his services, and out of a total of thirty-nine pupils held an average of thirty. December 30 "John C. Hooper was chosen to the place made vacant by the death of Stephen A. Swan, who was drowned while skating on Medford pond the 25th instant."

December 16 we read that a violent gale injured the new schoolhouse building within the peninsula. March 5, 1840, this new structure, which was of brick, was named the Warren school, to be used for both sexes. At this time the following districts were formed:—

The Bunker Hill, from Canal bridge to Walker street, and from Charles river to Medford river.

The Warren, from Walker street to Austin, Warren, and Cordis streets, and Everett street to Medford river.

The Harvard (girls) and Winthrop (boys), all south of this line.

The Warren school was dedicated Tuesday, April 21, 1840. The programme was as follows:—





Prayer.

Rev. G. E. Ellis, of the Harvard church.

Singing.

A delegation of scholars from the Bunker Hill, Winthrop, and Harvard schools. Hymn for the occasion by Paul H. Sweetser, teacher of the Harvard school.

Address.

Richard Frothingham, Jr., president of the trustees.

Address.

Dr. A. R. Thompson.

Singing—Juvenile hymns, "Let music swell the breeze" and "My Native Country, Thee."

Address.

Samuel L. Felton, Esq.

Address.

W. W. Wheldon, Esq.

Singing—Juvenile hymns, "Our Father's God, to Thee," and "My Country, 'Tis of Thee."

Address.

George W. Warren, Esq.

Address.

Rev. George E. Ellis.

Singing—Hymn.

Written by Mr. Sweetser.

Prayer.

Rev. N. T. Bent, of St. John's church.

Singing—Juvenile hymn, "My Country, 'Tis of Thee."

March 4 the death of James Underwood, member of the board four years, is recorded. The trustees vote to attend the funeral the next day, March 5, at 3 p. m. The teachers of all the grammar schools are allowed to close their schools, and are invited to attend, with the board. Mr. Warren is selected to draw up suitable resolutions.





There being sixteen primary schools within the peninsula, those outside were numbered as follows:—

No. 17—Lower Winter Hill primary.

No. 18—Upper Winter Hill primary.

No. 19—Prospect Hill primary.

No. 20—Milk Row primary.

The number of scholars enrolled at these schools was 26, 26, 40, 56; the average attendance, 21, 23, 38, and 38, respectively. Throughout the grammar schools on the peninsula "backs have been put to all the seats, as they have hitherto been the subject of much complaint on the part of parents and scholars. For six hours daily have pupils been obliged to sit on a round piece of plank, fashioned to a standard, and without any backs." Mr. Frothingham, for his excellent report, received the congratulations of the board.

The accompanying table, appended to this year's report, will, I am sure, awaken feelings of interest in the minds of all who have thus far followed our history of the public schools of Charlestown:—

#### COST OF SCHOOLS IN VARIOUS TOWNS, 1838

	Population	Annual Appropriation	Number of Schools	Wages Per Month	
				Males	Females
Charlestown .....	10,101	\$14,477	22	\$ 50.75	\$17.51
Boston.....	80,325	93,000	100	105.08	20.83
Lowell.....	18,010	14,356	28	44.85	16.07
Salem .....	14,304	11,580	20	52.77	21.10
Nantucket.....	9,048	6,000	12	61.98	10.42
Roxbury.....	7,493	5,000	16	50.33	17.20
Lynn.....	9,233	4,500	15	36.74	12.28
Medford.....	2,075	2,700	7	51.39	14.10
Chelsea.....	1,659	2,700	7	37.50	15.59
Cambridge.....	7,631	5,419.57	16	54.33	19.48
Dorchester.....	4,564	4,650	14	35.42	15.00
Dedham.....	3,532	3,000	11	31.09	13.80
Brookline.....	1,083	1,050	5	23.50	12.66
Milton.....	1,772	2,000	5	35.00	21.22





1840-1841.

The teachers in all the schools outside the Neck for this summer were the same as last year: No. 17, Mary E. Brown; No. 18, Caroline M. Sylvester; No. 19, Elizabeth P. Whittredge; No. 20, Sarah M. Burnham; at the Russell district, Clara D. Whittemore; and at Gardner school, Hannah S. Austin.

In the last report the trustees had expressed the belief that accomplished female teachers would keep the two district schools in a steady state of progress, and recommended that these two schools be made annual schools. This was so voted, and November 21 Miss Charlotte Reynolds was selected for the Gardner district, at a salary of \$225. Levi Russell was elected for the winter term in his home district.

"Messrs. Forster and Sanborn, a committee for estimating the cost of a new building on Winter Hill, reported May 11 that Mr. Charles Adams will give to the town a piece of land 30x40 feet, on condition that a school be built forthwith. This report was accepted, and it was voted to build a house in all respects like one recently built on Elm street, the cost, with fences and outhouses, not to exceed the amount appropriated by the town" (\$500).

"Vacation this year is to be the same as last year, the first week in June and from the 17th to the 29 August, inclusive,—and the following days, 17 June, 4 July, Thanksgiving Day, with the Friday and Saturday following, Christmas Day; and no other days to be allowed except by special vote of the town."

The number of children in town June 29, 1840, between four and sixteen years is 2,619, the census being taken by the assessors, James K. Frothingham, William H. Bacon, Fitch Cutter.

Voted September 29, that teachers must be residents of the town during their term of service. Charles Kimball, of the Harvard (female) school, resigned the last of November, and a flattering letter with the thanks of the board was extended to him for his services.

January 30, 1841, the trustees examined into the complaint of a parent against Mr. Vinson, of the Prospect Hill school, for excluding his son from school. The committee





approve entirely of the teacher's course. "The boy's case of being allowed to return, if of good character, is referred to Messrs. Forster, Mackintire, and Frothingham, who are to confer with Mr. Vinson and report." Voted that Mr. Vinson deserves and hereby receives the thanks of the board for the judicious manner in which he has sustained the government of the school since its establishment, without a single recourse to corporal punishment. February 6 it is found that the boy in question is more than sixteen years of age, "and his expulsion should be adhered to." Soon after this, when it was feared that Mr. Vinson's services could not be retained, his salary was raised to \$800.

April 16. "It was voted that the male teachers of each grammar school join the procession in solemnization of the death of President Harrison next Monday; also that they make arrangements for the boys to join in the procession."

The number of scholars in the outside schools:—

Prospect Hill grammar, 63; average, 43; at the examination, 42.

No. 17—Total number, 27; average, 23; at the examination, 22.

No. 18—Total number, 37; average, 25; at the examination, 28.

No. 19—Total number, 50; average, 42; at the examination, 47.

No. 20—Total number, 60; average, 43; at the examination, 46.

Russell school, 40; average, 29.

Gardner school, not given.

Miss Abby Tufts received \$20 for rent of schoolroom (Winter Hill).

The annual report for this year makes mention of the new schoolhouse on top of Winter Hill, on land given to the town by Charles Adams and others. It is well and neatly fitted up with good ventilators, and seats which allow the children to sit separately. New seats, with backs, have been put in the Russell





schoolroom; blinds have been put on the Prospect Hill and Russell houses.

### SCHOOL REGULATIONS.

Bells must be rung and instructors must be in their schools ten minutes before the time of opening. The winter fires must be made one-half hour before school.

No scholar, after schools are opened, shall be admitted without written excuse from parent or guardian.

Indigent pupils may be supplied with books, which must be considered as belonging to the school.

A record must be kept of the pupils' names, their residences, date of admission, ages, absences, etc.

Instructors shall practice mild, but firm, discipline, and avoid corporal punishment, except in cases absolutely necessary, and keep a record of the same.

Instructors must care for the ventilation of their rooms. They shall not award medals or other prizes; shall not allow subscriptions or contributions for any purpose.

Each school is to be divided into five classes, sub-divisions to be left to the teacher.

The books prescribed for the primary schools: My First School Book, Worcester's Second and Third Books of Reading, the Young Reader, the New Testament, the New National Spelling Book, Introduction to the National Spelling Book, Emerson's First Part in Arithmetic, Alphabetical Cards, the Mt. Vernon Reader.

In the grammar schools: American First Class Book, Young Ladies' Class Book, National Reader, Worcester's Third Book, National Spelling Book, Murray's Grammar, Parker and Fox's Grammar, Frost's Grammar, Bailey's Algebra, Emerson's Second and Third Parts in Arithmetic, Robinson's Bookkeeping, Blake's Philosophy, Comstock's Chemistry, Wilkins' Astronomy, Worcester's Geography, Mitchell's Geography, Worcester's History, Boston School Atlas, Sullivan's Political Class Book, Gould's Latin Grammar and Latin Reader, Smellie's Natural Philosophy.





1841-1842.

The teachers in the outside schools for this year were: Miss Mary E. Brown, at No. 17; Miss Leonora Skilton, at No. 18,—appointed March 13, to succeed Miss Sylvester, who was transferred to the Warren school; Miss Elizabeth P. Whittredge, at No. 19; Miss Sarah M. Burnham, at No. 20; Miss Elizabeth A. Caverno, at the Russell district. According to the annual report, she was succeeded for the winter term by Levi Russell, but by Philemon R. Russell, Jr., according to the records. Miss Charlotte Reynolds taught in the Gardner district. She was succeeded by a male teacher, to begin the first Monday in December, and continue four months. A. O. Lindsey, a pupil teacher of the Harvard school, was asked to take the position, at \$30 per month. Only a few references to teachers within the peninsula are noted. Lewis B. Munro and John A. Sanborn are made pupil teachers at the Winthrop school, with a salary of \$50 each. Lydia W. Locke, of primary school No. 16, is succeeded August 30 by Hannah S. Austin. Previous to this date, Jane M. Burckes, a primary teacher, is mentioned, and later in the year Charlotte Bracket is appointed to primary school No. 21.

The number of children in town from four to sixteen on May 1, 1841, was 2,719. The summer vacation was from August 16 to August 30. Teachers of primary schools hereafter are to be allowed \$2 per year for building fires, but nothing is to be allowed for sweeping.

The trustees assigned to outside schools (beyond the Neck) were: Messrs. Magoun and Francis Bowman to the Russell and Gardner districts, and Messrs. Allen and Bowman to the Prospect Hill grammar. No. 17 was under Mr. Bowman's supervision, No. 18 under Mr. Magoun, and Nos. 19 and 20 under Mr. Allen.

February 28, 1842, an invitation to the board of trustees and teachers was received from the mayor of Salem to attend a celebration on the occasion of the opening of several new school-houses in that city March 1, 1842. It was accepted.

There is no reference on the records of the trustees to the important fact that the schools "without the Neck," after this





year, were lost to Charlestown forever. From the annual report, signed April 19, 1842, we read: "The recent division of the town by act of the Legislature, dated February 25, 1842, annexed a part of the town to West Cambridge, and an act dated March 3, 1842, incorporated the town of Somerville. This diminishes the number of schools one grammar, two district, and four primary. According to the last report, the salary paid the seven teachers of these schools was \$2,000, and the number of pupils was 294."

This series of articles on the history of the schools of Charlestown, from their earliest establishment to the incorporation of Somerville, must now come to a close. The writer cannot expect a work of this kind to be free from errors, or without many important omissions. The work has been a labor of love. By consulting the town records of Charlestown, which at the present time are carefully preserved in the archives at the City Hall of Boston, the records and reports of the trustees, to be found at the school committee's rooms on Mason street, Boston, the early history by Bartlett (1813), the later one of Frothingham, and the invaluable work of Wyman on old Charlestown families, by looking up newspaper files, and by numerous personal interviews, he has endeavored to rescue many important facts from oblivion, and to give to those interested in the schools of to-day a faithful picture of what has been. The picture is one not to be ashamed of, and ought to appeal to our local pride.

(For an impress of the seal of the Charlestown Free Schools, see report of the School Committee of the city of Charlestown for 1873, to which reports of the Trustees are added. Printed by Caleb Rand.)





# INDEX

- Adams, Charles, 78, 92, 96, 97.  
 Adams, Chester, 16, 17, 21, 23, 46, 48,  
     51, 52, 69.  
 Adams, Joseph, 10, 86.  
 Adams, Joseph, Jr., 13.  
 Adams, Samuel, 11.  
 Agassiz, Louis, 8.  
 Albion Street, 53, 85.  
 Alewife Brook, 47.  
 Allen, Alfred, 49, 71, 72, 73, 74, 77, 78,  
     92, 99.  
 Allen, Amos F., 77.  
 Allen, Amos S., 79, 83.  
 Allen, Henry C., 48.  
 Alphabetical Cards, 98.  
 American Anti-Slavery Society, 29.  
 American Arithmetic, Robinson, 25.  
 American First Class Book, 25, 98.  
 Ames, D., 15.  
 Ames, Philander, 49, 92.  
 Andrews, Hannah, 72.  
 Angier, D., 12.  
 Angier, Ellen P., 53.  
 Anne Adams Tufts Chapter, D. A. R.,  
     86.  
 Appalachian Club, 36.  
 Arlington, Mass., 7.  
 Arnold Arboretum, 1, 8.  
 Austin, Hannah S., 92, 96, 99.  
 Austin, N., 13.  
 Austin Street, 20, 22, 93.  
 Ayer, John F., 53.  
 Babcock, A., 13.  
 Bacon, Moses, 82.  
 Bacon, William H., 96.  
 Bagnall, William R., 77, 78, 83.  
 Bailey's Algebra, 98.  
 Baker, —, 52.  
 Baker, Amos P., 67.  
 Baker, Henry, 59.  
 Banks Street, 62.  
 Barker, Amos, 51.  
 Barker, J., 12.  
 Barnard, A., 12.  
 Barrrell, Joseph, 54.  
 Barrett, Samuel, 17, 18, 20.  
 Barry, J., 15.  
 Bartlett, —, 100.  
 Bates, Joshua, 71, 82.  
 Battles, —, 81.  
 Baxter, George L., 53, 91.  
 Baxter, Sylvester, 32.  
 Beacon Hill, 2, 3.  
 Beacon-Street Mall, 3.  
 Beaver Brook, 8.  
 Bennett, Clark, 78, 90.  
 Bennett, Josiah Q., 53.  
 Bent, Rev. N. T., 94.  
 Berkeley Street, 57.  
 Bigelow, Samuel, 17, 18, 51, 52.  
 Blake's Philosophy, 98.  
 Blanchard, Catherine, 47, 51.  
 Blanchard, J., 12.  
 Blodgett, L., 15.  
 Blue Hills, 32.  
 Bonner, Captain John, 2.  
 Bonner, Phillip, 11.  
 Bonner, William, 74, 78.  
 Books for Grammar Schools, 1840, 98.  
 Books for Primary Schools, 1840, 98.  
 Boston, 2.  
 Boston Common, 2, 3.  
 Boston Public Library, 2.  
 Boston School Atlas, 98.  
 Boston Slips, 52.  
 Bowman, Francis, 49, 99.  
 Bowman, Martha E., 53.  
 Bowman, Selwyn Z., 89.  
 Bowman, Zadoc, 90.  
 Bow Street, 55.  
 Boylston Chapel, 81.  
 Brackett, Charlotte, 99.  
 Brackett, George C., 53.  
 Brackett, Samuel, 59.  
 Brackett, Thomas, 59.  
 Bradbury, Charles, 14.  
 Bradbury, C., Jr., 14.  
 Bradford, Alice L., 53.  
 Bradley, Abigail, 49.  
 Bradley, Wymond, 76.  
 Bradshaw, Charles A., 91.  
 Brastow, Ex-Mayor, 90.  
 Brattle Street, Cambridge, 6.  
 Bridgewater, Mass., 48.  
 Broadway, 63, 85, 88, 89, 90.  
 Broadway Park, 91.  
 Bromfield Street, Boston, 4.  
 Brooks, Peter C., 9.  
 Brown, Ann, 21, 72.  
 Brown, George W., 50.  
 Brown, Hannah C., 53.  
 Brown, Mary E., 92, 96, 99.  
 Brown, Thomas, Jr., 49, 75, 92.  
 Buckley, William, 12.  
 Bullfinch, Henry, 71.  
 Bunker Hill Aurora, 22.  
 Bunker Hill District, 78, 83, 93.  
 Bunker Hill School, 22, 78, 82, 94.  
 Burckes, Jane M., 99.  
 Burdham, Sarah M., 73, 75, 77, 79, 83,  
     92, 96, 99.  
 Butler, W., 15.  
 Cambridge, 5, 7, 9.  
 "Cambridge College," 48.  
 Cameron Avenue, 63.  
 Camp Cameron, 63.  
 Canal Bridge, 50, 52, 93.  
 Capen, Aaron D., 67.





- Caverno, Elizabeth A., 99.  
 "Cedar Pasture," 60, 62.  
 Cedar Street, 60, 61.  
 Cemetery, Old Cambridge, 3.  
 Central Street, 57, 58, 59, 66, 89.  
 Chamberlin, M. E., 81.  
 Charles River, 93.  
 Charlestown, 2, 9, 10, 17, 23, 40, 65, 86, 88, 99, 100.  
 Charlestown Free Schools, Seal of, 100.  
 Charlestown Schools After 1825, 16-26, 46-52, 67-83, 92-100.  
 Chase, Philip, 38.  
 Chelmsford, Mass., 16.  
 Chesnut Court, 59.  
 Childs, S., 14.  
 Chillis, E., 15.  
 City Hall, Boston, 100.  
 Clarendon Hill, 63, 64.  
 Clark, —, 14.  
 Clark, J., 12.  
 Clark, Joseph H., 53.  
 Clark, Mary A., 23.  
 Class Day Tree, 6.  
 Cleveland, H. W. S., 31, 33.  
 Cobbet, E., 12.  
 Coconia Club, 86.  
 Colburn, Joshua O., 16.  
 Colburn's Mental Arithmetic, 25.  
 Colby, Lewis, 48.  
 College Avenue, 63, 85.  
 Columbus Avenue, 55.  
 Comstock's Chemistry, 98.  
 Common Street, 81.  
 Conant, 51.  
 Conant, Peter, 18.  
 Cook, A., 14.  
 Cooke, S. N., 51.  
 Cooper, J., 15.  
 Copp's Hill, 5.  
 Copps, Samuel, 10.  
 Cordis Street, 93.  
 Cost of Schools, 1838, 95.  
 Cotton Hill, 2.  
 Craigie House, Cambridge, 6.  
 Crocker, —, 81.  
 Cross Street, 57, 90.  
 Crowninshield, Sarah M., 71.  
 Cummings' First Lessons in Geography and Astronomy, 25.  
 Curtis, David, 74.  
 Curtis, H. K., 69.  
 Curtis, Moses A., 23.  
 Curtis, Otis, 85.  
 Cutter, A., 13.  
 Cutter, Charlotte, 75, 82, 83.  
 Cutter, Eb., 14.  
 Cutter, Edward, 13, 16.  
 Cutter, Eliza Ann, 17, 72.  
 Cutter, Fitch, 13, 96.  
 Cutter, Richard E., 53.  
 Dale, W., 14.  
 Damon, Ellen A., 77, 83.  
 Damon, Norwood P., 72, 74.  
 Dane's Ledge, 57.  
 Davenport, A., 13.  
 Davis, D., 12.  
 Davis, Mary J., 53.  
 Davis Square, 62.  
 Dedham, Mass., 9.  
 Deer Island, 2.  
 De las Casas, Mr., 31, 36, 37.  
 Derby, General Elias Hasket, 89.  
 Derby Street, 90.  
 Devens, David, Esq., 67.  
 Dexter, Elm, 9.  
 Dexter Street, Malden, 9.  
 Dickson, A., 14.  
 Dickson, William, 11.  
 Dodge, E. H., 76, 81.  
 Dodge, Mary, 47, 49, 92.  
 Dow, Frances, 53.  
 Dow, Lorenzo W., 64.  
 Dow, Mrs. L. W., 53.  
 Draper, Martin, 67.  
 Dupee, M. H., 81, 82.  
 Dyer, Ezekiel D., 19.  
 Eastman, Francis S., 46.  
 East Watertown, Mass., 9.  
 Eden Street, 81.  
 Edlelson, Helen F., 53.  
 Elliot, Charles, 37.  
 Elliot, Charles D., 53.  
 Eliot School, Boston, 20.  
 Elliot, T. J., 81.  
 Ellis, Rev. G. E., 94.  
 Elmwood, Cambridge, 7.  
 Elm Street, 60, 62, 96.  
 Elm Street, Malden, 9.  
 Emerson's First Part in Arithmetic, 98.  
 Emerson's Second and Third Parts in Arithmetic, 98.  
 Essex Street, Boston, 5.  
 Evans, Mary W. J., 77, 78, 83.  
 Everett, Rev. Linus S., 48, 92.  
 Everett Street, 93.  
 "Evangeline," 8.  
 Fables, La Fontaine, 29, 37.  
 Fairbanks, —, 51, 52, 67.  
 Fairbanks, Josiah, 20.  
 Farrar, Luther (Calvin), 71.  
 Faulkner, William E., 71.  
 Fay, Rev. Dr., 73.  
 Fay, Rev. Mr., 23.  
 Fells Association, 76.  
 Felton, O. C., 70.  
 Felton, Samuel L., Esq., 94.  
 Female Writing School, 52.  
 Fernald, M. S., 82, 83.  
 Ferrin, —, 81.  
 Fletcher, Annie L., 53.  
 Fisk, Ellsworth, 53.  
 Fitchburg Railroad, 65.  
 Fitz, N. E., 53, 59, 90.  
 Flagg, Wilson, 34, 38.  
 Flanagan, Lewis C., 61.  
 Flanders, Miss, 18.  
 "Flora of Somerville, The," 55.  
 Follet, Bradbury, 70.  
 Ford, C., 15.  
 Forster, Charles, 49, 77, 78, 82, 92, 96, 97.  
 Forster, Deacon Charles, 60, 88.  
 Fort Hill, 4.  
 Fort Wagner, 4.  
 Foster, T., 13.  
 Franklin School, 60, 65.  
 French, Miss Rebecca, 17, 21.  
 Fresh Pond, 9.





- Frost's Grammar, 98.  
 Frost, Martha, 18, 19.  
 Frost, Samuel, 12.  
 Frost, Samuel Tufts, 57.  
 Frost, William, 13.  
 Frothingham, ———, 22.  
 Frothingham, James K., 48, 70, 81, 96.  
 Frothingham, Richard, Jr., 49, 51, 82, 94, 95, 97.  
 Furber, William H., 53, 90.  
 Garden Court, 58.  
 "Gardner District," 50, 51, 67, 78, 79, 83, 93, 96, 99.  
 Gardner, Henry, 11.  
 Gardner, Mary B., 75.  
 Gardner, Miles, 67.  
 Gardner, Miss, 20.  
 Gardner Row, 77.  
 Gardner, Samuel, 14.  
 Gardner, S., Jr., 14.  
 Gardner School, 67, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 92, 96, 97.  
 Gaffield, E., 12.  
 Garrison, William Lloyd, 37.  
 Gates, Miss, 52.  
 Geddes, Alex., 11.  
 Gerrish, Miss Elizabeth, 21, 46.  
 Gerrald, S., 12.  
 Gerry, Martha J. H., 53.  
 Gilman Estate, 90.  
 Gillen, S., 15.  
 Glines, Jacob, 90.  
 Goddard, N., 13.  
 Goddard, T., 13.  
 Gould's Latin Grammar and Latin Reader, 98.  
 Gould, T., 14.  
 Green, J., 15.  
 Green, General, 57.  
 Greenleaf, P., 15.  
 Greenleaf, T., 15.  
 Griffin, M., 12.  
 Grove Street, Watertown, 9.  
 Gulliver, Lemuel, 22, 46, 50.  
 Hadley, Benjamin, 11.  
 Hager, J., 14.  
 Hager, J., Jr., 14.  
 Haley, M. F., 49.  
 Hall Avenue, 63.  
 Hall house, 63.  
 Hall, John K., 59.  
 Hanover Square, 5.  
 Harrington, C., 11, 74.  
 Harrison, President, 97.  
 Harvard College, 6, 7, 23.  
 Harvard Hall, 6.  
 Harvard School, 82, 94, 95, 96, 99.  
 Harvard Street, 59, 81.  
 Haskell, Albert L., 53.  
 Hastings, Joseph S., 48, 67.  
 Hathern, L., 15.  
 Hawes, Frank Mortimer, 16, 46, 53, 67, 92.  
 Hawes, Mather E., 90.  
 Hawes School, South Boston, 67.  
 Hawkins, Christopher, 11.  
 Hawkins, Guy C., 11, 26, 48, 49, 50, 52, 67, 69, 70.  
 Hawkins, Guy C., Papers, 10-15, 40-45.  
 Hawkins House, 55.  
 Hay, Sarah G., 82.  
 Hay, Esther M., 81, 82.  
 Hayes Estate, 63.  
 Hazelton, Amos, 10, 49, 72.  
 Heald, Helen E., 53.  
 Hemlock Wood, 1, 8.  
 Henchman, Nathaniel H., 11, 17, 18.  
 Henderson, C. E., 53.  
 Higginson, Colonel T. W., 6, 37.  
 Highland Avenue, 46, 53, 57, 85.  
 High Street, Boston, 4.  
 Hill, Ephraim, 74.  
 Hill, Ives, 54.  
 Hill, J. D., 12.  
 Hilliard, A. S., 31, 33.  
 Historical Society, Somerville, 88.  
 Historical Society, Somerville, Officers of, 84.  
 Hoyt, A. G., 21.  
 Holden, Bertha E., 53.  
 Holden, Oliver, 73.  
 Hollis Hall, 6.  
 Holmes, O. W., 3, 53.  
 Holmes' Field, 6.  
 Holroyd, John, 20, 27.  
 Holt, Chauncey, 90.  
 Hooper, John C., 93.  
 Hooper, Thomas, 22.  
 Hovey, James, 77, 80, 83.  
 Hovey, W., 15.  
 Hunnewell, William, 13.  
 Hurd, J. Stearns, 20, 21.  
 Hutchinson, H., 15.  
 Hutchinson, Thomas, 11.  
 Hyde, Adeline, 17.  
 Inman Street, Cambridge, 9.  
 Ireland, George W., 56.  
 Ireland, John, 10, 56.  
 Jackson, Rev. Henry, 16, 18, 46.  
 Jaques, Fannie C., 53.  
 Jaques, Henry, 23, 48.  
 Jaques, Colonel Samuel, 89, 90.  
 Jaquith, Miss, 52.  
 Jaquith, O., 81.  
 Jaquith, Mrs. Polly, 17.  
 Jeemes, J., 15.  
 Jeffords, Mary W., 51, 67.  
 Jenks, Joseph W., 46.  
 Jewett, Henry I., 71.  
 Johnson, C. A., 82.  
 Johnson, Elizabeth L., 72.  
 Johnson, Jotham, 12.  
 Jones, Mary E., 82, 83.  
 Jones, Roxanna, 17.  
 Joy, Benjamin, 12.  
 Judkins, R., 15, 19, 20.  
 Kelly, Hall J., 19, 17, 18.  
 Kendall, Isaac, 71.  
 Kent house, 60.  
 Kent, Jonathan, 10.  
 Kent, Samuel, 10.  
 Kidder, A. M., 53.  
 Kidder, Andrew, 55.  
 Kidder, J., 12.  
 Kimball, Charles, 82, 96.  
 Kimball, George A., 53.  
 King, C. C., 46.  
 Kirkpatrick, Eleanor G., 53.  
 Knapp Street, 56.





- Knight, C., 15.  
 Knight, Hersina, 18, 19.  
 Knowlton, G., 15.  
 Lake, Alice E., 10.  
 Lampson, E., 14.  
 Lampson, N., 14.  
 Lampson, S., 14.  
 Landers Street, 56.  
 Larkin, A., 14.  
 "Latin Grammar School," 20.  
 Latin School, 91.  
 Laurel Street, 57.  
 Lawrence, Rosewell B., 37.  
 Lawrence Street, 81.  
 Lears, Georgia, 53.  
 Lee, General, 87.  
 Libby, Martha E., 53.  
 "Liberty Tree," 5.  
 Lindsey, A. O., 99.  
 Littlefield, Joshua, 11.  
 Locke, Ann W., 71, 72, 81, 82.  
 Locke, Irene S., 73.  
 Locke, Lydia W., 99.  
 Locke, Margaret W., 72.  
 Longfellow, H. W., 4, 6, 8.  
 Loring, J. W., 15.  
 Lovett, J., 12.  
 Lowell, J. K., 7, 8.  
 Lowell, Mass., 77.  
 Lowell Railroad, 65.  
 Lower Winter Hill Primary, 95.  
 Lower Winter Hill School, 92.  
 Mackintire, Eliah P., 49, 97.  
 Magoon, John C., 11, 92.  
 Magoun, Aaron B., 69, 71, 85, 87.  
 Magoun, John C., 49, 87, 90, 99.  
 Magoun, Nathaniel, 23.  
 Magoun Square, 85, 87.  
 Main Street, 87.  
 Main Street, Medford, 9.  
 Malden, Mass., 9.  
 Mann, George C., 37.  
 Mann, Jairus, 53.  
 "Manor House," 89.  
 March, Olive, 76.  
 Marshall, Elizabeth B., 81.  
 Mason Street, Boston, 100.  
 Massachusetts Abolitionist, 29.  
 Mather, Increase, 3.  
 Mather, Nathaniel, 3.  
 Mather, Mrs. Richard, 3.  
 Maulsby, David L., 53.  
 McKoun, Martha T., 71.  
 McLean Asylum, 54, 65.  
 Mead, Abba (Abby), 51, 67, 69, 70, 71, 73, 74, 77.  
 Mead, Anna B., 72.  
 Mead, Sarah A., 49.  
 Mears, J., 15.  
 Medford, Mass., 30.  
 Medford Pond, 93.  
 Medford Public Domain Club, 38.  
 Medford River, 93.  
 Medford Street, 54, 70, 88.  
 Merrill, Nathan, 71, 73, 82.  
 Methodist Meeting House, 81.  
 Middlesex Bleachery, 57, 60.  
 Middlesex Canal, 85.  
 Middlesex Fells, 29-39.  
 Miller, Charles, 74.  
 Miller, James, 54.  
 Miller, Joseph, 12.  
 Miller, Joseph, Jr., 12.  
 Miller, Deacon Thomas, 67.  
 Milk Row District, 73, 79, 92, 93.  
 Milk Row Primary, 95.  
 Milk Row School, 16, 18, 20, 21, 47, 48, 50, 51, 59, 67, 70, 71, 72, 74, 75, 76, 77, 81, 83, 92, 93.  
 Milton, Mass., 9.  
 Mitchell's Geography, 98.  
 Morse's Geography and Atlas, 25.  
 Moulton's Point, 81.  
 Mt. Andrew Park, 32.  
 Mt. Vernon Reader, 98.  
 Muir, John, 1.  
 Mulliken, John W., 71.  
 Munro, Lewis B., 99.  
 Munroe, Edwin, 11, 73, 74.  
 Munroe, William, 11.  
 Murray's English Grammar, 25.  
 Murray's Grammar, 98.  
 Murray's Introduction to English Reader, 25.  
 My First School Book, 98.  
 National Forestry Congress, 36.  
 National Reader, 98.  
 National Spelling Book, Introduction to, 98.  
 National Spelling Book, 98.  
 Neck School, 51, 52, 70, 71, 75, 77, 78.  
 Newell, Ann E., 83.  
 New England Magazine, 7.  
 Newhall, A., 12.  
 New National Spelling Book, 98.  
 Odin, John, 11.  
 Old Cambridge, 66.  
 "Old Elm," 2.  
 "Old Five Mile Woods," 30.  
 Old Granary Burying Ground, 4, 5.  
 "Old Red Gate, The," 86.  
 Owen, John, 38.  
 Paddock Elias, 4.  
 Paddock, Major Adino, 4.  
 Paddock's Mall, 4.  
 Page, Jacob, 14.  
 Park Street, 57.  
 Park Street Church, 5.  
 Parker, Benjamin, 14, 15.  
 Parker and Fox's Grammar, 98.  
 Parker, G. A., 76.  
 Parker, John, 16.  
 Parker, L. M., 16.  
 Pearson, E., 15.  
 Permanent Funds of Trustees of Charlestown Schools, 72.  
 Perry, Sarah, 12, 16, 17.  
 Phillips Pasture, 4.  
 Phipps, J., 13.  
 Phipps, W. C., 13.  
 Phipps, William S., 18.  
 Pierce, —, 51, 52.  
 Pierce, A., 12.  
 Pierce, Charles, 20.  
 Pierce, Joel, 21, 74, 77, 79, 83.  
 Pine Hill, Medford, 39, 58.  
 "Pine Island Pond," 61.  
 Pitman Street, 60.  
 Pitts, Samuel, 46.  
 "Polly Swamp," 53, 60, 85.





- Pool, Lot, 16, 22.  
 Pope, Rev. Augustus R., 59.  
 Prescott Street, 81.  
 Preston Road, 56.  
 Primary Schools, 95.  
 Prospect Hill, 65, 73.  
 Prospect Hill District, 74, 92.  
 Prospect Hill Grammar School, 93, 97, 99.  
 Prospect Hill Park, 55.  
 Prospect Hill Primary, 95.  
 Prospect Hill School, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 83, 98.  
 Prospect Hill Schoolhouse, 55, 70.  
 Putnam, Betsey, 72, 81.  
 Putnam, Joanna S., 81.  
 Pythian Block, 55.  
 Quincy, Josiah, 7.  
 Quincy, Mass., 9.  
 Quincy Place, Boston, 4.  
 Rand, Benjamin, 13, 59, 62.  
 Rand, Caleb, 100.  
 Rand, Henry C., 53.  
 Rand, Thomas, 11, 58, 61.  
 Rand, Thomas, Jr., 10.  
 Rand, Widow, 58.  
 Rand, William, 11.  
 Ravine Woods, 34.  
 Raymond, Francis H., 53.  
 Raymond, Martha L., 53.  
 Rea, Mrs. Hannah, 17, 72.  
 Read, Edwin F., 53.  
 Reasons in Favor of a Separation of  
   Somerville from Charlestown, 40-45.  
 Redwoods, 8.  
 Reynolds, Charlotte, 96, 99.  
 Richardson, A., 12.  
 Robinson's Bookkeeping, 98.  
 Robinson's Elements, 25.  
 Robinson, Enoch, 60.  
 Robinson, Ezra, 60.  
 Robinson, Frederick, 49.  
 Rogers, Timothy P., 72.  
 Roosevelt, President, 8.  
 "Round House," 60.  
 Rules and Regulations of Charlestown  
   Free Schools, 24-25.  
 Rules and Regulations for the Govern-  
   ment of the Charlestown Free Schools,  
   68, 69.  
 Runey Estate, 90.  
 Runey, John, 48, 50, 67, 74.  
 Runey, John, Jr., 11.  
 "Russell District," 50, 51, 67, 69, 71, 73,  
   78, 82, 83, 93, 96, 99.  
 Russell, James, 13, 16.  
 Russell, Kezia, 69, 72.  
 Russell, Levi, 74, 76, 96, 99.  
 Russell, Phila, 70.  
 Russell, Philemon, 63.  
 Russell, Philemon R., 13, 77.  
 Russell, Philemon R., Jr., 16, 19, 21, 46,  
   48, 83, 93, 99.  
 Russell School, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 92,  
   97, 98.  
 Russell, William A., 14.  
 Salem, Mass., 99.  
 Sanborn, David A., 11.  
 Sanborn, E. W., 51.  
 Sanborn's Grocery Store, 55.  
 Sanborn, Jeremiah, 50.  
 Sanborn, John, 49, 92, 96.  
 Sanborn, John A., 99.  
 Sanborn, Robert, 11.  
 Sargent, Aaron, 22, 53, 90.  
 Sargent Avenue, 90.  
 Sargent, Professor, 5.  
 Sargent, T., 13.  
 Saunderson, S., 12.  
 Sawyer, Charlotte A., 81.  
 Sawyer, Ellen M., 53.  
 Sawyer, F., 13.  
 Sawyer, S., 15.  
 Sawyer, Susan L., 72, 81.  
 Sawyer, William, Jr., 48.  
 Schoolbooks in 1828, 25.  
 School Curriculum, 68, 69.  
 School Districts Formed, 93.  
 School Districts Re-numbered, 47.  
 School Holidays, 1828, 26.  
 School Holidays, 1830-31, 50.  
 School Holidays, 1832-33, 68.  
 School Regulations, 1841, 98.  
 School Street, 56, 57, 88.  
 Scollay Square, Boston, 2.  
 Sewell, Samuel L., 32.  
 Shapley, H., 12.  
 Shawmut, 2.  
 Shed, Samuel, 12.  
 Sherman, John N., 51, 52.  
 Sherman, I. N., 67, 69, 71.  
 Shrewsbury, Mass., 48.  
 Shute, James, 58.  
 Simpson Avenue, 63.  
 Simpson, Margaret A., 53.  
 Skilton Estate, 90.  
 Skilton, Lydia A., 72, 81, 99.  
 Skilton, Malvina B., 81.  
 Smellie's Natural Philosophy, 98.  
 Smith, E. E., 81.  
 Smith, Ebenezer, Jr., 50.  
 Smith, Juliet G., 53.  
 Soldiers' Monument, 2.  
 Some Old Trees, Number 1, 1-9.  
 Some Old Trees, Number 2, 53-64.  
 Some Old Trees, Number 3, 85-91.  
 Somerville Avenue, 53, 57, 58, 65.  
 Somerville Journal, 22.  
 Somerville Journal Souvenir, 55.  
 Sowden, J., 12.  
 Spaulding, A., 11.  
 Sprague, Ann D., 20.  
 Spring Street, 60.  
 Stanton, L., 14.  
 Stanton, L. W., 50.  
 Stearns, Maria A., 47.  
 Stearns, Maria H., 46.  
 Stephenson, Thomas, 52.  
 Stetson, Lebbeus, 59.  
 Stetson, Susan S., 53.  
 Stevens, John, 49.  
 Stevens, L., 15.  
 Stevens, Rachel T., 75, 76.  
 Stickney, Ira, 21.  
 Storer Estate, 4.  
 Story Street, Cambridge, 6.  
 Stone, A., 12.  
 Stone Elm, 9.





- Stone, Daniel, 11.  
 Stone, Sara A., 1, 53, 85.  
 Stone, Simon, 3.  
 Sudbury Street, Boston, 4.  
 Sullivan's Political Class Book, 98.  
 Summer Street, 57, 59.  
 Summer Street, Boston, 2.  
 Summit Avenue, 57.  
 Swan, James, 50, 52, 70, 71.  
 Swan, John, 11.  
 Swan, Reuben, 51, 52.  
 Swan, Reuben, Jr., 70, 71.  
 Swan, Robert, 83.  
 Swan, Samuel, 82.  
 Swan (Samuel?), 72.  
 Swan, Stephen A., 93.  
 Swan, William D., 70, 71, 72, 78, 82, 83.  
 Sweetser, John, 50.  
 Sweetser, Paul H., 82, 94.  
 Swift, Benjamin, 23.  
 Sycamore Street, 60, 87.  
 Sylvester, Caroline M., 92, 96, 94.  
 Symmes, Mary B., 82.  
 Tandy, A. S., 15.  
 Tappan, L., 13.  
 Taylor, J., 12.  
 Teel, Jonathan, 14.  
 Teel, Jonathan, Jr., 14.  
 Teel, S. P., 13.  
 Teel, T., 14.  
 Temple, Sir Robert, 89.  
 Temple Street, 89, 90.  
 "Ten Hills Farm," 89.  
 Tenney, R. G., 46, 47, 48, 82.  
 "Testament, The New," 25, 98.  
 Thayer, Zeba, 12.  
 Thompson, Dr. A. R., 94.  
 Thompson, Benjamin, 48.  
 Thomson, C., 14.  
 Thompson, Charles, 48, 49, 71, 74, 75.  
 Thompson, Mrs. Mary, 17.  
 Thorning, I., 14.  
 Thurston, A., 15.  
 Thurston Street, 88.  
 Tidd, Charles, 19.  
 Titus, Rev. Anson, 53.  
 Titus, D., 15.  
 Torry, —, 13.  
 Town Hill, 21, 82.  
 Town Hill School, 51, 70, 71, 73.  
 Town House, 78.  
 Track, Benjamin, 82.  
 Training Field, 22, 23, 81, 82.  
 Training Field School, 51, 70, 71.  
 Tube Works, 57.  
 Tufts, Abby, 97.  
 Tufts, Amos, 67.  
 Tufts, Asa, 10.  
 Tufts, Asa, 2nd, 11.  
 Tufts, Benjamin, 12.  
 Tufts, Bernard, 10.  
 Tufts, Bowan A., 16, 21.  
 Tufts, Charles, 11.  
 Tufts College, 85.  
 Tufts, Daniel, 11.  
 Tufts Homestead, 89.  
 Tufts House, 87, 88.  
 Tufts, Isaac, 10.  
 Tufts, Joel, 11.  
 Tufts, John, 10, 60, 61, 70, 73, 87.  
 Tufts, John, Jr., 12.  
 Tufts, Joseph, 89.  
 Tufts, Joseph F., 48, 49.  
 Tufts, Joseph T., 71.  
 Tufts, M. Alice, 53.  
 Tufts, Martha, 53.  
 Tufts, Nathan, 59.  
 Tufts, Nathan, 2nd, 11.  
 Tufts, Oliver, 11.  
 Tufts, Samuel, 10, 55.  
 Tufts, Timothy, 13, 53, 62.  
 Turner, Captain Larkin, 49.  
 Tweed, Benjamin F., 78, 82, 83.  
 Twombly, James, 92.  
 Twycross, A. G., 71.  
 Tyler, Columbus, 59.  
 Tyler, George W., 49.  
 Tyler, Mrs. Jonas, 86.  
 Underwood, James, 49, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 92, 94.  
 Unitarian Parsonage Grounds, 58.  
 Universalist Meeting House, 81.  
 Upper Winter Hill Primary, 95.  
 Upper Winter Hill School, 92.  
 Ursuline Community, The, Mt. Benedict, Charlestown, 24.  
 Vacations, 1840-41, 94.  
 Valentine, Elliot, 67.  
 Valentine, J. W., M. D., 49, 73, 74.  
 Varnum, N. J., 15.  
 Vinal Avenue, 57.  
 Vinal, Anna P., 53.  
 Vinal, Louise A., 53, 55.  
 Vinal, Quincy A., 90, 91.  
 Vinal, Robert, 11.  
 Vinal, Robert A., 91.  
 Vinson, Cornelius M., 93, 96, 97.  
 Wait, Charles, 74.  
 Wait, David, 12.  
 Walker, Cornelius, 17, 18, 19, 20.  
 Walker, Rev. James, 23, 48.  
 Walker, Mary, 17, 72, 82.  
 Walker, Moses W., 50, 51, 52, 67.  
 Walker's Dictionary, 25.  
 Walker Street, 93.  
 Wallis, Andrew, 19.  
 Walnut Hill School, 61.  
 Walnut Street, 53, 55, 90.  
 Walsh, W., 15.  
 Ward, A., 13.  
 Ward, Eliza D., 46.  
 Ward, J., 12.  
 Warren District, 93.  
 Warren, George W., Esq., 49, 73, 76, 92, 94.  
 Warrar School, 99.  
 Warren School Dedication, Programme, 94.  
 Warren Street, 81.  
 Warren, Susan Ann, 20.  
 Warren, Susan R., 21.  
 Washington Elm, 1, 5, 6.  
 Washington, George, 6.  
 Washington School, Cambridge, 6.  
 Washington Street, 54.  
 Washington Street, Boston, 4, 5.  
 Washington Street, Watertown, 9.  
 Watson, S., 13.





- Watertown, Mass., 3.  
 Waverley Elm, 8.  
 Waverley Oaks, 1, 8.  
 Wayne, Charlotte, 16, 17.  
 Wayne, Eliza, 16, 17.  
 Weld, Theodore D., 22.  
 West Cambridge, 78, 79, 100.  
 "West Cambridge Road School," 48.  
 West Medford, Mass., 9.  
 Wheeler, A., 15.  
 Wheldon, W. W., Esq., 94.  
 Whipple, Ann E., 18, 19, 20, 21, 72, 73.  
 Whipple, Ann P., 75.  
 Whipple, Benjamin, 18, 19, 20.  
 Whitcomb, I. A., 88.  
 White, Emeline G., 72.  
 Whitmore, William, 11.  
 Whitney, F., 15.  
 Whittemore, Clara D., 76, 78, 83, 92, 96.  
 Whittemore, Manda (Miranda), 46, 47, 49, 51, 67.  
 Whittemore Elm, 7.  
 Whittemore, Samuel, 7.  
 Whittier, John G., 32.  
 Whittredge, A. W., 72.  
 Whittredge, Elizabeth P., 79, 83, 92, 96, 99.  
 Wilcolm, W., 15.  
 Wiley, Phebe W., 49.  
 Wiley, W. S., 74.  
 Wilkins' Astronomy, 98.  
 Willard, Paul, Esq., 48, 49, 70, 71.  
 Willow Avenue, 62.  
 Winter Hill, 65, 74, 85, 86, 87, 96, 97.  
 Winter Hill District, 78, 92.  
 Winter Hill Road, 21, 77.  
 Winter Hill School, 16, 18, 19, 20, 47, 48, 50, 51, 52, 67, 69, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 81, 83, 92.  
 Winthrop School, 81, 82, 94, 99.  
 Woburn, Mass., 51, 78, 79.  
 "Woburn Road School," 48.  
 Woodbury, Augusta F., 86.  
 Woodbury, William, 87.  
 Woodman, Edith A., 53.  
 Woods, John M., 60.  
 Worcester's Geography, 98.  
 Worcester, George P., 76.  
 Worcester's History, 98.  
 Worcester's Second and Third Books of Reading, 98.  
 Worcester's Third Book, 98.  
 Wright, C., 14.  
 Wright, Elzur, 29-39.  
 Wright, Ellen M., 29.  
 Wyman, 22.  
 Wyman, Edward, 72.  
 Wyman, Lucy, 17.  
 Wyman, Luke, 12, 46, 47, 48.  
 Wyman, Miss, 73.  
 Wyman, N., 14.  
 Wyman, William, 14.  
 Young Ladies' Class Book, 98.  
 Young Reader, The, 98.





# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905 - 1906-1907

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	James F. Whitney
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Treasurer . . . . .	Seth Mason
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. William B. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. Ella P. Hurd
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	Alfred M. Cutler

## Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot

Miss Anna P. Vinal

L. Roger Wentworth

## Committees for Year 1906-7

### Publications

Sam Walter Foss, 249 Highland Ave. Sara A. Stone, 19 Central St.  
Frank M. Hawes, 257 School St. Samuel C. Earle, 7 Electric Ave.

### Military Records

Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.  
John H. Dusseault, 42 Sargent Ave. Miss Mary A. Haley, 117 Summer St.

### Hospitality

William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury, 17 Dartmouth St.  
Mrs. William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. Mrs. H. M. Heald, 438 Broadway  
Mrs. F. D. Lapham, 3 Hathorn St.

### Necrology

Professor D. L. Maulsby, 80 Curtis St. Miss E. A. Waters, 132 Perkins St.  
Rev. Francis A. Gray, 19 Dartmouth St.

### Historic Sites

Joseph O. Hayden, 174 Summer St. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.  
Aaron Sargent, 290 Broadway

### Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Wakefield Miss Florence E. Carr, 89 Oxford St.  
Seth Mason, 32 Madison St. William E. Brigham, 4 Hillside Ave.  
Mrs. J. F. Ayer, Wakefield

### Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, 234 Medford St. Miss Edith B. Hayes, 52 Dartmouth St.  
Mrs. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.

### Photographs

Benj. F. Freeman, 2 Mt. Vernon St. Albert L. Haskell, 422 Somerville Ave.  
James F. Whitney, 40 Dartmouth St. Mrs. C. L. Maynard, 14 Greenville St.

### Press and Clippings

Miss Lucy M. Stone, 15 Central St. Miss Annie S. Gage, 32 Marshall St.  
Miss Anna P. Vinal, 9 Aldersey St. Mrs. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.  
Mrs. Ella P. Hurd, 55 Columbus Ave. Miss Mary E. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.











# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOLUME VI.

---

April, 1907

TO

January, 1908

---

Published by  
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Somerville, Mass.





## CORRECTIONS IN VOL. VI.

---

No. 1, page 7, line 13, for Emily, read Emeline.

No. 1, page 7, line 20, for Jane, read Martha.

No. 1, page 8, line 16, Mrs. W. French Smith.

No. 1, page 8, lines 26 and 35, Adaline L.

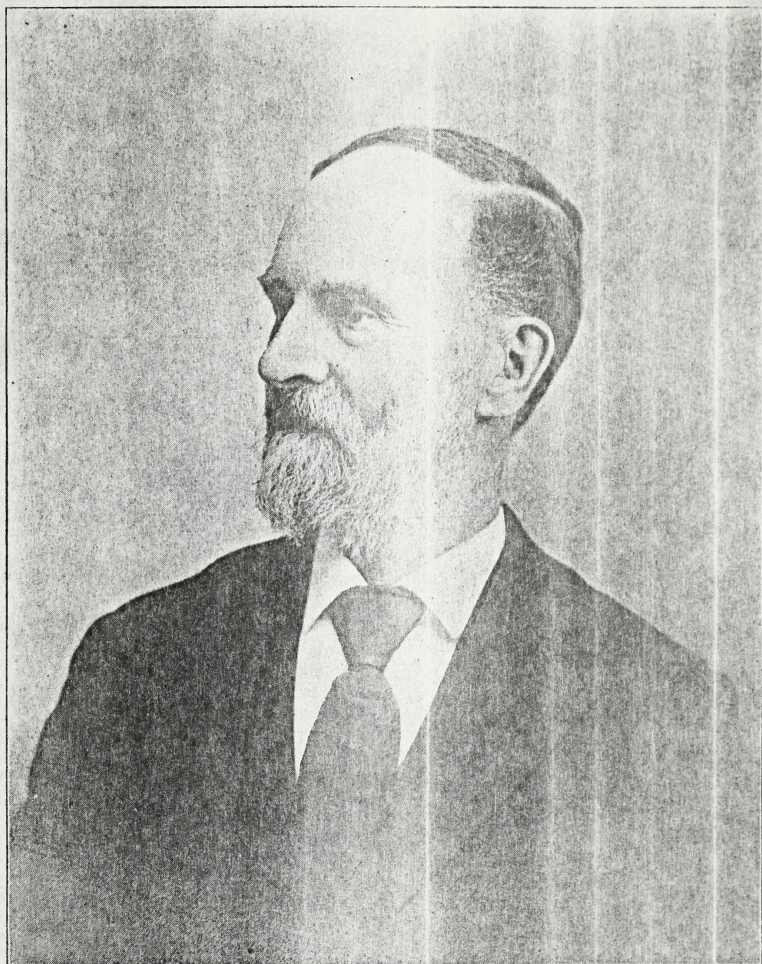
No. 1, page 9, line 3, for Peter, read Philip.

No. 1, page 12, line 35, Thomas Gooding.

No. 1, page 15, line 20, 1849.







LUTHER BATCHELDER PILLSBURY







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1907

Vol. VI

No. 1







## CONTENTS

	PAGE
LUTHER B. PILLSBURY UNION SQUARE AND ITS NEIGHBORHOOD ABOUT THE YEAR 1846	5
COMPANY E, 39TH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, IN THE CIVIL WAR	17
<i>Charles D. Eliot</i>	
<i>From Diary of John H. Cassant</i>	

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and  
Curator Alfred Morton Cutler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all  
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAVES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. VI.

APRIL, 1907

No. 1

---

## LUTHER B. PILLSBURY.

**Vice-President of the Somerville Historical Society.—A Prominent Citizen of Somerville.—Died March 8, 1905.**

Luther Batchelder Pillsbury was born in Bridgewater, N. H., November 23, 1832, and was the son of Caleb and Nancy (Nelson) Pillsbury. He was of the sixth generation in descent from William and Dorothy Pillsbury, who were married in Dorchester, Mass., in 1641, and settled in Newburyport, where a descendant erected the original Pillsbury mansion\* in 1700.

Mr. Pillsbury's great-grandfather, Caleb Pillsbury, was one of the most prominent citizens of the town of Amesbury, Mass. He was repeatedly chosen selectman, was representative to the General Court and to the Provincial Congress. He was a captain of militia under the royal authority, and his commission under the king's name, signed by Governor Hutchinson, is carefully preserved by a descendant. He was captain of the little company of fifteen minutemen who marched from Amesbury to Cambridge on the Lexington alarm. Of the members of the company, four were named Pillsbury, three being his own sons. All of his five sons were at different times in the Continental army.

His son Caleb, grandfather of Luther B. Pillsbury, was born in Amesbury. He engaged in agriculture, and occupied at different times farms in Loudon and Bridgewater, N. H. He married Judith Sargent, and both lived to an advanced age. The former's last days were spent at Danville, Vt. The couple were the parents of thirteen children, all of whom grew to maturity.

---

\*Burned about ten years ago.





Their son, Caleb Pillsbury, father of the subject of this sketch, was born and reared in Loudon, N. H., and acquired a good education. In early life he taught school, but eventually turned his attention to farming. He removed to Bridgewater, N. H., where he resided until his death, which occurred when he was eighty-seven years of age. He was a man of practical ability and sound judgment, and served as selectman and town clerk in Bridgewater for a period of ten years. His wife, Nancy (Nelson) Pillsbury, was a native of Ipswich, Mass., and a daughter of William Nelson. She was the mother of twelve children (of whom Luther B. was the youngest), and died at the age of fifty-three, when Luther B. was sixteen years of age.

Luther worked on the farm in early life, and by his own efforts was fitted for college at the New Hampton Institute. He taught while yet a student, beginning his first school before his sixteenth birthday, and also was engaged in teaching winters while pursuing his college course at Dartmouth, from which he graduated in 1859. Among the towns he taught in during this period are Campton, N. H., North Sandwich, Mass., South Yarmouth, Mass., Deering, N. H., and Cedarville (Sandwich), Mass. After graduating, he continued to teach for a period of twenty years in grammar and high school positions in Massachusetts. He taught in Canton and in the Reading, Hopkinton, and Bridgewater high schools. For one year he was principal of the Prescott grammar school, Somerville, resigning to accept a sub-master's position in the Charlestown high school, which he held several years. He also held a similar position in the Somerville high school.

Over his pupils he exercised a great influence. A teacher who had an intimate acquaintance with his methods asserted that "he never saw a man who could keep such good order with so little apparent effort as he."

Mr. Pillsbury removed to Somerville from Bridgewater, Mass., in 1872, and for many years resided at 45 Sargent avenue, formerly Mills street, where he reared his family. In 1883 he turned his attention to the real estate business, in which he continued until his death.





In politics he was a Republican, and was elected to the Somerville common council in 1877, acting as president of that body in 1878.

In 1863 he was married to Miss Mary A. Leathe, daughter of Edwin B. Leathe, a shoe manufacturer of Reading, who was a teacher before her marriage. Mrs. Pillsbury was connected by ties of blood with the Weston family of Reading and Brooks family of Medford. She possessed considerable literary ability, and contributed poems to the *Youth's Companion*, the *Congregationalist*, and other publications. She was the author of the book of poems, "Old Mill and Other Poems." She died in Somerville in 1888. Of her four children, three survive. They are Edwin Brooks Pillsbury, publisher of the *Grocers' Magazine*, now residing in Medford; Dr. Ernest D. Pillsbury, a practicing physician at 8 Curtis street, West Somerville; and Miss May F. Pillsbury, a member of the Somerville Journal staff. The youngest son, Harry Nelson Pillsbury, the noted chess player, died in Philadelphia June 17, 1906.

Mr. Pillsbury married February 6, 1895, Mrs. Mary A. Libby, of Somerville, who survives him, and is an active member of the Somerville Historical Society.

He was vice-president of the Somerville Board of Trade, and active in all the meetings of the organization. He was also vice-president of the Somerville Historical Society, and president of the Somerville Fire Underwriters. He was prominent in the Somerville Sons and Daughters of New Hampshire; was a member of the Massachusetts society of the Sons of the American Revolution; past dictator of Winter Hill lodge, Knights of Honor; a contributing member of Willard C. Kinsley post, 139, G. A. R.; a member of the Somerville Y. M. C. A. and the Broadway Congregational church; and also of the Masonic fraternity, in which in his younger days he was very active.

Possessed of a fund of general information, which was always at the disposal of those who sought his counsel, and having a cheerful, even temperament, he was a valuable person in any community. Although not a lawyer, he had an extensive legal





knowledge, and was frequently consulted by those in need of advice. In business transactions he had an enviable record for honesty and fair dealing. His main idea in life was to set a good example to others and to leave an honorable name behind him.

He was unusually interested in public affairs. In whatever pertained to the welfare of the city he took a prominent part, and was always ready to give an opinion on any important question. He was a frequent contributor to the Somerville Journal and other publications, writing with a clear and vigorous style.

Having a good memory, he was able to repeat many passages from the best literature. He was literary in his tastes, and was particularly fond of his library.

The funeral services were held on Saturday, March 11, 1905, at 1 p. m. from his home, 17 Dartmouth street. The city flags were placed at half-mast, and from 12 to 2 o'clock the stores on Broadway in the vicinity of his office were closed. The services were conducted by Rev. Horace H. Leavitt, pastor of the Broadway Congregational church, of which Mr. Pillsbury was a member for many years; Rev. Charles L. Noyes, pastor of the Winter Hill Congregational church, a long-time friend; and Rev. Francis Gray, pastor of the Winter Hill Universalist church, his next neighbor.

The sentiments of affection and esteem which were feelingly expressed at the funeral service and were spread upon the records of the various organizations to which Mr. Pillsbury belonged may be summed up in the following, taken from an editorial in the Somerville Journal:—

"A man of wide experience and learning, of a kindly and generous nature, and interested in every phase of public development, he was an exceedingly valuable man in the community. In the Winter Hill section of this city no man could be more sorely missed."





## UNION SQUARE AND ITS NEIGHBORHOOD ABOUT THE YEAR 1846.

By Charles D. Elliot.

I first knew Union square in 1846, at which time it was called "Sand Pit square," a name said to have been given it, facetiously or otherwise, by some of the gentlefolk of Winter Hill. The name, though not euphonious; was appropriate, as its western side bordered sand lands that for years supplied the neighboring brick yards, as well as cities, with the best of silica. In shape it was not a square, for it was wide at its easterly and westerly ends, and narrow at its centre, so that, considering that for years sand was passing through it, it might with propriety have been christened the "Hour Glass." Later on a flagstaff was erected in it, and from that time till the Civil War it was known as "Liberty Pole square." When the war began it became a recruiting centre and took its present name of "Union square."

In confining my recollections to about the year 1846, I am obliged to leave out many prominent people who came later, and who contributed much to the good name of this neighborhood and of the town, among whom were Major Caleb Page, father of Health Officer Page; Thomas F. Norris, editor of the Olive Branch; Colonel Rolin W. Keyes, member of the Legislature; Amory and Francis Houghton, who built the Glass house; Charles S. Lincoln, Esq., who also represented us in the Legislature; John S. Ware; "Father Baker," one of the founders of the First Methodist church; James S. and Isaiah W. Tuttle, who built the first high school, now our city hall; Dr. Charles I. Putnam; Dr. Weston, our earliest, or one of our earliest, postmasters; D. A. and S. H. Marrett, prominent storekeepers; and many others.

Our family moved from Malden to Somerville in 1846 to a residence and store then facing on Union square, and owned by Jeremiah Jordan, a professional musician, I think connected with Ditson's music store. A man named Gossom kept store in this





building when we moved to it; the building was afterwards owned by George A. and Albert L. Sanborn, who carried on the grocery business in it, and who christened it the "Oasis." The Oasis originally stood quite out to the southerly line of Union square, and about one hundred and twenty feet east of Webster avenue; it had a piazza in front, which was the rendezvous of the idlers of that part of the village. At the easterly corner of this piazza, overshadowed by a lofty and picturesque elm, stood one of the town pumps, with its well of delicious water. Elm and pump are gone, except in recollection, and the Oasis itself has crept back and sat down in the rear of its former lot, and given place to a more juvenile store in front, yet I ween the old well still reposes there underground.

We came to Somerville about four years after it was set off from Charlestown, my father's attention having been called to the town by an advertisement in the Boston papers, put in by Sanford Adams, pump maker, who extolled the opportunities here for artisans and business men.

In 1846, besides Jordan's house, I think there were only two others fronting on the square; one, Mrs. Mary B. Homer's, was just west of Jordan's, and like his was a dwelling with a store in front, kept by Mrs. Homer; her children were Jacob, George W., Annie, and Mary. Some of her descendants I think still live in Somerville. The other house on the square was, I believe, owned by the Stone estate, and then, or later, occupied by John C. Giles. I think it stood on the site of the old Revolutionary hostelry known as "Piper's Tavern," and it may have been the old tavern building itself. Mr. Giles first built on the westerly side of Prospect street, north of the Fitchburg railroad, and then on Milk street (now Somerville avenue), near Prospect street; from there he moved to Union square. Two of his children were well-known Somerville citizens, Mrs. Eunice (Giles) Gilmore, prominent in Heptorean and other societies, and J. Frank Giles, music printer, and a soldier of the Civil war, who has honored Somerville with his commendatory army record.

In front of Mr. Giles' house stood another public pump;





the two public pumps, Jordan's and Giles', stared pleasantly at each other across the square, and with outstretched hands vied with one another in extending their aqueous hospitality to thirsty travelers, without money and without price. On the easterly side of Bow street, near the square, was the mansion of Deacon Robert Vinal, a pleasant home, with grape arbors, peach, apple, and pear orchards, flower gardens and conservatories. I shall never forget one tree of whose fruit I was especially fond, a blue pearmain apple. Mr. Vinal had a fine barn and stable in the rear of his house; these were afterwards destroyed by incendiary fire. Deacon Vinal's children were Robert A., Quincy A., John W., Edward E., Alfred E., Margaret, afterwards wife of General William L. Burt, postmaster of Boston, Emily, afterwards Mrs. Wilder, Elizabeth, Lydia, Martha, and Lucy. Deacon Vinal was one of the largest property holders in the town; I recollect him as a pleasant gentleman of the old school; his and Mrs. Vinal's pleasant greeting to me on my return from the army will always be an agreeable memory.

Next north of Deacon Vinal's, on Bow street, came the estate of Robert Sanborn, the father of Jane, wife of Richard Sturtevant, Esq. She lived on part of the old estate until her death a few years since. Mr. Sanborn's sons, George A. and Albert L., have already been mentioned. Mr. Sanborn was a kindly man, known to every one as "Uncle Robert"; his farm, like all the others on the north sides of Washington and Bow streets, extended far up the hill, and lay between Deacon Vinal's and Walnut street, then a lane. His house was, I think, moved to and still stands on Clark street.

Between Walnut street and School street, on Bow, the only other house I remember was that of Henry Adams, "Squire Adams," as we all called him. His house was an old Revolutionary one, at which the British are said to have stopped for water on their way to Concord; it was torn down to make way for the Methodist church.

Starting again on the northwest side of Bow street, near Sand Pit square, was the Hawkins block of four tenements, the





occupants of which, with the exception of Mr. Smith, a broom manufacturer, and Captain Donnell, a ship master, I do not recall; and these may have lived in the block later than 1846. In later years this block was moved around the corner on to Somerville avenue, raised, and a new story built under it, and is still in existence. Next to this block on Bow street was the estate of David Bolles; then came the house of Levi Orcutt, afterwards owned by Thomas Goodhue; then that of A. W. Russell; and still on the same side of Bow street the house and shop of Leonard Arnold, sashmaker, a skilled artisan, genial man, and a member of the Cincinnati. This residence still remains, and his son, J. Frank Arnold, is still a resident of Somerville. Next to Mr. Arnold's, at the corner of Bow and Milk streets, where Drouet's block now is, was the home of Theophilus Griffin. Mr. Griffin was an owner of sand and brick teams, and one of the most prominent men in that line of business. Mrs. Dr. J. French Smith was his daughter.

Returning again to Union square, the estate east of Deacon Vinal's was that of Messrs. Jonathan and Nathaniel T. Stone. Stone avenue now runs through the old Stone estate, and Stone block is on the front of the old Stone property. F. W. Stone, treasurer of the Somerville savings bank, and the Misses Sara and Lucy Stone, Mrs. Jonathan Stone, and Mrs. N. T. Stone, are the present representatives of the Stone families. East of the Stone estate was that of David A. Sanborn, brother of Robert Sanborn, already mentioned, and father of David A., Jr., Daniel A., and Adeline E. Sanborn, all deceased. David A., Jr., was a carpenter and builder, and was for some time captain or chief of our fire department, and also held various public offices for many years in the town and city; he married a daughter of John C. Magoun, Esq., of Winter Hill. Daniel A. Sanborn was a well-known and successful civil engineer, and founder of the Sanborn (Insurance) Map Company of New York. Miss Adeline E. was a teacher in our public schools, under whom the writer studied; the family is now represented here in Somerville by Miss Adeline L. Sanborn,





recently a teacher in our city schools, and by J. Walter Sanborn, Esq., one of our school committee. East of Mr. Sanborn's was the widow Peter Bonner estate, and east of that the home of William Bonner, which was moved back up the hill to make way for the Prospect Hill grammar school, built in 1848. The Peter Bonner property was later on divided between the heirs, viz., William Bonner, Mrs. Thomas Goodhue, and Mrs. Augustus Hitchings. William Bonner was at one time in the coal business on Park street, and was also station agent at the Fitchburg railroad Somerville station.

East of the Bonners' came the home estate of Joseph Clark, brick maker, who had yards south of the Fitchburg railroad; he was a man of business ability, and at one time a selectman. Of his children, Mrs. Oren S. Knapp\* and Samuel Adams Clark are still living, but his remaining children, Ambrose, Manly, Arthur, and Miss Mary A. Clark, are deceased. East of Clark's came the two old Revolutionary houses on the north side of Washington street, whose occupants I have forgotten, but in one of which a British soldier was shot April 19, 1775. East of these houses came the residence of John Dugan, Esq., now occupied by his son, George D. Haven. Still farther east across Medford street was the house of James Hill, Jr., a fine estate; his sons, Richard and Charles, were in the Civil war, James F., another son, lives in Boston, and a daughter, Harriet, is dead. On the east side of Alston street (then Three Pole lane) was the estate of Deacon Benjamin Randall, at one time town collector, and still further east that of Charles Tufts, founder of Tufts College. Mr. Tufts was an ardent Universalist, as was my father, and perhaps for that reason he became one of my father's best customers, often stopping to discuss the creed on his business calls. Mr. Tufts not only endowed the college, but donated land and money for the church on Cross street.

On the south side of Washington street, facing Union square, was the wheelwright shop of Horace Runey, and a little further east the residence of John B. Giles, marble cutter, who

---

Deceased, June 16, 1907, since the above was written.





came from Ogdensburg, N. Y. He was father of Miss Mary O. Giles, one of the first teachers of Somerville, and of Joseph J. Giles, the first boy born in Somerville after its incorporation, and a veteran of the Civil war. Miss Mary O. Giles married Isaac Barker, and moved to California. There were other children. In this Giles house lived for a time Dr. Stephen B. Sewall. On the southwest corner of Washington and Prospect streets was the ancient engine house, with its little belfry and bell, "Mystic No. 6," a "cast-off" from Charlestown. On the southeast corner of these streets, and opposite the Joseph Clark house already mentioned, lived another Joseph Clark, father of one of our oldest residents, Joseph H. Clark, of Spring Hill. Mr. Clark's widow married Leonard Arnold, of whom I have already spoken. In this Clark house Mrs. Mary B. Homer, already mentioned, first opened her store.

Next east, on the southerly side of Washington street, came the home of Clark Bennett, Esq., brickmaker, and later on town treasurer, and alderman of the city. Mr. Bennett had a large family, most of whom have distinguished themselves in their various social and business relations. Lieutenant-Colonel Edwin Clark Bennett and his brother, Irving M. Bennett, were both valiant soldiers in the Civil war, each being severely wounded in battle; George Eldon; Herbert W., a prominent musician, who died in California; Dana and Dexter, the well-known insurance men, Dana having for many years been alderman, and later chairman of the school committee and mayoralty nominee; Josiah, who as cashier of the Market bank, and president of the Mercantile Trust Company, Cambridge Electric Light Company, Parry Brick Company, and Fresh Pond Ice Company, has shown great business ability; Mrs. Gustina Hall; Mrs. Hattie E. Bean, recently nominated for Boston school committee; Miss Melvina Bennett, elocutionist; and two others. His was a typical old New England family. Mr. Bennett came here from Vermont about 1835. He was a strong abolitionist when abolition was not a passport to popularity; he was a friend of Wilson, Garrison, Phillips, and Sumner. At an anti-slavery meeting held





in the old engine house hall, Mr. Bennett was the only person present; he was chairman, secretary, speaker, audience, and all hands. The papers of the next day, however, reported the gathering as a very harmonious and enthusiastic one, and that strong anti-slavery resolutions were passed, without a dissenting voice.

East of Mr. Bennett's was the residence of Hiram Allen, rope and twine manufacturer, whose rope walk, run by tide power, was on the south side of Somerville avenue, east of Prospect street, on Miller's creek. Hiram Allen, Jr., the leader of Allen's band, still lives in the old home. Mr. Allen had two other children, Margaret and Lucy. Beyond Mr. Allen's was the "yellow block," still standing, occupied about this time by the family of Mr. Fellows, and previously by Clark Bennett. Further on was the residence of Ivers Hill, provision dealer; oil portraits of Mr. and Mrs. Hill were in the last exhibition of the Historical Society. East of Mr. Hill's was the residence of Charles Miller, clothing dealer in Boston. Mr. Miller had the honor of naming Somerville. Some of his descendants still reside in Somerville. He was the great-grandson of James Miller, the Somerville minuteman killed on Prospect Hill on April 19, 1775, by the British; to whose memory a tablet was erected on Washington street, bearing his last words: "I am too old to run." Beyond Mr. Miller's came the estate of Mrs. Underwood; her son, James Underwood, a cripple, I well remember as a schoolmate. His sister was the wife of Horace Runey, deceased. Near here also lived John Thorning, an estimable old gentleman, whom I well knew; he was a Universalist, and was the father of Mrs. Nancy (Thorning) Munroe, wife of Edwin Munroe, Jr.; she was a lady of great literary attainments, and a poet. Next came the residence of Andrew M. Kidder, music printer, who had previously resided on Mystic avenue, at the foot of Convent Hill; two of his sons, Arthur T. and Andrew M. Kidder, still reside in Somerville. On the west corner of Medford street and south side of Washington street, then or a few year later stood the law office of Francis Tufts, captain of our military company before the Civil war, and the first justice of a Somerville court; he is still





living in the house previously occupied by his father on the opposite corner of Washington and Medford streets. His father formerly owned the grain mills at Charlestown Neck, and the grain store near Warren bridge. Nathan Tufts was also father of Mrs. Booth, and of Nathan Tufts, Jr., who lived on Central street, and grandfather of Dr. E. C. Booth, and of Miss M. Alice Tufts and Albert C. Tufts, deceased; and was brother of Charles Tufts, founder of Tufts College.

Between Nathan Tufts' house and the Lowell railroad was the house of Samuel C. Bradshaw, Jr., still standing; he owned the adjacent large tract of land, bordering also on Joy street, which he divided into lots and built upon. Edward H. Bradshaw, who opened up and developed more recently the properties on Westwood road, is a grandson of S. C. Bradshaw.

On the south side of Washington street stood the "Milk Row" station of the Lowell railroad, the first, I think, in Somerville. About this time S. C. Bradshaw, Sr., owned a residence on Joy street, and Zebediah Kinsley one on Linwood street. Mr. Kinsley was the ancestor of Willard C. Kinsley, veteran from Somerville killed in the Civil war, and after whom the G. A. R. post is named, and of his brother, Colonel Frederick W. Kinsley, also veteran of the Civil war, also of Henry Kinsley and of Albert C. Kinsley. The Kinsleys were brickmakers, the younger members of the family being prominent scholars in our grammar and high schools; a daughter, Miss Joanna Kinsley, recently lived in Brighton.

On the west side of Boston street, near Washington, was a house owned by Benjamin F. Allen, who married Mrs. Booth, widow of Dr. Chauncey Booth, of McLean asylum, and mother of Dr. E. C. Booth, one of the trustees of our public library. When the Pope schoolhouse was built, this house was moved to another lot on Boston street, where it now stands. On the south side of Munroe street, which at one time was called Prospect street, stands a house formerly occupied by J. T. Trowbridge, the author, and another by Samuel H. Gooding; his son, Edmund H. Gooding, was a member of the First Massachusetts





cavalry in the Rebellion. Opposite these houses, on the north side of Munroe street, was the residence of Edward L. Stevens, Esq., now owned by Mr. Leighton, and another occupied by Frederick W. Hannaford, harness maker, whose son, Edward Francis, was the first Somerville soldier killed in the Rebellion; this house was afterwards owned by M. P. Elliott, latter. Near the top of the hill overlooking Union square stood an old double house, recently torn down, owned lately by the Randall heirs, and then occupied by a Mr. Willard, portrait painter; and further on, also on the south side of Munroe street, was the residence of Benjamin Sweetzer Munroe. His children were Mrs. Major Granville W. Daniels and George S. Munroe, Esq. Further north on the hill was a private school for Catholic boys, kept by G. W. Beck, and near by an old grist mill owned by Edwin Munroe, father of Benjamin S. and Edwin Munroe, Jr., already mentioned, and grandfather of the author, Elbridge S. Brooks, Esq., deceased, formerly vice-president of the Historical Society.

From Union square along the southerly side of Somerville avenue to the East Cambridge line I do not recall any dwellings. At the northeast corner of the avenue and Prospect street was the house of Benjamin F. Ricker, mason, father of Captain Melvin B. Ricker, of our fire department; east of this was the house built by John C. Giles, already spoken of, later owned by Samuel Thompson, flour inspector, a colored man, said to have been one of the best flour judges in Boston, a gentleman of dignified manner.

The blacksmith shop of Seward Dodge, the paint shop of J. Q. Twombly, and Artemas White's harness shop, all between Union square and Prospect street, on the south side of Somerville avenue, and the house of Abraham Welch, superintendent of town streets, were, I think, all built later than 1846. Mr. Dodge was councilman and later alderman of the city, and Mr. Twombly was prominent in the Universalist society, and a much-respected citizen. On Prospect street, north of the railroad, were the houses of David A. Sanborn, in one of which he afterwards lived; in another, a double house, the former residence





## 14 UNION SQUARE AND ITS NEIGHBORHOOD ABOUT 1846 [APRIL

of John C. Giles, lived, if I remember aright, the families of Nathaniel Blair and of Isaac Barker, brickmakers. On the east side of Prospect street, south of the railroad, about opposite the present Oak street, was the residence of Amos Hazeltine, also brickmaker; his was the only house on the east side of Prospect street.

Much of the territory south of the railroad and a small piece north of it were occupied by brick yards, Mr. Hazeltine's, Clark Bennett's, G. W. Wyatt's, Joseph Clark's, and others. There were two one-story cottages south of the railroad and adjoining it, between Webster avenue and Prospect street, owned by Patrick Egan, and still standing. On the south side of Washington street, just east of the railroad bridge, was the house of Sanford Adams, pump maker, and his shop was nearby, adjacent to the railroad, over which came his pump logs. His pumps and those of his successors, Messrs. Hamblen and Kingman, were reputed the best in New England.

The only other house on the south side of Washington street that I remember was near the corner of Beacon street, occupied or owned by Christopher Hawkins, a road master on the Fitchburg railroad. On the north side of Washington street, west of the bridge, stood the ancient "lean-to" house owned by Guy C. Hawkins. It was said, and also disputed, that this was an old Revolutionary house, and that it had been loop-holed for musketry. It was occupied by Alonzo Burbank, sand dealer, whose teams could be seen at all times of the day either at Sand Pit square or on their way to or returning from the numerous brick yards near, or in Cambridge or Charlestown. Mr. Burbank's son was William E. Burbank, recently deceased, for thirty years or more a member of the Somerville fire department, being its assistant engineer. A photograph of this old house, with its annex of wood sheds, so common sixty years or more ago, was presented by the writer to the Historical Society.

West of Burbank's were the houses of Mr. Swett, of Mr. Leland, carriage builder, and of Mr. Pettengill, all still standing, and perhaps one or two others. Mr. Swett was killed at the Somerville-avenue crossing of the Fitchburg railroad.





Along the west side of Beacon street, north of Washington (Kirkland street in Cambridge), lay Palfrey's and Norton's groves. These umbral parks were really in Cambridge; they were the resort of old and young in the summer time; they were owned by Hon. John G. Palfrey, author of the history of New England, and by Professor Charles Eliot Norton, a friend of Longfellow's. Mr. Norton is still living. From Union square west up Somerville avenue the nearest house was owned by Primus Hall, a colored man; it still stands. It has its corner cut off, which was done when that part of Somerville avenue was laid out about the year 1813, and again when the avenue was widened in 1874; previously it was reached by a court from Bow street. Further west, and back from the avenue in the field, was the home, surrounded with orchards and gardens, of Colonel Guy C. Hawkins. Mr. Hawkins' widow afterwards became Mrs. Mann. Her children were Mrs. Alice E. Lake, N. Carleton Hawkins, and Eben C. Mann, Jr.

West of and adjoining the Hawkins estate was the old cemetery, opened about 1804. In its easterly front corner stood the "Milk Row primary school," burned in 1859; it was the first school the writer attended in Somerville, and was taught by Miss Adeline E. Sanborn, of whom mention has already been made.

Between the cemetery and the bleachery the only other house was that of Samuel T. Frost, Esq., father of Mrs. Francis H. Raymond and of George Frost, both living on Spring Hill. Mr. Frost's house was formerly owned by his grandfather, Samuel Tufts, who is said to have spread the alarm of the British march on the night of April 18, 1775; this house was the headquarters of General Nathaniel Green during the siege of Boston. Some way beyond was the bleachery, with its surrounding colony, which deserves a separate paper.

On the northerly side of Somerville avenue, west of School street, was the estate of Jonathan Ireland, father of George W. Ireland, Esq., a large land holder here for many years; the only member of the family living is, I think, Mrs. Martha J. Gerry, of Jamaica Plain. Further west came the house of Osgood Dane





and of Osgood B. Dane, his son, back of which was the granite quarry. Yet westerly was the residence of Mr. Field, a relative of Mr. Ireland, and further yet on the easterly side of Central street the house owned then or a little later by the Stone estate. A picture of this house is owned by the Historical Society.. It has since been removed or torn down.

Between Union square and the west end of Bow street, on the north side of Somerville avenue, was the residence of Levi Orcutt, Esq., carpenter, whose family is now represented by Edward L. Orcutt, inventor of the electrical safety appliances for preventing railway collisions.

In 1847 my father was appointed station agent of the "Prospect-street station"—now Union square—of the Fitchburg railroad, which position he held for about sixteen years, or until nearly the end of 1862. Through my long residence in that section during my youth I have stored in memory recollections of people, scenes, and incidents of the vicinity of Union square, which I think are in the main correctly given herein.

I have endeavored to make mention of all persons and places, and if I have omitted any, it has been an omission due to forgetfulness.

In another paper I shall try to cover incidents, etc., which occurred at about the period indicated, and perhaps include persons whom I have herein forgotten.





## COMPANY E, 39TH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, IN THE CIVIL WAR.

[The following account is taken from the diary of John H. Dusseault. The diary will be followed closely in all its details, but for the sake of clearness, bare statements will be amplified in a way, it is hoped, to make this story of our fellow-townsmen a more valuable contribution to the history of a period in which he bore an important and honorable part.]

Company E, which will go down to history as the Somerville company, was recruited during July and August, 1862 on Prospect Hill. The town, through its agents, the selectmen, encouraged the enlistments, which went on rapidly under the direction of the three officers who received their commissions from the selectmen. These officers were Captain Fred R. Kinsley, First Lieutenant Joseph J. Giles, and Second Lieutenant Willard C. Kinsley. All three had completed their term of service in Captain (later Major) Brastow's company, which enlisted for three months, the first-mentioned having been second lieutenant, and the two others privates in said company. These men were Somerville boys, although the Kinsley brothers were not natives of the town.

As is well known, a camp was pitched on Prospect Hill, and a flagstaff erected, which stood until the hill was dug down, some fifteen years later. The company was filled quickly, and our historian was one of the first to enlist.

There was the usual round of duties, drilling, and keeping guard. The days passed quickly, and the boys fared sumptuously. For, in addition to the usual rations, they received bountiful contributions from the larders of the patriotic matrons of the town.

On August 12 the company was mustered into the United States service, and on that day the non-commissioned officers stepped from the ranks as their names were called: John H. Dusseault, first sergeant; Edward A. Hale, second sergeant;





Edwin Mills, third sergeant; Judson W. Oliver, fourth sergeant; Richard J. Hyde, fifth sergeant; and the usual number of corporals, viz., D. P. Bucknam, Elkanah Crosby, William M. Carr, Melvin C. Parkhurst, Charles E. Fitcham, George Van De Sande, William A. Baker, and Leslie Stevens.

The company remained at Prospect Hill until September 2 when they went to Boxford, and there joined the rest of the regiment (the Thirty-ninth Massachusetts), and came on the right of the line,—first place. Colonel Phineas Stearns Davis, of Cambridge, was in command, and September 6 the regiment left for Washington, D. C.

Amid the cheers of throngs of people, we departed from Boston in "first-class" cars, but before we reached our destination we were riding in cattle cars. This was due, of course, to the congested condition of transportation, as everything at that time was moving towards the seat of war. At Philadelphia the citizens gave the travelers a dinner, as they did to all the regiments which passed through their city. This dinner was at Cooper-Shop Eating House, a place which many Northern soldiers must remember.

We arrived in Washington September 8, and the next day went to Camp Chase at Arlington. About September 16 we marched, according to orders, towards Edward's Ferry, Md. The night of September 18 we reached Poolsville. Our course was along the upper Potomac, and the object of the expedition was to guard the river fords and stop the rebels, notably a body known as White's guerrillas, from making raids into Maryland. From Poolsville we marched five miles to Edward's Ferry, where we camped, without tents, for five weeks. The river was picketed as far as Conrad's Ferry, seven miles up stream. In October we marched back towards Washington, eight miles to Seneca, where we camped about a week, thence to Muddy Branch, where we remained until November 13. On the way back, at Offert's Cross Roads, death entered our ranks for the first time, and we lost Private Sumner P. Rollins, who had enlisted with his half-brother, Illiot Kenneston. While we were at this place, Second Lieutenant Kinsley was promoted to the





rank of first lieutenant, company H (from Dorchester). Sergeant-Major T. Cordis Clark, of Roxbury, was assigned to the vacancy in company E.

December 21 found us at Poolsville again, where we went into winter quarters. The night of our arrival was a very cold one, so cold that the water which spilled from our canteens would freeze on our clothing. This was a hard march, and many of the boys fell out by the way. Three hundred or four hundred of us were packed away in a small schoolhouse, "thick as sardines." The next morning some of the party got over into the town and visited the grocery stores there.

That winter we were quartered in large, circular tents, called Sibley tents, which were pitched each on the top of a low stockade, that made the wall of the tent. We never saw this kind of tent after that winter. The next year each soldier was supplied with a strip of canvas five and one-half feet long, which when set up was called a shelter tent.

Nothing of importance happened while we were at Poolsville. We spent the time drilling and doing picket duty, and finally, April 15, 1863, broke camp and marched for Washington in a heavy rain. The first night we camped in some woods; the next found us three miles from Georgetown, where we were quartered in some college buildings. On April 17 we went into quarters in Washington, at Martindale barracks, corner of Pennsylvania avenue and Twenty-third street. Here our regiment remained on provost guard duty until July 9. Once in June we were ordered out at night, with one hundred rounds of cartridges, to Chain Bridge, as a rebel raid was expected there. Our company was the advance guard of the regiment. At noon the next day we were marched back to the capital.

July 9. The Thirty-fourth and Thirty-ninth Massachusetts regiments took train at 10 a. m. for Harper's Ferry, sixty miles away. This, it will be remembered, was immediately after the battle of Gettysburg. No change had taken place in our company, except that Lieutenant J. J. Giles was left in Washington on detached duty at the provost-marshal's office.





I remember that we reached our destination one night about dark, and were marched off to Maryland Heights, two miles or more, and over an exceedingly rough road. Here we were brigaded with the Eighth, Forty-sixth, and Fifty-first Massachusetts militiamen; all serving for nine months, and their term of service was nearly ended. We were now a part of the Army of the Potomac.

Sunday, July 12. We left Maryland Heights at 10 a. m. to report to General Mead, who was on his way from Gettysburg, and was now following up the Confederate army, which was still on the Maryland side, but farther up the river. We marched all night, and halted at six in the morning for breakfast. At 3 p. m. we joined the army at Funkstown, near Hagarstown, Md., having made thirty miles in twenty-nine hours. Much of the march had been over a very rough road. To be explicit, ours was the Fourth brigade, Second division, First army corps, and under General John Newton. We were an extra brigade.

July 13. We skirmished all day.

July 14. Though being ordered to move early, we did not get under way until 2 p. m. We passed over the rebels' works, now deserted, and after a distance of seven miles, halted at Williamsport. Here our Somerville company was detailed as guard at General Newton's headquarters.

July 15. We marched at 6 a. m. across Antietam Bridge, passed through Keedersville, and halted at Ruersville for the night. This was a hard day; from twenty-six to twenty-eight miles had been covered, under a boiling sun, and there were many cases of sunstroke.

July 16. At 6 a. m. we set out for Berlin's Station, close to the Potomac, and ten miles away. Here we remained until July 18, when we crossed the river into Virginia. That night, after a march of twelve miles, we were at Waterville. This seemed to be a Quaker settlement. The next day we moved on ten miles to Hamilton.

July 20. Up at 2 a. m. Moved at 5 o'clock; crossed many small streams and forded Goose Creek, which was about one





hundred yards wide, and in some places four feet deep. We marched about twenty-five miles, and at 5.30 halted at Middleburg.

July 22. Moved at 7 p. m., and marched all night; halted at 3 a. m. in White Plain. Here we slept four hours, and at 7 a. m. —July 23—pushed on to Warrington, a distance of fifteen miles, and reached there that afternoon. For the first time we encamped in line of battle, as the enemy were not more than three or four miles away. Both armies, it must be remembered, were having a grand race for the Rappahannock river. At Warrington the nine-months' men above referred to left us, as their time was out, and we were put in another brigade, with the Thirteenth Massachusetts, Sixteenth Maine, Ninety-fourth New York, and One Hundred and Seventh Pennsylvania.

July 25. We moved early, and went fourteen miles that morning—four miles of it was out of our way—and six miles more that afternoon and evening. It rained hard all the way, and at 1 o'clock in the morning, July 26, we reached Bealton station. Here we lay down to sleep, with clothes wet through and our shoes in a wretched condition. At 10 a. m. we pushed on for Rappahannock station, only four miles away, through fields, etc., —a very rough route. The march consumed six hours. Here our brigade, with Buford's cavalry, picketed one bank of the river, and the Confederates the other.

We remained in this position until August 1, when we were ordered across the river, where we worked all that night building breastworks. The enemy did not attack us. August 4, while lying in our works, we witnessed part of a cavalry fight in which our side held their ground.

August 5. All quiet. To-day we were paid off to July 1.

August 8. Our brigade re-crossed the river, as a change had been made in the lines, and we remained at Rappahannock station more than a month. There was not much doing all this time, but preparations were going on for a general advance. At 6 a. m. on September 16, we crossed the river on pontoons to a point near Culpeper, C. H., twelve miles, where we could hear cannonading ahead of us every day.





September 24. We marched eight miles, and at 4 p. m. halted at Raccoon Ford, on the Rappadan. Here we relieved the Twelfth army corps. Two miles farther on, September 27, we went into quarters at Camp Nordquest. We were now employed in picketing the Rappadan.

October 2. The whole division marched out one mile, in the rain, and forming three sides of a hollow square, saw a deserter from the Ninetieth Pennsylvania regiment shot. We remained at Camp Nordquest until October 9, when we turned out at 11 p. m., and stood in line till 3 p. m. of the next day, waiting for orders, when we marched. Arriving at Norton's Ford we again set out at 8 p. m., and marched to Pony Plain—twelve miles—arriving there at midnight. On these marches a soldier, with his gun, knapsack, forty rounds of ammunition, haversack, rations, etc., was carrying between forty and sixty pounds.

We now come to the first serious disaster which befell our company. Our pickets had been taken off at 10 p. m., October 10, and marched back to Camp Nordquest for their rations. They were under the command of Captain John Hutchins, of Company C (Medford). They secured their rations, but on their return, as there was some delay and the night was dark, some of them lost their way. The consequence was the enemy captured thirteen men, all from our regiment, and seven of them from Company E. These were Sergeant R. J. Hyde, Privates F. J. Oliver, Henry Howe, Joseph Whitmore, and Washington Lovett, all of whom died in Andersonville prison, and Corporal G. W. Bean and Private J. W. Oliver. The former was in prison seventeen months, until March, 1865, when he was paroled; the latter was more fortunate, being paroled after three or four months of imprisonment. The capture took place near Stevensburg, five or six miles from their regiment.

October 11. We turned out soon after midnight, and were ordered to be ready at a moment's notice. 11 a. m., we marched to Kelley's Ford, on the Rappadan. We forded the river, and took up a position (on the Washington side) in some rifle pits, three or four feet deep. This was to cover the river. The enemy, it will be understood, had flanked our army





on the river and were making for our rear. It was a cold, chilly night, about the same as the weather at home at that season. We had nothing for protection but our shelter tents, and as the ground was wet, it was almost impossible to make a fire.

October 13. We marched at 1 a. m., and arrived at 11 a. m. at Warrington Junction. At 3 o'clock in the afternoon we marched again, and reached Bristow station at 10 o'clock that night.

October 14. Marched at 7 a. m., and reached Centerville at noon. At 4 p. m., we set out for Bull Run, which was not far away. We saw the famous battlefield several times in the course of this season. The entire regiment was ordered on picket, and Company E was ordered to follow the Run until they met the pickets of the Sixth corps (Sedgwick's). We went about three miles, crossing Cub Run, but not finding any pickets, the division officer of the picket Major Leavitt (of the Sixteenth Maine) went ahead alone on horseback and left us in a field. Returning in less than an hour, he reported a rebel cavalry camp in our front. We retraced our way hurriedly, and after going about a mile and a half, were halted by our own pickets. We then learned that we had been more than a mile beyond our own lines. On calling the roll, I, as first sergeant, found twelve were missing, and so reported. Major Leavitt would allow no one to go back, but went himself, and found the men fast asleep in the field where we had been. Like a good shepherd he brought them all in. After that no one ever heard a word uttered against this officer; not many majors in the service would have done as much for their men.

October 15. The pickets were drawn in at 11 a. m., and we marched to Cub Run. Orders came for our regiment to take a position to support the pickets on our front, as heavy firing was going on in close proximity to the picket line. It will be remembered that this came near to being a third Bull Run, but we had the better position and the enemy withdrew.





# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1906-1907

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	James F. Whitney
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Treasurer . . . . .	Seth Mason
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. William B. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. Ella P. Hurd
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	Alfred M. Cutler

## Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot

Miss Anna P. Vinal

L. Roger Wentworth

## Committees for Year 1906-7

### Publications

Sam Walter Foss, 249 Highland Ave.	Sara A. Stone, 19 Central St.
Frank M. Hawes, 257 School St.	Samuel C. Earle, 7 Electric Ave.

### Military Records

Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.	L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.
John H. Dusseault, 42 Sargent Ave.	Miss Mary A. Haley, 117 Summer St.

### Hospitality

William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St.	Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury, 17 Dartmouth St.
Mrs. William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St.	Mrs. H. M. Heald, 438 Broadway
Mrs. F. D. Lapham, 3 Hathorn St.	

### Necrology

Professor D. L. Maulsby, 80 Curtis St.	Miss E. A. Waters, 132 Perkins St.
Rev. Francis A. Gray, 19 Dartmouth St.	

### Historic Sites

Joseph O. Hayden, 174 Summer St.	Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.
Aaron Sargent, 290 Broadway	

### Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Wakefield	Miss Florence E. Carr, 89 Oxford St.
Seth Mason, 32 Madison St.	William E. Brigham, 4 Hillside Ave.
Mrs. J. F. Ayer, Wakefield	

### Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, 234 Medford St.	Miss Edith B. Hayes, 52 Dartmouth St.
Mrs. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.	

### Photographs

Benj. F. Freeman, 2 Mt. Vernon St.	Albert L. Haskell, 422 Somerville Ave.
James F. Whitney, 40 Dartmouth St.	Mrs. C. L. Maynard, 14 Greenville St.

### Press and Clippings

Miss Lucy M. Stone, 15 Central St.	Miss Annie S. Gage, 32 Marshall St.
Miss Anna P. Vinal, 9 Aldersey St.	Mrs. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.
Mrs. Ella P. Hurd, 55 Columbus Ave.	Miss Mary E. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1907

Vol. VI

No. 2







## CONTENTS

ORIGINAL ENGLISH INHABITANTS AND EARLY SETTLERS IN SOMERVILLE	Aaron Sargent	26
UNION SQUARE BEFORE THE WAR — (II.)	Charles D. Eliot	31
COMPANY E, 39TH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, IN THE CIVIL WAR, — (II.)	From Diary of John E. Disenard	43

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19, CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, nonaltd.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and  
Curator Alfred Morton Cutler, 224 Medford Street, to whom all  
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. VI.

JULY, 1907

No. 2

---

## ORIGINAL ENGLISH INHABITANTS AND EARLY SETTLERS IN SOMERVILLE.

By Aaron Sargent.

It was after a lapse of more than two centuries from the time the first white man came hither that the name of Somerville was given to a Massachusetts town. Originally our territory, as is well known, was a part of the then town of Charlestown and, until our incorporation as a separate town, was mentioned in the town records as "without the Neck"; but not quite all of what was so-called is within our confines. The line as established when Somerville was set off caused some friction at the time among those living near and on either side of the boundary, and the partition as made was not satisfactory to many of those residing in the vicinity and on both sides of the border; but each side was in a measure happy because the other side was unhappy; and this statement is absolutely true.

For convenience at this time, our territory will be designated as Somerville.

The local names within our borders in the early time were the Ten Hills Farm, between what is now Broadway and the Mystic, and from Medford town line to about where Winthrop Avenue connects with Broadway the line extended by a creek to the river; but the larger part of the farm was outside of our limits. The Highfield and Highfield-mead included all the remaining territory between Broadway and the river: but a part of the Highfield was on the Charlestown side of our boundary line. The Stinted Pasture, or Cow Commons, was from Broad-





way toward Cambridge, and north from the "Road to Cambridge," now Washington Street, and comprised a large part of Somerville. Gibbons-field, the South-mead, and the West End were south of the "Road to Cambridge," and westerly of what is now the Southern division of the Boston and Maine Railroad. Strawberry Hill was probably the same as our Prospect Hill. Lastly, there can hardly be a doubt that a part of what was called the Line-field of Charlestown was between the Stinted Pasture and the Newtown, or Cambridge, town line; from what is now Cambridgeport to Menotomy River, now Alewife Brook; the Line-field extending, also, into what is now the town of Arlington to Mystic Pond.

All these local names are now obsolete except that a part of the original Ten Hills Farms within our limits is still known as such. A century or more ago the Highfield became Ploughed Hill, and over two centuries ago the Highfield-mead became Dirty-marsh; but these names are now extinct, and there seems to be no modern names except for Strawberry Hill for the other localities of the olden time. The Cow Commons, as grazing ground, and also other lands in Somerville, were held largely by the inhabitants of the peninsula of Charlestown. The Commons were a feature of the town, almost from its commencement to 1685, or a little later, but in the next century were unknown.

A record in the town book of Charlestown would seem to imply some disposition of the Commons. The language is ambiguous, to say the least, but may be read as a literary curiosity. The record says:—

"At a meeting of the inhabitants of Charlestown, being warned thereto by an order of the Selectmen April 15, 1685, the following was proposed unto the assembly: We, the inhabitants of Charlestown, having had for a long time the use of divers privileges in the Stinted Common lying in one general field between said town and Menotomy as for the cutting of wood, getting of stones, sand, and clay, without any let or legal denial, and the proprietors of the same unto whom the said pasture was granted, and their heirs, seeing cause to divide the same into lots according to each man's proportion therein, that peace and





love may be continued and promoted in the said town, and all future trouble prevented, in consideration of divers privileges to lay in common to us and our heirs forever, viz.: Range highways between lots, country highways to Cambridge, Menotomy, and Mystic bridge, a suitable landing place at Menotomy bridge, and about Mystic above the bridge, a stone quarry at Two Penny Brook of ten acres, more or less, another upon the rocks by Patrick Marks, a piece of land that is now in common for training, etc., without the Neck, the pasturage thereof may be improved for the use of the school by fencing the same in when the town sees good. Leaving out so much of it as may be sufficient for clay pits, also that the sand place may be always free that is nigh to Robert Leach's, also convenient watering places. In consideration whereof we do for ourselves and our heirs leave it with the present selectmen of said Charlestown, in our behalf to make such agreement with the proprietors of said Stinted Pasture, all or either of them about any further claims that we have or might pretend to have in the wood that doth or may grow thereon, or any further claims in stone, sand, clay, highways, watering places, and shall be a final conclusion between us and them and our heirs forever. And such and so many proprietors so agreeing and performing such agreement made with said selectmen within one year from the date hereof, we do for ourselves, our heirs, and executors forever acquit any further claim in said Stinted Pasture, the herbage thereof, stones, clay, wood, sand, watering places, the same to be and remain unto the proprietors thereof unto whom it was first granted as a good estate of inheritance in fee simple to them and to their heirs forever to use and improve forever hereafter as they shall see cause, and that whatever money shall be received from the proprietors by any such agreement shall be put into the hands of the selectmen to be improved by them and their successors from time to time forever for such uses as the said town shall appoint.

"Attest:

"John Newell,  
"Recorder."





There was undoubtedly some meaning to this vote, and perhaps its adoption by the town tended to a discontinuance of the Commons in a short time.

The earliest inhabitants, those who came the first thirty years, did not remain as permanent settlers; and, with perhaps three exceptions, neither left nor have now descendants here.

For the purpose of recording them, however, as resident in Somerville, they may be named in chronological order, by the years of their coming, so far as ascertained.

John Winthrop, the governor, 1630, owned Ten Hills Farm in 1631, and was an inhabitant, but removed soon to Boston. None of his lineage remained here, and after some years the farm was sold out of the family.

Edward Gibbons, about 1630, from whom Gibbons-field derived its name, had a house and land in that locality, but left soon and went to Boston.

Edward Jones, 1630, had a house on the Newtown highway (Road to Cambridge), but removed in a few years, with his family, to Southampton, L. I.

Richard Palgrave, physician, 1630, built "without the Neck," on the "Road to Cambridge." Nine of his descendants are here now.

Thomas Goble, 1634, had a house and half an acre of land at the West End. He removed to Concord. Two of his descendants are here now.

John Green, 1634, had a dwelling house and land at the West End in 1638, which he sold to Richard Wilson, of Boston, and Wilson sold to Francis Grissell, or Griswold. John Green removed, with his family, probably to Malden.

John Woolrych, 1635, had a dwelling house and six acres of land at Strawberry Hill. He died prior to 1647, and his widow married William Ayer, who sold the premises to Richard Wilson. Neither Woolrych nor Ayer left offspring here.

John Sibley, 1635, had a dwelling house and land at Strawberry Hill. A daughter, and probably only child, married twice, but not in Somerville.





Thomas Pierce, 1636. His dwelling house was at the West End. Descendants of the name may not be here now, but posterity is here, as descendants of his daughter Mary, who married Peter Tufts.

William Bachelder, 1636. He had a dwelling house and four acres of land in the Highfield, near what is now the corner of Broadway and Winthrop Avenue. He may have moved into the peninsula; certainly none of his children remained here. His daughter Abigail married Richard Austin, and they were the progenitors of the old Austin family, of Charlestown, well and favorably known there.

Robert Shorthus, 1636, had a house and land at the West End. He left no issue here, and his departure was not regretted.

Abraham Palmer, 1636, had a house and seven acres of land in the Highfield, which he sold to Katharine Cotimore. Neither of them left issue here.

James Thompson, 1636, had a house and five acres of land in the Highfield. He removed to Woburn.

Robert Leach, 1637, had a house and two acres of land "without the Neck," but may have lived within the peninsula. His daughter Elizabeth married John Fosket. Their son Thomas had land at Wildridge's Hill in Somerville in 1683, and may have lived there. There are no known descendants of Leach now in this city.

There was no such person as Wildridge known to be in this vicinity, and the word may have been a corruption of Woolrych, after John Woolrych, of Strawberry Hill, and it may be that Wildridge's Hill and Strawberry Hill were identical. A deed given for land on Wildridge's Hill 130 years later says bounded "northeast by Three-Pole Lane" (now Shawmut and Cross Streets), and thus makes the Strawberry Hill of the olden time to be the Prospect Hill of our time.

Richard Miller, 1637 or earlier. His dwelling house and eight acres of land were in Gibbons-field, near Gibbons River, which years later became Miller's River, but is now, happily, no more. Richard Miller removed to Cambridge, and Joseph, one of his two sons, also settled there. James, the younger of the





two, settled in Somerville, and of him and his descendants, more anon.

Samuel Hall, 1637, had a dwelling house and four acres of land in the Highfield, probably on the Somerville side of the boundary line, but he left no issue here.

Thomas Beecher, 1637. His dwelling house was in the Highfield, but may have been on the Charlestown side of the line. His widow sold the house to George Bunker. Neither Beecher nor Bunker left descendants here, to my knowledge.

John Crow, 1638 or earlier, had a dwelling house and nine acres of land in Gibbons-field, which he sold to Matthew Avery, who died in four years, and his only child, a son, went back to London. John Crow went to Yarmouth, on Cape Cod, and he and Yelverton Crow (an ancestor of mine), who owned a Cow Common in Somerville in 1637, were the progenitors of the numerous Crowells, for so the name became in the second generation, on Cape Cod and elsewhere in Massachusetts.

John Brinsmeade, 1638, had a house and two acres of land in the Highfield, perhaps on the Somerville side of the line, but he left no issue here.

Edward Paine, 1638. His house and thirty acres of land were at the West End. He returned to England, and his children did not remain in town.

John Hodges, 1638, had a dwelling house and ten acres of land in Gibbons-field. He left no issue in town.

William Baker, 1638, or earlier, had a dwelling house and land at the West End, but it does not appear that he left descendants here.

John Mousal, 1638, or earlier, had a homestead in the Highfield, but he subsequently removed to Woburn.

Ralph Mousal, 1638, or earlier, brother of John, had a dwelling house and about five acres of land in the Highfield. Probably none of his children remained in Somerville.

Ezekiel Richardson, 1638, and probably earlier, had a homestead and four and one-half acres of land in the Highfield. He left in a few years and became an early settler in Woburn. Twenty-three of his descendants are here now.





Thomas Richardson, 1638, or earlier, brother of Ezekiel, had a homestead in the Highfield. He also removed to Woburn.

William Kilcop, 1646, bought of William Roberts, "of wapping in ould England A house and Land," ten acres in Gibbons-field. He had no issue here, and in 1657 sold the estate to Henry Harbard.

Abraham Jaquith, 1649, had a house and land "without the Neck," but whether on the Somerville or Charlestown side of the line is uncertain; but he left no descendants here.

Francis Grissell, or Griswold, 1649, had a dwelling house and three-fourths of an acre of land at the West End, which he bought of Richard Wilson. Descendants are here through his daughter Hannah, who married John Kent, and of them, more anon.

Henry Harbour, or Harbard, 1657, had a house and ten acres of land in Gibbons-field, which he bought of William Kilcop. His first wife was the widow of Richard Miller, and, having no issue himself, left a large part of his property to her descendants.

William Bullard, 1658, perhaps lived at the West End, as he married, when about the age of sixty, Mary Griswold, widow of Francis, and after about twenty years removed to Dedham, leaving no issue.

It is not always easy to decide, when a person's dwelling house in the olden time was said to be in the Highfield or on the Road to Cambridge, on which side of the Charlestown and Somerville boundary line he resided; but it is believed that the foregoing is as nearly correct as can now be told.

[To be concluded.]





## UNION SQUARE BEFORE THE WAR.—(II.)

By Charles D. Elliot.

In the paper which I read last year upon Union Square, I made mention, as well as I could remember, of the people living there and in the regions adjacent about the year 1846, of their descendants, and of the locations of their residences and estates. I referred by name to more than 175 of our citizens or their children who lived at or near the Square, and whose Mecca it was; from their homes all roads led to Union Square, as in ancient times they did to Rome. That I did not attempt to write the virtues of these early Somerville people by no means indicates that they were undeserving: in fact, they were a model community, as a whole, honest, industrious, unostentatious, and neighborly. Unpleasant episodes occasionally varied the even tenor of their days, but I now recall but little that occurred to mar the pleasant memories of those people and times.

And now I wish to speak of the topography, or "lay of the land," as old people used to say, of Union Square and the adjacent region. Many changes have been made in that section of Somerville since 1846. Nature originally made a peninsula of the Square and its vicinity.

In the earlier days a stream started from a little pond on the westerly side of Walnut Street, about where the Somerville Journal building now is,—known later as Geldowsky's Pond,—thence it ran across Walnut Street (an ancient rangeway), which in wet seasons it flooded, across Robert Sanborn's, Deacon Robert Vinal's, and the Stone properties to about where the Wellington-Wild coal office now is, on the northeasterly side of Union Square, and then under the Square to the southerly side, where the culvert emptied into Miller's River, which then ran along the edge of the Square.

Another stream had its source near the Home for the Aged on Highland Avenue, about opposite the new armory, and ran southerly, crossing Central Street not far from Berkeley Street; thence along the valley between Spring and Central Hills to School Street, which it crossed near Summer Street,





passing through Robert Vinal's land, and crossing Bow Street and Somerville Avenue near Drouet's block, into and across the Guy C. Hawkins estate, and emptying into Miller's River a little way west of the present Washington-Street bridge. Later a small reservoir was built in this brook, just on the easterly side of School Street, and roofed in, and a pump log aqueduct laid to Cambridgeport, a considerable section of which was for many years partially supplied with water from this source, and from another log aqueduct which ran from the foot of Prospect Hill above, and through what is now Homer Square, and which still continues to furnish some of the people near there with cool and delectable nectar. The rights, such as they were, of the proprietors of this aqueduct passed many years ago into the custody of the city of Cambridge, but as a source of water supply to any part of that city it was long ago abandoned.

Miller's River, into which these two brooks ran, had its source in Cambridge, only a short distance from the Somerville line, and just south of Kirkland Street, which is the extension of Washington Street, Somerville; thence it crossed Kirkland Street to the north, and crossing diagonally what was recently the site of the Shady Hill Nurseries, it passed under Beacon Street, and meandered across the intervening lands to and under the Fitchburg Railroad, across the Bleachery property, and under Park Street, through the Frost and Hawkins estates, under the railroad again, under Washington Street just west of the bridge, thence in a circuit to and under the railroad a third time, and crossing Webster Avenue near where the Parochial School now is, it skirted along the southerly side of the Square through a marshy meadow, under Prospect Street, near its junction with Newton Street, formerly Brick Yard Lane, at what was in Revolutionary times known as Bullard's Bridge, thence through marshy lands to and under the railroad a fourth time, widening on the south side of the railroad into a large tidal estuary, known previous to 1872 as "the Upper Basin," and thence under Medford Street and on to its mouth at Charles River.

The Miller's River of 1850 and before was a limpid stream,





whose waters rose and fell with the tide, and it was well stocked with fish, the smelt, flounder, and tomcod being the most numerous. Where the river crossed the railroad the fourth time, east of Prospect Street, the culvert was a structure of large dimensions, popularly known as "the box," and here could often be seen in summer the bathers, in winter the skaters, and fishermen both seasons.

Previous to 1860 there was a rope walk east of Prospect Street, owned and operated by Hiram Allen, and furnished with water power from the river, which was raised by a dam at that point. A hundred or more years ago there was a public watering place where Miller's River crossed Prospect Street; this street was laid out about 1801, and was early known as Pine Street, but Newton Street, previously called Brick Yard Lane, was a century or so ago called "the way by Bullard's Bridge." Miller's River had one other branch, which commenced not far from the junction of Newton and Springfield Streets, and running easterly through wet and almost swampy lands, entered the river just in the rear of the present glasshouse. This swampy territory extended approximately from Newton Street to Oak Street and beyond; it was in the early fifties covered with a rank growth of grasses, weeds, and underbrush, among which were denized the red-winged blackbird, the robin, cow bunting, and other plumed warblers of the air. And speaking of birds, what a variety there seemed to be in those days of half a century ago compared with what there are at present. Besides the blackbirds, two kinds or more, the cow buntings, also called blackbirds, though they were a smoke color, we had the yellow-birds, bluebirds, robins, orioles, golden robins, swallows, sand-martins, chickadees, wrens, chippers or chipbirds, kingbirds, bluejays, woodpeckers, crows, and others, occasionally hawks, and in the winter the plump little snowbirds, while around our clay pits and water shores came peep, snipes, and other water birds.

But where are they? Certainly not in Union Square, though armies of birds throng the trees there, as everywhere else, regiments, brigades, and divisions of that strenuous exotic, that little





pinch of feathers and beak, disputative, pugnacious, and fearfully aggressive, the English sparrow, before whom all self-respecting birds have fled.

On the easterly side of Prospect Street, before coming to the Cambridge line, was a pine grove, and on the westerly side, too, extending, if I remember rightly, nearly to Cambridge Street, and in Revolutionary days this grove extended, I think, nearly, if not quite, down to East Cambridge.

The lands around Union Square, adjacent and outlying, were little mines of prosperity to their owners half a century ago, and could one of our opulent chevaliers of finance and finesse of the present day have appeared and promoted the great sand and clay deposits of this vicinity under some such alluring and persuasive name as the "Consolidated Aluminum and Silica Trust"—which certainly sounds better than "Brick Company"—who knows but that millions might have been wrung from the venture. It seems to be a curious fact that wherever clay is found here, sand is found near it; on the northerly side of Miller's River were sand hills or lands in profusion, while on the southerly side were largely fields of clay, which were early in the last century the sites of brick yards, and so continued, I think, until after the Civil War. Here, as in other parts of the town, the clay lands were burrowed with pits, having narrow dykes between them, which until excavated to required depth were kept pumped out, but then abandoned and allowed to become stagnant ponds, of varying depths, along the borders of which were luxuriant growths of cat-o'-nine-tails, and in whose waters flourished myriads of hornpout, which is the catfish or sucker of the South and West. How came these hornpouts and almost no other fish in these pits, in all of them? This is a question that has puzzled me for half a century—it is an enigma, which I doubt if the sphinx even could solve.

Before shifting this landscape scene, I must say a word about Prospect Hill. Before the war it was an eminence very steep towards Union Square, and some twenty or more feet higher than at present. Its steep southerly side was covered with barberry bushes, with scattering pear and other trees, and had grass-





grown pits all along it, circular and some ten feet or so in diameter. These were said by older people to have been "tent holes" of the Revolutionary army, and when it is considered that they were on the sunny slope of the hill, and also on the side away from the British artillery fire from Bunker Hill, I think without question that they were the relics of the Revolutionary encampment.

Prospect Hill, as you all probably know, was dug down in 1872 or 1873 to fill Miller's River basins; the top of the knoll on which the memorial tower stands was about its original height.

I have spoken about the birds and fishes with which most of the younger people around Union Square were familiar in the 'forties and 'fifties, which suggests that the amusements of gunning and fishing were common then; almost every boy owned a gun and was a huntsman. Rifle and pistol practice were also common, especially on the brick yards, and I well recall some of the more noted of our marksmen near the Square, among them Nathaniel Blair, Isaac Barker, Frederick Kinsley, brother of Willard C. Kinsley, after whom the Somerville G. A. R. post is named, and who was himself a colonel in the army. The Messrs. Whittemore were also good shots, as they ought to have been, for they were in the rifle manufacturing business here in Somerville, and made the best.

Among other amusements in those days was bowling at the alley of Thomas Goodhue, whose alley and residence were on the westerly side of Bow Street, just north of the present Hill Building.

May-day parties covered our hills previous to the war, and are occasionally seen nowadays, but then they turned out in larger numbers, and presented a very gay appearance, with natural and artificial floral adornments. But May-day was not always a day of mirth and jollity; seeds of jealousy and hatred had many years before been sown in Cambridge and Charlestown, which germinated and bore real "passion flowers" every May-day. The boys of Charlestown and Somerville were in those days known as "Charlestown pigs" by the East Cambridge boys, who in their turn were called "pointers." The "pigs" and





"pointers" met on May-day on the renowned (not then, but now) Prospect Hill, and there on the former tented field they met in war's grim struggle and settled, or tried to, their long-pent feuds; but these were bloodless fields, where a few stone bruises or fistic contusions constituted the losses on either side.

Picnicking was a recreation of the days before the war; people from Union Square and its neighborhood found health and amusement in the sylvan retreats of Norton's or of Palfrey's groves, or in excursions to the grounds and groves of Fresh and Spy Ponds.

Union Square, like all other communities, had of course from time to time its little excitements, and occasionally larger ones. Among the latter was the great tidal wave which destroyed Minot's Ledge lighthouse; this wave swept inland, inundating all low lands in Boston and along the coast. It came up the Charles and Miller's Rivers, flooding all the lands along them nearly to or beyond the Brass Tube Works; where the Parochial School is, there was that day a lake of sea water several hundred feet wide, covering Webster Avenue and shutting off all communication south of Union Square till the tide fell. The whole territory east of Webster Avenue and the glasshouse, from the Fitchburg Railroad into Cambridge, was one vast inland sea, where upon the ebbing of the tide were seen coops, small buildings, and other objects sailing gracefully out to the harbor. It was a sight ever to be remembered.

The visit of the Prince of Wales, now Edward VII., in 1860 was another event worth recalling; his Royal Highness, whose visit to Canada and the United States was the great international event of the time, on October 19 made a flying trip to Mt. Auburn and Cambridge, at which latter place he was received and entertained with great cordiality by the faculty and students of Harvard College. He returned to Boston by the way of Washington Street, Somerville, through Union Square, where, sitting in his barouche, he saluted with royal grace the people gathered in the Square to see him, among whom was the writer. The Prince was a fine-looking young man of nineteen, slim and graceful; he arrived in Boston from New York on October 17,





and left for Portland, Me., on October 20, 1860. His coming was one of the great social events of Boston of the last century. He was received by Governor Banks and suite, and all the great people, political and social, vied in showing him attentions and attracting his. On his arrival in Boston he was escorted by a grand military procession of infantry and dragoons to the Revere House in Bowdoin Square, which was then the great hostelry of Boston, and which for three days thereafter was a Royal palace. A general holiday was made by proclamation on the eighteenth. Stores closed and business suspended; balls and receptions were the order of the day. Among the latter was that at the State House by the Governor and other officials and distinguished guests, among whom was the Hon. Edward Everett. In the afternoon the royal party visited Music Hall, where they were given a musical reception by the school children of the city.

It may not be out of place to quote here a few lines from a humorous poem written upon the occasion of the Prince's visit. Its introduction begins:—

“Sound the trumpets, beat the drums,  
The princely heir of England comes.  
Years of hateful anger past,  
A softer feeling rules at last,  
And George's great-grandson shall find  
A greeting warm, a welcome kind.  
Erect the arches! Deck the walls!  
Charge all the guns! Subscribe for balls!  
Burnish the bayonets! Buy new dresses!  
Drill the children! Write addresses!  
Let the Common Council all  
Beflag and deck the City Hall!  
Hang out the banners! Light the groves!  
Hire coaches! Purchase gloves!  
Adjourn the courts! Postpone the sessions!  
Buy Roman candles! Form processions!  
For hark! the trumpets! hark! the drums!  
The princely heir of England comes!”





At last he arrives at Boston, and the poem says:—

"But the following day they made matters worse,  
They took him to Boston, that city perverse,  
And showed him the 'Hub of the Universe.'

\* \* \* \* \*

"Here they gave him the regular Union thing,  
For he heard our great foreign artists sing  
With genuine true Teutonic ring  
The national air inspiriting:—

"'Tis der sthar shbankled panner!

Und lonk may she vave

O'er der lant ob der vree

Und der home ob der prave!"

From royalty to religion may or may not be a long stride; however it may be, I am going to take it. The first religious services of which I have any record were held, if I remember aright, and this I only know from others, in the hall of the old wooden engine house, corner of Prospect and Washington Streets, in 1842, conducted by Miss Elizabeth P. Whittidge, then a teacher in our schools. From this, which was a Sabbath school only, grew the present Unitarian society. There were also many Universalists living near Union Square in 1846 and later, who used to attend church at Cambridgeport, a mile or more distant, walking forth and back every Sabbath. This was not always a pleasant journey for the boys, as the feuds existing as already mentioned between the Cambridge and Somerville youths, sometimes brought on personal conflicts, not conducive to piety. But about 1853 the Universalists began services of their own in the old schoolhouse which then stood on the corner between Medford, Shawmut, and Cross Streets, under the guidance of Rev. George H. Emerson. These meetings were the commencement of the present First Universalist society.

The Methodists of Union Square and neighborhood first held meetings in Franklin Hall, Union Square (of which hall I shall speak again), in 1855. The first minister appointed by the New England Conference was the Rev. Charles Baker. "Father" Baker, as we all called him, at that time about sixty





years old, had then been thirty-seven years in the ministry, having filled over twenty appointments to pulpits in Maine, New Hampshire, and Massachusetts. He was a zealous preacher, much respected by all who knew him, and under his guidance the church prospered, and succeeded in building a new and commodious edifice on Webster Avenue, which building is now the Parochial School. "Father" Baker pursued other callings to eke out a livelihood; it was said of him that although his salary was increased from year to year, he never at the highest received over \$600 per annum during his life. What a poor pittance for piety were these few "Peter-pence!" Mrs. Baker, whom we knew as "Mother" Baker, was an exemplary Christian, well worthy to be the consort and companion of so good a man as "Father" Baker.

"Father" Baker died in Somerville August 7, 1864, aged sixty-seven years, and his wife died here December 20, 1885, aged eighty-seven years.

I have spoken of Franklin Hall. It stood where the new engine house in Union Square now stands, between Somerville Avenue, then Milk Street, and Washington Street; it was built sometime previous to 1852 by Deacon Robert Vinal. The main building was used by D. A. & S. H. Marrett as a grain and grocery store, and for a considerable time the post-office was kept there by them, on the easterly Milk Street corner of the building. Our chief of police, Mr. Parkhurst, was at one time a clerk in the Messrs. Marrett's store. In the second story was the hall used for all kinds of meetings and entertainments,—as a church, as a drill room for the Somerville Light Infantry, a hall for political gatherings and harangues, for fairs, for concerts, colored minstrel and sleight-of-hand performers, and for the meetings of the Franklin Institute.

The Franklin Institute was a library and debating association. Its first meeting was held December 3, 1852, at which James S. Tuttle was temporary chairman, and Thomas Gooding secretary. Upon the permanent organization, Quincy A. Vinal was elected president, and J. Manly Clark and Thomas Gooding vice-presidents, and Charles F. Stevens secretary. It had about





fifty members, among whom, besides those named, were William L. Burt, Isaiah W. Tuttle, E. A. Norris, editor of the *Olive Branch*, Charles Williams, Jr., Robert A. Vinal, John W. Vinal, N. Carleton Hawkins, Charles S. Lincoln, Emery H. Munroe, Phineas W. Blodgett, John Runey, Francis Tufts, William and Edwin Mills, Clark Bennett, R. W. Keyes, Edwin C. Bennett, Charles H. Hudson, J. Q. Twombly, and many others, including the writer.

The later presidents were J. Manly Clark, Robert A. Vinal, I. W. Tuttle, and R. W. Keyes; and secretaries, Charles Williams, Jr., Edward E. Vinal, George E. Bennett, I. B. Giles, Edwin Mills, and myself.

Quite a library was gathered, which, however, was scattered on the dissolution of the society. Among the subjects for debate were the following, viz.:—

“Is phrenology a humbug?” Decided it was not.

“Would the annexation of the Sandwich Islands to the United States be beneficial to this country?” Decided it would.

“Ought Cuba to be annexed to the United States?” Decided yes.

“Ought a Pacific railroad to be built by the United States government?” Decided yes.

“Ought America to assist the oppressed nations of Europe in gaining their independence?” Decided no.

“Would reciprocity of trade between the British Provinces and the United States be beneficial to the United States?” Decided yes.

“Do school-masters do more good in the world than ministers?” Decided yes.

Numerous other questions were from time to time discussed.

Lectures and similar entertainments were also given, among them the following, viz.:—

January 17, 1853, by Hon. George S. Boutwell.

February 10, 1853, by Dr. Luther V. Bell.

March 28, 1853, by Colonel J. D. Greene, of Cambridge.

May 9, 1853, by Charles H. Hudson, Esq., and poem by Charles S. Lincoln, Esq.





October 30, 1854, by J. Manly Clark, Esq.

March 26, 1855, by Hon. N. P. Banks, Jr.

November 19, 1855, by Charles S. Lincoln, Esq.; subject: "True Merit."

December 17, 1855, by Charles H. Hudson, Esq., dramatic readings.

February 11, 1856, by John C. Cleur, Esq., on the "Scotch Poets," and an address by William L. Burt, Esq.

The dissolution of the society occurred March 31, 1856, at which meeting it was voted to sell its library.

There is much more I should like to and might say about Union Square, about other citizens not mentioned in my first paper, who came to that vicinity after 1846, but before the war, and built up its industries and contributed to its prosperity; of the various artisans who established themselves there; of such manufacturing enterprises as the Brass Tube Works, the Glass Works, Pump Works, etc.

Nor have I said anything about the Somerville Light Infantry, of which in the 'fifties Francis Tufts, still living, and George O. Brastow were commanders, and which did such valiant service in the Civil War. And the fire department has received no mention, from whose members, however, were recruited a large number of the Somerville soldiers of the Rebellion, and whose experience in fighting fires at home helped to render them efficient as fighters of the fire of the Rebellion.

A volume could be written about Union Square, as it could about almost any other community; what with gossip, tradition, and local history, each little community furnishes an interesting topic for narrative; and that we can look back for nearly sixty years and find but little to say against the people and village which we have known so long is a cause for satisfaction.





## COMPANY E, 39TH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, IN THE CIVIL WAR. — (II.)

[Diary of J. H. Dusseault—Continued.]

October 19, 1863. We marched at 8 a. m. for Haymarket on the Manassas Railroad, and arrived at 3 p. m. At 4 p. m. on the next day we set out again, passing through Thoroughfare Gap, in the Bull Run Ridge making camp at 10 p. m. We remained in this neighborhood until the twenty-fourth, when we marched to Kettle Run, where we found the railroad badly used up. As we had orders to guard a bridge over the Run, we stayed here till November 5. All this while the enemy were very near, and both sides were manoeuvring to get the better position. At 4 p. m. that day we started for Catlett's Station, and arrived there at 8.30 p. m. November 7 found us at sunset, after a march of seventeen miles, at Morrisville. The next day we had an all-day's march, sixteen or seventeen miles, and halted at night four miles from the railroad station. November 9, at 5 p. m., we marched for Licking Run, about fifteen miles away, and reached there late at night, in the midst of a snowstorm. About an inch of snow was on the ground. The men were pretty well demoralized and, to put it mildly, there was considerable grumbling. My commission as second lieutenant, Company H, signed by Governor Andrew, and dated October 20, reached me the next day.

November 10. I stopped grumbling.

November 23. We marched from 7.30 a. m. to 11 p. m., arriving at Rappahannock Station. (The orders for all this marching and counter-marching were issued by General Meade to the corps commanders.)

We remained here until November 26, when we crossed the Rappahannock at 8 a. m. By 6.30 p. m. we had crossed the Rapidan, also, thus traversing the peninsula between the two rivers on our way eastward towards Richmond. That night we camped on the heights, a mile from the last-named river.

November 27. We marched at 6.30 a. m. on the Richmond side, and reached Robertson's Tavern at midnight. The enemy





were just in front of us. The next morning, after a short march, we came close up to them at Mile Run and drove in their pickets. (The whole Army of the Potomac, spread out as they were, must have extended over many miles.) Companies E and C were deployed to skirmish and cover the front of our brigade. The First Corps (ours) was in the centre; the Second and Sixth were on our right, the Third and Fifth to our left. Our regiment formed part of the front line, second division, of the corps.

November 29. Our division lay in position all day; cannonading lasted till dark, but there was no infantry engagement.

November 30. In the morning we marched a mile to the right, and lay in line of battle all day.

December 1. We returned to our position of the twenty-ninth (centre), and remained until 4 p. m., when our army began to retreat to the Rapidan. The enemy had the better position. While here we were only a few miles from the battlefields of Chancellorsville, and of the Wilderness which was yet to be. General Warren, the saviour of Gettysburg and chief engineer of the Army of the Potomac at that time, but now in command of the Second Army Corps, had explained to General Meade the true state of affairs, and this caused the withdrawal of our troops. On our retreat we reached Germania Ford on the south bank, and bivouacked at 10 p. m. The First Corps covered the crossing of the Fifth and Sixth Corps the next morning (December 2), and our regiment was the last to cross. That night we bivouacked at Stevensburg.

December 3. We went into camp at Kelley's Ford, on the south side of the Rapidan, where we occupied log houses which General Lee's army had built for winter quarters. They had been driven from these November 7 by our Third Corps. Here we remained till December 24. The huts were far from being clean and wholesome.

December 24. We marched to a point on the Orange and Alexandria Railroad, about four miles above Culpeper, where we bivouacked two days, and then marched at night still farther on to a point beyond the cavalry reserves, and formed the extreme outpost of the army, near Mitchell's Station. Here we suffered much from severe storms—snow and rain—until quar-





ters were built. January 1, 1864, the boys were hard at work erecting houses seven feet by fifteen feet, which were to accommodate eight men each. Each regiment thus took its turn while in this camp, which was until April 26, 1864. One regiment of our brigade would be under arms during the twenty-four hours of the day, with guns stacked, watching for the enemy. This camp was at the foot of Cedar Mountain, four miles from the Rapidan, and five miles in advance of our main army. We occupied a post of great danger, as well as of honor. The camp was one of the finest in the army. We remained here all winter, and during the time the Confederates went around our rear twice and felt of our army, but never molested us. Two incidents of that winter stand out in memory. The first occurred January 5, when seven Rebel soldiers, in wretched plight, found their way into our camp and surrendered. It is needless to say they were received hospitably and were allowed to fill up from Uncle Sam's rations. The other event, in marked contrast with this one, was a visit of inspection from General U. S. Grant February 8.

Camp was broken up April 26, when we marched about a mile and set up our shelter tents. Here we remained until May 3. We were now having fine weather. At 12 o'clock that night we were ordered to pack up, and at 3 a. m., May 4, marched back to Stevensburg, where we joined our corps, the Fifth. (The First Corps had been consolidated with the Fifth some time before this.) At noon of that day we crossed the Rapidan, and halted about five miles south of the river, after a hard march of twenty miles. We bivouacked at a spot from which the countless fires of our whole army could be seen, a most impressive sight. This was in "The Wilderness."

Thursday, May 5. We turned out at 3 p. m. and marched at 6, about two miles, and halted with the enemy's full force in our front. The Battle of the Wilderness was opened by the First and Third Divisions of our corps at 10 a. m. General Warren was in command of the corps, General Griffin of the First Division, and General Crawford of the Third. Colonel Peter Lyle commanded our brigade. They drove the enemy for a while, but were finally forced back. Our division, the Second,





together with the Fourth, took their places and repulsed the enemy, who fell back through an opening in the woods and made a stand among the trees, about a quarter of a mile from our line. The whole Thirty-ninth Regiment was in this engagement, Colonel P. Stearns Davis in command, Captain Fred R. Kinsley over Company E, and Captain C. N. Hunt over Company H, Dorchester. The other companies of this regiment were Company K, Woburn, under Captain W. C. Kinsley; Company C, Medford; B, of Roxbury; D, of Quincy; I, of Natick; F, of Taunton; A, of Peabody; G, of Scituate and Boston. That night the field between the two armies was strewn with dead and wounded men, mangled horses, and broken cannon. Our regimental loss was twenty, killed and wounded. Company E, being on the right, was not in the thick of the fight, and lost none. Company H lost six, two killed and four wounded.

We lay in this position all that afternoon and during the night which followed. At 4 p. m. we attempted to make a charge, but were repulsed, with a heavy loss to the division. The regiment on our left, the Ninetieth Pennsylvania, on account of the opening in the woods, was exposed to the enemy's view and encountered the concentrated fire of their battery. This regiment had 400 men in line; they came out with 150. They met this heavy loss while going only as many yards. While we were in the woods the Confederate batteries raked the trees right down upon us. "That night was the worst I ever experienced in the service," says our diarist. As soon as night came on, the wounded men in front began to cry pitifully for water and for help. A truce was arranged, and men from both sides went out to collect their dead and wounded comrades. But from some misunderstanding the truce lasted only about a half-hour. Firing commenced again on our right (Sixth Corps), which was kept up all through the night. (Our corps stood between the Second and the Sixth). The Cavalry was on our flanks and rear. Our position was near Mine Run, in a thick growth of trees, most of them pines.

The next morning the Sixth Corps was relieved by the First Division of our corps. There was hard fighting all along the





line. About 11 a. m. we were ordered to the rear. It seems that the Ninth Corps, which had moved forward into some woods about this time, had broken, and we were sent back to support them. We marched three miles—weather extremely hot—and built some breastworks there. This was at the left of our position of the day before. A fearful fight went on that afternoon from 4 to 6 o'clock. Fortunately no one in Company E was injured. That night I was detailed on skirmish line. For forty-eight hours there was not much rest for some of us, but the line snatched a little sleep at intervals.

Humorous incidents were not lacking during the eventful and strenuous days of this campaign, and the following is mentioned merely in illustration: Our line lay along a plank road, and we had breastworks ten feet away and parallel to the road. About midnight, while the boys were endeavoring to get a little sleep, a great racket was heard not far away, and some in their alarm thought the whole Rebel army was upon us. It proved to be a stampede among our own cattle, and they came bellowing down the space between the planks and the works, and over the prostrate forms of our men. The choice language of the startled sleepers, when they came to understand the situation, added not a little to the tumult. Quiet reigned for a short time only, for from 4 to 6 o'clock the enemy tried in good earnest to get possession of the road, and made three, four, yes, five charges in front of us. A Rebel prisoner, apparently wounded and just able to crawl about, on hearing the shouts of his compatriots so near, and dreading to fall into their hands, much to the amusement of our soldiers, jumped up a well man and ran like a deer towards our rear.





# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

## 1907-1908

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	F. D. Lapham
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. Florence E. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. Ella R. Hurd
Treasurer . . . . .	William B. Holmes
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	Alfred M. Cutler
Councillors-at-Large . . . . .	{ Charles D. Elliot
	{ L. Roger Wentworth
	{ Anna P. Vinal

## Standing Committees for Year 1907-8

### Publications

Sam Walter Foss, 249 Highland Ave.	Miss Sara A. Stone, 19 Central St.
Frank M. Hawes, 257 School St.	Samuel C. Earle, 45 Sawyer Ave.
	(Tufts College, Mass.)

### Military Records

Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.	L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.
John H. Dusseault, 42 Sargent Ave.	Miss Mary A. Haley, 117 Summer St.

### Hospitality

Mrs. William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St.	Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury, Benton Road.
William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St.	Mrs. H. M. Heald, 438 Broadway
	Mrs. F. D. Lapham, 3 Hathorn St.

### Recrology

Professor D. L. Maulsby, 80 Curtis St.	Miss E. A. Waters, 132 Perkins St.
	Rev. Francis A. Gray, 202 School St.

### Historic Sites

Joseph O. Hayden, 174 Summer St.	Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.
	Aaron Sargent, 290 Broadway

### Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Wakefield	Miss Florence E. Carr, 89 Oxford St.
Seth Mason	William E. Brigham, 4 Hillside Ave.
	Mrs. J. F. Ayer, Wakefield

### Library and Cabinet

Levi L. Hawes	Mrs. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.
	Mrs. Ellen P. Angier, Temple St.

### Photographs

Benj. F. Freeman, 2 Mt. Vernon St.	Albert L. Haskell, 422 Somerville Ave.
James F. Whitney, 40 Dartmouth St.	Mrs. C. L. Maynard, 14 Greenville St.

### Dress

William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St.	Miss Anna P. Vinal, 9 Aldersey St.
	Mrs. Ella R. Hurd, 458 Medford St.

### Clippings

Mrs. Chas. D. Elliot	Miss Mary E. Elliot
Mrs. Ella R. Hurd	Miss Annie S. Gage

### Auditors

Charles D. Elliot	F. D. Lapham
-------------------	--------------







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Amherst Historical Society

Amherst, Mass.

October, 1907

Vol. VI

No. 3







## CONTENTS.

	Page
ORIGINAL ENGLISH INHABITANTS AND EARLY SETTLERS IN SOMERVILLE. — (II.) <i>Aaron Sargent</i>	49
COMPANY E 39TH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, IN THE CIVIL WAR. — (III.) <i>From Diary of John H. Dussault</i>	56

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, *postpaid*.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and  
Caretaker Alfred Morton Cutler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all  
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. VI.

OCTOBER, 1907

No. 3

## ORIGINAL ENGLISH INHABITANTS AND EARLY SETTLERS IN SOMERVILLE.—(II.)

By Aaron Sargent.

The successors of these first inhabitants, those who erected their domiciles here, and whose descendants came down the generations, indigenous to the soil, were the first real settlers in Somerville. The present intent is to follow down, genealogically, these early settlers; but no attempt has been made to trace the descent of those who came hither later than the eighteenth century.

James Miller, son of Richard, both previously mentioned, was probably born here, as his father was an inhabitant in Gibbons-field, and the son probably lived in the same locality. He married Hannah, daughter of John George, of Charlestown. His two sons, who lived to manhood, were James and Richard. Richard may have lived in Somerville, but left no descendants here. His brother James lived in the southerly part of the town. He married Abigail, daughter of Joseph Frost, of Cambridge. James, son of James and Abigail, married, first, Sarah Lane, and second, Sarah Waters, and was slain by the British April 19, 1775. Their son Joseph married Eunice Coolidge. The descendants of Richard Miller now living here are through Joseph's sons, Joseph and Thomas, twelve persons.

John Kent was the next early settler. He came from Dedham in 1673, having six years or more before married, as already stated, Hannah, daughter of Francis Griswold. Perhaps he lived at the West End, where his father-in-law had possessions. Of his eleven children, only one—Joseph—was a resident in Somerville.





He married Rebecca, daughter of Stephen Chittenden, of Scituate. Joseph, at the time of his death, had eight several parcels of land in Somerville—seventy-four and one-half acres at Winter Hill. He owned four female negro slaves, and bequeathed them to children, one to a child so long as the supply held out. Samuel was the only one of his nine children who remained in Somerville. He married Rebecca, daughter of Joseph Adams.

Three of the children of Samuel remained in Somerville: Sarah and Rebecca, who married successively Nathaniel Hawkins, and Lucy, who married Joseph Adams. Lucy's descendants are the only posterity of John Kent now in this city—five persons.

John Fosket, 1677, married a daughter of Robert Leach, as already stated, and may have lived here, but none of his descendants are now here.

Joseph Phipps, 1685, was son of Solomon, who may have lived in Somerville. Joseph probably lived in the Highfield. He married Mary, daughter of Samuel Kettle, and their son Samuel, town clerk in 1726, had wife Abigail. He had a homestead in the Highfield, which descended (or, at least, a part of it) to his son Joseph, who sold to Benjamin Stokes the mansion and nine and one-half acres of land; and the family soon became extinct in Somerville. The heirs of Stokes sold to the Catholic church in 1829. About thirty years ago the church sold the property, and the hill was leveled. It is now a barren waste.

Charles Hunnewell, 1700, or thereabouts, son of Richard, of Boston, married Elizabeth, daughter of James Davis. He occupied in 1737 the Gershom Davies farm of seven acres, on the south side of Winter Hill. Their eldest son, Charles, married a second wife—Margaret Patten. Their son William married Elizabeth, daughter of Isaac Fillebrown, and their son William married Sarah, daughter of William Frothingham. All the seven children of William and Sarah were undoubtedly born here. James certainly was, for he told me so, and in his will he says: "Somerville, my native place." None of the children remained here. The five sons of William, William, Thomas,





Joseph, Charles, and James, lived within the peninsula. James Hunnewell, the youngest son, was a merchant and ship-owner in Boston, a pleasant and honorable man of business. By reading his will, one can see that, had circumstances favored, our public library might have received a large share of his estate; but the circumstances were unfavorable.

There are now eighteen descendants of Richard Hunnewell in this city. If there are more, they are unknown to me.

Caleb Crosswell, 1700, son of Thomas, had possessions on both sides of the "Road to Cambridge," and probably lived there. His four sons did not live in Somerville. They were Thomas, who was a barber; Andrew, a "gentleman"; Benjamin, a saddler; and Joseph, a wig-maker and clergyman. A diversity of occupations, surely.

Jean, or John, Mallet, about 1703, of Powder House fame, may have lived in Somerville, as he had ten acres of land here. He had four or five sons and two daughters. His son Andrew had a house and ten acres of land east of Winter Hill. The family became extinct in this vicinity in the fourth generation.

Peter Tufts, about 1727, son of John, was of the third generation of the Peter Tufts family of Malden, and lived at Milk Row. The descendants in Somerville of the senior Peter Tufts and his wife, Mary Pierce, the progenitors of the family on this side of the Atlantic, are through their sons James and John and daughter Elizabeth. Either Peter Tufts, Sr., the father, or Peter Tufts, Jr., the brother, of these three had an "orchard home" near Wildridge's Hill, more than a quarter of a century before the third Peter was at Milk Row. The junior Peter probably had no issue here.

So much information about the Tufts family has been given by Dr. Edward C. Booth in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, by the late Thomas B. Wyman in his Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, and by the late William H. Whitmore in his Medford Genealogies, that further attempts at this time seem unnecessary. The descendants of the progenitors now living in Somerville are one hundred and thirteen in number, enough to found a colony.





Ebenezer Shed, 1727, perhaps lived on or near the "Road to Cambridge," now Washington street, as he had possessions in that locality, on both sides of the road, near Wildridge's Hill. The family became extinct here in the third generation.

William Rand, 1758, was in the fifth generation of the Robert Rand family. He had two sons, William, who may have lived in Woburn, and Thomas, who lived in Somerville. Descendants here are all through Thomas, thirteen in number.

Peleg Stearns, 1761, had a homestead and possessions in the Highfield. His only child, Dr. William Stearns, married Sarah White Sprague, and they had nine children. The homestead was on the northeasterly side of Broadway, near the Charlestown line, and the house is still standing. Besides their possessions in the Highfield, they had land on the southerly side of Washington street, near the Charlestown line, and in Polly's Swamp. Two of the descendants of Peleg Stearns are now in Somerville.

Joseph Adams, 1770, was of the fifth generation of the John Adams family, of Cambridge, and the fourth Joseph in lineal descent. Two Josephs in lineal descent followed him. He lived on the northwesterly slope of Winter Hill, in what is now known as the Magoun House; and it is still occupied by descendants. Major Joseph Adams married, first, Lucy, daughter of Samuel Kent, and second, Sarah, daughter of Peter Tufts. John Adams' descendants now living here are twenty-six in number.

Jonathan Teele, 1776, son of Samuel, was of the fourth generation of the William Teele family of Malden, and he lived in the upper part of the town, and posterity are still living there. He married Lydia, daughter of Ammi Cutter. The descendants of William Teele now living in this city are nineteen in number.

John Stone, 1782, son of Jonathan Stone, Jr., of Medford, was of the sixth generation of the Stone family of Watertown. He married Mary, daughter of Nathaniel Tufts. Their children, who lived in Somerville and have issue here, were: Nathaniel T. Stone, who married Sarah, daughter of Thomas Rand; Hannah A., who married David A. Sanborn; and Lydia, who married Robert Vinal. Seth Stone, a brother of John, married another Mary Tufts, and although he lived elsewhere, has descendants





here through his daughter Susanna, who married Benjamin Tufts. It would seem to be difficult for a person living in Somerville, and of Puritan stock, to run his or her line of ancestry back without striking a Tufts. The posterity of the progenitor now living in Somerville are twenty-four in number.

Samuel Cutter, 1783, son of Samuel, was of the fifth generation of the Richard Cutter family of Cambridge, and lived in Somerville. Three sons of Samuel, Jr., Edward, Fitch, and Ebenezer F., lived on the Winter Hill road, toward Charlestown, and Samuel, their eldest brother, lived within the peninsula. A daughter of Francis, brother of Samuel, Sr., Charlotte W., married Abraham M. Moore, of Somerville. Ephraim Cutter, 1791, son of Ammi, was of the fifth generation, and lived on Prospect Hill. If he has descendants in this city, they are unknown to me. Lydia Cutter, sister of Ephraim, married Jonathan Teele, of Somerville. Rebecca Cutter, daughter of William, was of the third generation, and married Joseph Adams (the second Joseph), of Cambridge.

The descendants of Richard Cutter now living in this city are seventy-four in all.

Philemon Russell, probably in 1789, as he was in the census of that year. His possessions in Somerville were near Alewife Brook. He was son of Joseph, who may have lived in the same locality, and who was of the fourth generation of the William Russell family of Cambridge. Philemon Russell married Elizabeth, daughter of David Wyman. His eldest son, Philemon Robbins, married Martha, daughter of Isaac Tufts, a member of the ubiquitous Tufts family. The descendants of William Russell now living in this city, all through Philemon R. and wife Martha, are sixteen in number.

Nathaniel Hawkins, 1783, married, first, Sarah, and second, Rebecca, daughters of Samuel Kent, as previously mentioned. His sons, Christopher and Guy Carleton, resided here, but the family is now extinct in Somerville.

Joseph Barrell, 1793, or thereabouts, owned a dwelling house and a large tract of land south of Washington Street, which became known as Cobble Hill. His daughter Hannah married





Benjamin Joy, who came in possession and in 1817 sold the most elevated part of the land; and the McLean Asylum buildings were erected thereon. The remaining part of the land and the house were known in my early days sometimes as the Barrell farm and sometimes as the Joy farm, and the dwelling house is well remembered. None of Barrell's heirs are now here.

This completes the list of the original English inhabitants, all in the seventeenth century, about twenty-five in number, and the early settlers, down to the close of the eighteenth century, about twenty in all. If the collection seems small, let it be borne in mind that Somerville was a sparsely-populated district, and that many farms were owned by residents within the peninsula, some in Cambridge, and a few in Malden. Indeed, in the nineteenth century and in my time it was a common sight, late in the afternoon of any summer day, to see cows from Somerville passing down Main Street in Charlestown to their owners' homes. The number of adult inhabitants here in the first two centuries could not have been at any time more than two hundred and fifty. It was not my intention to cross a second century line, but interest increased, as other names came to the surface. In the forty-second year of the nineteenth century, when the town commenced its legal existence, there were only about ninety resident real estate owners, and the population was one thousand and thirteen. The non-resident real estate owners numbered about forty. Of the ninety resident real estate owners, nineteen were descendants of the original English inhabitants through the early settlers, five were descended from the early settlers, thirteen were new-comers whose posterity are now here, and about fifty-three were new-comers who probably left no issue in Somerville.

There are now resident in this city one hundred and forty-four descendants of the original English inhabitants and ninety-four of the early settlers. Of the former, one hundred and thirteen are of the Tufts family, twelve are of the Miller family, of whom ten are also of the Tufts family, and are included in the number so given, and five are of the Kent family, and are also of the Tufts family, and are included in this family number.





Nine were of the Palgrave family, eighteen were of the Ezekiel Richardson family, and two were of the Goble family.

In 1842, the year in which the town of Somerville was incorporated, the prominent men were: John S. Edgerly, of blessed memory, a selectman the first year and for eleven years subsequently, and chairman of the Board a part of the time. Mr. Brastow, afterwards the first mayor of the city, gave Mr. Edgerly the sobriquet of "Winter Hill eagle," because he lived at the top of the highest elevation in Somerville. The second person to name is Charles E. Gilman, who was town clerk in 1842, and the faithful town and city clerk forty-six years consecutively and till the time of his death. John C. Magoun was an assessor in 1842, and for thirty years subsequently. He was an overseer of the poor twenty-two years. Edmund Tufts was town treasurer and collector of taxes the first year, and the sum total that passed through his hands was \$4,993.97. Other prominent men the first year were Nathan Tufts, Caleb W. Leland, Guy C. Hawkins, Alfred Allen, Levi Russell, Charles Miller, Francis Bowman, Columbus Tyler, Robert Vinal, Thomas J. Leland, Joseph Clark, Dr. Luther V. Bell, James Hill, Captain Edward Cutter, Fitch Cutter, Orr N. Towne, Colonel Samuel Jaques, of Ten Hills Farm renown, Clark Bennett, Samuel T. Frost, and George O. Brastow, all passed away.

To continue the narrative down the generations would be foreign to my purpose and fail of historic interest, and I close the book.





## COMPANY E, 39TH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, IN THE CIVIL WAR.—(III.)

[Diary of J. H. Dusseault—Continued.]

May 7. At an early hour our forces were turned out to strengthen the long line of breastworks. There was not much firing between the two armies till 8 o'clock. From that time heavy skirmishing and the thunder of artillery continued all day. At 5 p. m. our division went to the rear, about a mile, and had supper. It must be understood that our division was the advance of the Army of the Potomac from the Battle of the Wilderness till that of Spottsylvania, and this was the beginning of the movement which led up to the latter conflict. Those who took our places kept up the skirmish while we were marched off towards Spottsylvania. We started at 9 p. m., and began one of those famous left-hand flank movements of General Grant's. We marched all night, and halted at 5 a. m. on May 8. At 6 o'clock we were near Alsop's Farm. Moving forward a mile, we found the enemy's cavalry disputing for the road with our cavalry. Thereupon the regiment (Thirty-ninth Massachusetts), with the rest of the brigade, was ordered to support the cavalry. A bayonet charge was made which drove their cavalry, then a battery, and finally brought us face to face with the enemy's infantry strongly posted behind breastworks. It seems that Longstreet's Corps had started out about the same time we had. He had been wounded and Anderson was in command.

The enemy had the start of us, and they were also superior in numbers, as they had a whole corps, and we only a division. After a hard fight, the Union forces were obliged to fall back over an open field. In this action the Thirty-ninth Massachusetts came off with ninety-three men killed, wounded, and missing. Company E lost William D. Palmer and had five men wounded, viz: Thomas Hyde, John E. Horton, George A. Northey, who was captured by the enemy, William J. Arnold, and John H. Dusseault (originally of this company), who was wounded in the breast, but providentially saved by an army





button. His diary says: "I was within thirty feet of the enemy's breastworks, and when hit I was sure I was killed, as the force of the blow caused me to spin round and round like a top, and I fell to the ground. Finding I was not seriously hurt, I jumped up and joined in the retreat. We were driven back about a mile, when Griffin's division met us and stopped the retreat. This event happened about 9 o'clock in the morning. General Robinson, commander of our division, lost a leg in this action. When we came back we found Captain W. C. Kinsley, of Company K, in tears. 'Look at my company!' he cried, 'only seven left out of eighty-seven!' But he was assured that the woods were full of our men, and that his would be in shortly. It proved to be so. We were not called on for the rest of the day, and that night the men obtained some sleep."

Lieutenant Dusseault has a very distinct remembrance of General Grant as he appeared on the first day of the Wilderness, May 5. It was unfortunate for the Union forces that these two battles accomplished so little. Our side lost two or three men to the enemy's one. From May 4 to January 1, 1865, General Grant lost more than eighty-nine thousand men; General Lee had only ninety thousand altogether.

The Battle of Spottsylvania began at Alsop's Farm May 8. May 9 we turned out at 3 a. m., drew our rations, and went to the right. Meanwhile our guns were playing on Lee's wagon train, which was moving to our left. There was not much fighting this day. Beginning with the day before, we built not less than three lines of breastworks, one during the night, one at early dawn, and one that day. General Sedgwick, a regular army man, and the commander of the Sixth Corps, was shot that night. This sad event occurred just in front of our position. Later that same night—and it was a dark one, too—I was detailed to go back to the Ordinance train for ammunition. I had sixty men from the five different regiments of our brigade to help me. I was ordered to bring twenty-five thousand rounds (twenty-five boxes). We had secured the requisite amount and were returning to the brigade in the thick darkness. As it took two men to carry a box, which was supported on a blanket between them, it was im-





possible to keep the men together, and as I did not know them, many of them dropped their burdens and ran away. When we got back to our camping place we learned that the brigade had moved on a mile and a half farther. When I came up to my superior officer, I had but seven boxes to deliver to him. Rousing from his sleep, he ordered me to go back immediately and secure the rest, and then turned over and went to sleep again. It had to be done, and about 2 or 3 o'clock in the morning I reported the second time, not with the lost boxes, but with enough others that had been obtained in a way which I will not stop to explain.

May 10. At Laurel Hill. Here we engaged again with the enemy, and occupied a position in front of a line of works, while the firing of musketry and artillery went on over our heads. Thus we remained for seven hours, making no active demonstration. The Union side suffered heavy loss from the artillery. About dusk we made a charge, but were repulsed. That day nine of our regiment were killed and forty-six were wounded. Corporal Samuel O. Felker and Private Robert Powers, of Company E, were killed by the same shell. Lieutenant Mills and George R. Harlow were wounded. Lieutenant Dusseault was also wounded, in the left elbow. We lay in the woods that night and kept pretty quiet.

May 11. Not much fighting, as rain set in at 5 p. m. and continued all through the night.

May 12. Still raining. Heavy firing on our left. Hancock's Corps (the Second) had charged the enemy's works at daylight; these were captured and a whole brigade of troops. But the works had to be abandoned later, as we could not hold them. At noon that day we were ordered back to the place from which we made our charge on May 10. The only difference was that two lines were in front of us now; on May 10 we were in front. Both of these lines broke, however, and we were ordered out, and moved to the left into some breastworks. At this time there were lost out of Company E David Gorham and William Odiorne, both being wounded. Lieutenant Dusseault received a slight wound in the right arm.





May 13. Our division went to the rear about 8 a. m., but in about an hour we moved forward into breastworks again, and lay there all day. The enemy were within firing distance. At 10 p. m. we fell into line and marched all night, to the left. The roads were in very bad condition, owing to the recent rains. We crossed two small streams—the Po and the Ny—and halted at 6 a. m., having made but seven miles.

May 14. We did not do much this day, on account of the deep mud. The enemy shelled us, but we did not return the compliment. By this time it must be understood the men had thrown away or lost their shelter tents, and had left behind almost everything of their outfits, except their rubber blankets. At 9 p. m. we turned in, as often, under the open canopy of heaven.

May 15. We turned out at 7 a. m., keeping quiet all that day, but expecting an attack. The enemy, however, made no demonstration. Had a good night's sleep. We were still at Spottsylvania, for our progress had been in a circular direction. The town, which consisted of a court house and a few other buildings, was two or three miles in front, where the enemy were.

May 16. There was very little firing.

May 17. Very warm weather. We marched to the right and threw up more breastworks.

May 18. Pleasant and warm. I was detailed for picket at 9 a. m. Our brigade moved to the left, and the pickets joined the regiment. There was heavy cannonading, and shells were striking all around us. About 3 p. m. we moved to the right, and at 11 p. m. marched back to the breastworks which we built the night before. Fighting that day was going on mostly upon our right.

May 19. We lay in the breastworks all day; pickets were drawn in at 5 p. m., when the Rebels began to shell us. Our batteries opened on them, and they soon ceased firing. The hard fighting on our right continued. Early's Corps made a charge on our wagon train, which was in our rear, by coming around on our flank; our troops met and repulsed this charge, but there was a heavy loss on both sides. The First Division of





our corps was in this fight, the First Massachusetts Artillery being in the thickest of it. We were fortunate enough to get some sleep that night.

May 20. All was quiet.

May 21. We turned out at 4 a. m., moving to the left at 10. The enemy began to shell us, and we moved back. A little past noon we again moved to the left, marching thirteen miles to Guinness Station. Heavy firing ahead of us. The whole army has left Spottsylvania now, and our corps is in the rear. A very hot day.

May 22. After a good sleep, we turned out at 3 a. m., lay under arms till 11 a. m., when we marched twelve to fifteen miles, as far as Bull's Church. A very hot day again. We find ourselves out of rations.

May 23. Turned out at 4 a. m., marched at 5.30, about twelve miles, and halted near North Anna River. This was at 10 o'clock. At 3 in the afternoon we crossed this river. About a half-hour later, when part of our corps was over, Hill's Rebel Corps charged us. The river here has high banks on both sides, in some places thirty to fifty feet high, so that we could not retreat without heavy loss. Our opponents came within six or eight feet of us, then broke and went for some woods. We pursued, but as it grew dark we fell back out of the woods for fear of an ambush. Company E had two men wounded, Corporal George Myers and Private William Moulton. The enemy's loss must have been considerable. We lay close to the river all night and all the next day (May 24). Our skirmishes advanced, but found no enemy except Rebel stragglers, who were coming in all day. We turned in at 9, as a storm threatened.

May 25. As it happened, there was no rain, so we were turned out at 3. An hour later we marched about a mile to the left and threw up breastworks. Smart skirmishing was going on in front of us. That afternoon our artillery shelled the enemy. They made no reply, but their sharpshooters picked off a number of our men. We lay quiet all that night.

May 26. We turned out at 4 in a rain which continued an hour or more. Heavy skirmishing went on nearly all day. We





moved at 9 a. m., under orders not to speak a word above a whisper. This was a hard march. About 1 o'clock we recrossed the North Anna, and at 2.30 p. m. halted to draw three days' rations, which we were told must last for six days. An hour later we moved again, and marched almost continuously till 8 o'clock the next morning, when we halted for breakfast. At 11 a. m. the march was resumed. (All this marching was a left flank movement.) At 7 p. m. we arrived at Hanover town. This ended a hard march of twenty-two hours. We had not had our clothes off in twenty-four days. No one thought of washing his face much less of taking a bath. It can be imagined in what a filthy condition we were. This state of things lasted from May 4 to June 16.

May 28. We turned out at 4 and marched at 6, crossing the Pemunky River near Newcastle. We halted three miles from the river, built breastworks, and passed the night. Richmond was about fifteen miles from us.

May 29. The march was resumed at 10 a. m., and two miles were covered. Our regiment passed along the line of works to the extreme left, to guard some crossroads; here breastworks were constructed, and the regiment went on picket. It added to the discomfiture that we were out of rations.

May 30. The regiment came off picket duty and rejoined the brigade, which had been left alone, at 8 a. m., and after a short march we overtook the main column. The enemy had been found near Bethesda Church, and our troops were placed in line of battle. Our regiment was assigned its position, skirmishers were thrown out, and works thrown up. In the afternoon the skirmishers engaged with the enemy, and were able to hold their line. This was to be the condition of things for our regiment until June 5.

May 31. We were in line of battle early, and some skirmishing took place. Lieutenant Dusseault was detailed to go on the line. For the benefit of the uninitiated, it is explained that the officer and his men, five paces apart, are supposed to push as near the enemy as possible, nearer, of course, in the woods than in open ground; every man seizes his opportunity from rocks or trees to move up nearer.





Thus ended the month of May, 1864, but to describe all the experience of those thirty-one days would be impossible. Suffice it to say, some of them were perfectly terrible. The whole army had been on the move since May 3, a state of things which was to continue until June 16.

On the skirmish line that night I became completely exhausted. We were now a mile and a half in advance of our main line. The sergeant with me was of the One Hundred and Fourth New York. I left him in charge, lay down and went to sleep. About midnight, when it was "dark as pitch," he roused me with the words: "They are coming! They are coming!" It seems the enemy were marching in one long, steady column towards our right. They were so near we could hear their voices, and their tramping shook the earth where we lay. In the morning we found their earthworks empty, and we so reported it at headquarters.

June 1. The day was pleasant, but a hot one. As I have stated, our skirmish line, about a mile and a half from our main force, was in the woods and close up to the enemy. At day-break when we found their works vacated, I reported to division officer of the picket, Major Pierce, of the Thirteenth Massachusetts, who ordered me to advance my line. But just as I was about to do so we found the enemy were moving back to our left. They passed within three hundred feet of our picket line, which thus found itself in a rather delicate situation. It is safe to say their flankers came as near as two hundred feet, and we did not dare to move during the hour or more which it took them to pass. There must have been five or six thousand of them. Finally they halted and slipped into their old works. Just then the Ninth New York Regiment, deployed as skirmishers, advanced to relieve us. They made so much noise that the enemy fired, and several of the New York boys were killed or wounded. The enemy must have thought it was our whole line advancing, for they shelled the woods in great shape. We lay close, but when there came a lull, we would fall back, and thus gradually regained the regiment, where we went to building earthworks. About 7 p. m. we moved to the left into an open field, where we threw up a new line of works. This made the eighteenth line of





breastworks since we started on this campaign, May 3. This is known as the battle of Cold Harbor. We were more fortunate than the Second and Eighteenth Corps (Hancock's and Baldy Smith's), which had the brunt of the battle. It will be remembered that the Eighteenth Corps was part of General Butler's army which joined us here, coming up from the South. Both corps were on our left. There was a terrible fight on all that day till 9 p. m. We could hear the roar of it all. The Union loss was about ten thousand men. Later General Grant acknowledged that the attack of Cold Harbor was a mistake.

June 2. At daybreak minie balls began to fly over our heads. Our skirmish line advanced and drove the enemy into the woods. About 6 o'clock that morning they charged Cutler's Division of our corps, which was at our left, and the Thirty-ninth Massachusetts was ordered to their support. The enemy was repulsed. That day, the second day of Cold Harbor, the cannonading was heavy, although most of the time it was raining, but that night all was quiet.

June 3. About 4 in the morning an artillery fight began, which continued nearly all day. For noise and tumult this surpassed anything I had heard up to this time. No one of Company E was injured. The weather cleared at 3 p. m., and there was comparative quiet until the next morning.

June 4. We were on the move, towards the left, till about noon, and took up our position in the works which we built June 1. All was quiet until 8 o'clock at night, when a fight began to the left of us; it lasted about an hour. Rain which began at 5 p. m. kept up all night.

June 5. We turned out at 4 a. m. and moved to the right in the midst of rain. Here we lay behind earthworks all day. Quiet prevailed until 8.30 p. m., when a charge was made upon our left. This attack was repulsed after an hour's fighting. At 9, or later, we moved again to the left, and halted at midnight near Cold Harbor, where we turned in for the night.

Monday, June 6. We turned out at 7 a. m. The day was warm and pleasant. At 6 p. m. orders came to be ready to march, but at 8 o'clock we were notified that we could pitch





tents. The teams came up, and the officers got at their valises. This was the first all day's rest since May 3.

June 7. We lay here (near Cold Harbor) all day. About noon orders came for us to pack up, but for some reason we did not march. At 6 p. m. we made camp, and turned in at 9. A quiet, restful day; some of the men drew new clothing.

June 8. Another quiet day, warm; the teams came up again; nothing doing.

June 9. Another day of quiet. Once in a while we hear the boom of a cannon, but it does not trouble us. The enemy are within one-half mile of our front. Doubtless some of their troops, as well as our own, were in motion somewhere, but we did not know of it.

June 10. We lay in our works all day; received a mail from home; turned in at 10 p. m.

June 11. We were called out at 3 in the morning, to march at 6, a distance of eight miles. We halted at 11 a. m. near Bottom's Bridge, on the Chickahominy River. Company B and Company H (mine) were detached for picket, and were stationed two miles from the bridge. I wrote home and enclosed a Richmond "Whig" of May 20. (It is to-day in a good state of preservation.)

June 12. We returned from picket at 11 a. m., and our regiment had an inspection by the brigade commander, Colonel Peter Lyle, of the Ninetieth Pennsylvania. This lasted a half-hour, after which we were ordered to fall in and stack arms. At 6 p. m. we were on the march again till 10.30 that night, when we halted for supper. This was a fine day, but pretty hot.

June 13. We resumed our march at 1 a. m., and crossed the Chickahominy near Long Bridge on pontoons just before daylight. There was some slight skirmishing. At 6 a. m. we marched for two hours, covering about two miles only, and formed in line of battle. We were now in White Oak Swamp, between the James River and the Chickahominy, and the skirmishing was lively. While the enemy were shelling us we threw up breastworks. It seems that they had charged on the right of our division in the forenoon, and our Third Brigade had given





way, but we managed to hold our line. Our division was alone here, as the balance of our corps was some distance in the rear. General Grant behind us was rushing his whole army across the peninsula to the James, while we in front were making this demonstration. Richmond was before us, but seven to ten miles away. Our action, of course, was a bluff. After dark we moved away very quietly, as we were under orders not to speak above a whisper. We marched all night, and came to a halt just before daybreak.

June 14. At 6 a. m. we were in motion again, and after covering six or eight miles, halted at 10 o'clock near Charles City Court House, not far from the James. During this time the Second Corps was crossing the river. We remained here, out of rations, the rest of the day, and turned in for a cool and comfortable night at 8 p. m. The next day, also, we kept this position, and nothing worthy of record happened, except that we drew four days' rations, and by 6 p. m. the Second Corps had finished crossing the river.

June 16. We were turned out at 2 a. m. for a march of about three miles, and halted at the banks of the James. Our brigade crossed on the transport "General Howard," and by 9 we were landed on the southern side. The Seventh Massachusetts were just about taking transports for home, as their term of service had expired. Our men had a bath in the James River, the first since May 3. At the least calculation, five thousand men were in the water with me. At 4 o'clock that afternoon marching was resumed until 10.30 p. m., when we halted in some woods and had supper. Ten miles must have been covered. (We were now on the right of our army. The left flank was now the front. When we crossed the Chickahominy we were in the advance, but when we came to the James we were in the rear.)

June 17. We turned out at 1 a. m. and marched at 3 a. m., as there was fighting on our front. At 9 o'clock we halted in the rear of some breastworks. Some of our army had come up against the enemy at Petersburg. At 6 p. m. we go forward again. All that night there is lively fighting on our front (the left). Lieutenant Wyman, of my company (H), and several





others are wounded. About midnight Captain Willard C. Kinsley is slightly injured in the head by a spent ball. We have no sleep that night. We are within two miles, good shelling distance, of Petersburg. Thus we spent Bunker Hill Day, 1864.

June 18. At 7 a. m. we advanced through woods and dug some pits, but went forward again, and at noon occupied the Norfolk Railroad at a point where there was a deep cut between banks that were twenty-five or thirty feet high. At 7.30 in the evening, when it was dark, we advanced rapidly across a ravine which was just beyond. In that short run two men of Company E were wounded, John E. Fuller and John O. Sullivan: George Farrar was wounded later the same day. Heavy skirmishing went on all that day, and an artillery duel in the afternoon. The officers had been ordered to brigade headquarters, where they were informed that there was to be a night attack. By this time our forces had taken two of the enemy's lines of works, and now we were expecting to charge on their third. But the order for some reason was changed to a left flank movement, which brought us on the other bank, where breastworks were again thrown up. Later we lay back of them in a position exposed to the enemy, who woke us next morning by firing at us from close range.

June 19. We lay in our works with shells and bullets flying around us all day. Our works were about five hundred yards from the enemy's, and our skirmishers were across the ravine on a side hill. As soon as it was dark we went to work on our entrenchments. (Comment: We made a mistake, in my opinion, that we did not charge the enemy that night, for it seems as if we could have gone into Richmond just as well as not. But Grant was with us, and the countermand must have come from him.)

June 20. I am twenty-four years old to-day. Last night we worked until 2 o'clock, and were turned out again at 4 this morning. The enemy's sharp-shooters are on the lookout for the man careless enough to show himself.

June 21. We are in our works all day; pleasant weather. I was detailed for picket at 9 p. m. As we were expecting a charge from the enemy, there was no sleep for picket or brigade.





June 22. I am on picket all day; still pleasant. Two of my detail were hit: Bardet, of Company A, in the head, and killed; Corporal Fitts, of Company H, in the foot. I was relieved at 10 p. m., and went back to my regiment. I had just reached it when heavy firing was directed right upon us.

June 23. A fine day, but warm. T. P. Harris, of my company, was hit in the head and killed at 8 a. m. There were rumors of a move to-day to some other part of the line, but we remained here all night.

June 24. Just before daylight we moved to the left, the enemy shelling us all the while. We were sent up to the first line to relieve a part of the Second Corps, and stayed there all day. The time of the Twelfth Massachusetts expires and they leave for home to-day. To-night, as on the previous nights, half of our men are kept awake, that we may not be taken by surprise. This state of things continued night after night.

June 25. We turned out at daylight. The recruits and reenlisted men of the Twelfth Regiment, one hundred and twenty-five in number, were transferred to our regiment. Company E, as it was reduced in numbers, had eighteen of them. At 8 p. m. there was an alarm, and we fell into line to receive the enemy, but they did not charge us.

June 26. Not much doing. We drew clothing, and turned in at 9 p. m. Pleasant and warm.

June 27. We turned out at 2 a. m., expecting an attack, but none was made. A shower of rain fell at 6 p. m. We turned in at 9 and had a good sleep. We were still so near the enemy that their pickets and ours could converse without raising their voices very much.

June 28. We turned out at 5 a. m. Quiet all day; hardly any picket firing. Orders came at 2 o'clock to pack up at 5. We threw up a new line of works near our picket line. The evening was cool and comfortable. We turned in at midnight.

June 29. Weather comfortable; all quiet; turned in at 9 o'clock.

June 30. Cool weather. We were mustered for pay at 9 a. m. All quiet, and we turned in at 10 p. m.





July 1. Cool and comfortable. We turned out at 5 a. m. Had a roll-call. The regiment received from the sanitary commission roast turkey, condensed milk, soft bread, lemons, and tobacco. Another quiet day, and we turned in at 9 p. m.

July 2. A very warm day, and a quiet one. There is a rumor that the enemy are leaving our front. We turn in at 9.

July 3. Another very warm day. I was detailed for picket duty at 6 p. m. No firing on our front.

July 4. A little rain about daylight. All quiet, but a picket line is a poor place to pass the "glorious Fourth of July." Relieved at 6 p. m.; returned to the regiment, and turned in at 11 p. m.

July 5. I wrote home and sent my diary. Turned in at 10 p. m. Quiet all night.

July 6. We turned out at 6. A pleasant but very hot day. The boys receive their mail. All quiet.

July 7. Another warm day. All quiet until 6 p. m., when we were relieving the pickets. The Rebels began to shell us, and several of our brigade were wounded. The firing ceased in about a half-hour, and the rest of the night was as usual.

July 8. All quiet to-day until 6 p. m., when an artillery duel commenced and kept up for a half-hour, but the shells went over our heads, doing no damage. Turned in at 9 p. m., as there was no further disturbance.

July 9. Another very warm day. The Rebels have fired on an average two shells every ten minutes, but all go over us. We turn in at 9 p. m.

July 10. We were turned out in lively fashion at 3 o'clock by minie balls zipping close over our heads. These were the first shots fired by the pickets since we occupied these works. They stopped at daylight. Turned in at 9, and quiet prevailed at night.

July 11. We turned out at 5, and everything was quiet until 5.30 in the afternoon, when the enemy began to shell us again. The first shell struck in our regimental headquarters, and exploded directly under our commanding officer, Colonel P. S. Davis, fatally wounding him. He died at 7 p. m. His mind





was clear, and he continued to converse and give directions up to the last. The surgeon of the Thirteenth, who was sitting with him at the time, was injured but slightly. Lieutenant-colonel Charles L. Pierson, afterwards General Pierson, succeeded to the command. Colonel Davis's body was embalmed and sent home, and there was a public funeral in Cambridge, where the Grand Army Post is named in his honor. His remains are interred in Mt. Auburn Cemetery.

July 12. We turned out at 1 in the early morning. I was detailed for picket, and went out at 2 o'clock, with about seventy-five to one hundred men, as was the general number from each brigade. We were relieved at 6 p. m. Our regiment was moved a little to the rear, into a new fort not yet finished. The men worked on this night and day till July 15. This fort covered about three acres, or enough space for a whole brigade. It was called Fort Davis, in memory of our late colonel. I have been in it twice in later years, in 1899 and in 1902. It is situated on Jerusalem Plank Road, a mile or more from Petersburg, and next to Fort "Hell" or Sedgwick. Fort MacMahon (Rebel), which our men called Fort "Damnation," was opposite. In building our fort, we dug a trench twenty feet wide and ten feet deep, and threw up the rampart on the inside. Thus there was eighteen or twenty feet of banking. The fort was dug square and with a diagonal through it. We had a magazine in the fort, and two wells were dug for supplying the men with water. Besides our brigade, we had with us the Ninth Massachusetts Battery, which suffered so terribly at Gettysburg. It was known as Bigelow's.

July 13. We turned out at 6 a. m. I was detailed for fatigue duty with sixty men from 3 to 6 p. m. This was the length of time the men would work upon the fort, when another squad would take their places. The work went on at night full as rapidly as by day.

July 14. I was detailed for fatigue duty again at midnight (morning), and worked till 3 a. m., when the whole brigade turned out, expecting an attack. But everything remained quiet, and we turned in at 9 p. m. The veterans and recruits of the





Thirteenth Massachusetts Volunteers were transferred to our regiment, one hundred and three in number.

July 15. We turned out at 4 a. m. and policed the grounds (i. e., cleaned them up); weather very warm. General Warren, our corps commander, laid out camp, and we pitched our tents accordingly. That day we held a Masonic meeting in one of our pits. Turned in at 9 p. m. and slept all night.

July 16. Out at 4 a. m. Cool weather and a quiet day. At the lodge meeting yesterday it was voted to pay the funeral expenses of the late Colonel Davis.

Sunday, July 17. Turned out at 4 a. m. Pleasant, warm, quiet. I was detailed for fatigue from 9 a. m. to noon and from 6 to 9 in the evening. A whiskey ration was given out to-day (given sometimes on fatigue a gill to each man). I had one hundred men that night, and there were eight canteens, or twelve quarts, for me to give out. I dealt out one-half gill, and so had four canteens left. I did this for fear some of the men would get intoxicated. I lay down with the whiskey under my head, and must have fallen asleep, for when I woke the whiskey was gone. It was easy to tell who stole it, for some half-dozen of the men were in a foolish condition. That day we had an inspection by the brigade commander. This was Sunday. Our chaplain was Edward Beecher French, an enlisted soldier, who was raised to chaplain. We did not have much use for him in that campaign, as little was done in the way of trying to hold religious services.

July 18. We turned out at 5 a. m. A few drops of rain fell towards dark, after a day of threatening weather. We have another inspection. Captain Willard Kinsley and I go down to a creek and take a bath. We get back about 9 p. m. (Our position here was seventeen or eighteen miles from the James River, and south of Richmond.)

July 19. We turned out at 5 a. m. I was detailed for fatigue, and relieved at 7 p. m. It rained all day. I had a letter from home, and wrote one in return.

July 20. We turned out at 5 a. m. Rain at intervals, but clearing at night. At 9 p. m. there was some firing on our picket line, probably a quarter of a mile in front of us. The enemy





kept up a heavy cannonading nearly all night. I turned in at midnight.

July 21. Turned out at 5. I am on fatigue duty again. About dusk the enemy cannonade us, and keep it up the greater part of the night. They were peppering Fort Sedgwick ("Hell").

July 22. Not much doing all day. We turned in and slept well all night.

July 23. We turned out at 5 a. m. Cool, pleasant weather. I am detailed on picket for forty-eight hours, beginning after dark. All quiet until midnight, when the enemy began a heavy cannonading on our right.

July 24. Cool and pleasant, all quiet until 4 p. m., when the enemy opened on us with their artillery. We didn't make much of a reply, as we were "sawing wood." They shelled our skirmish line some, which was unusual. One shell passed directly over my head and struck behind me, but fortunately did not explode. That night three men of my detail, Maine men, were wounded. The heaviest firing was at 6 p. m., as it rained hard till morning. We had a rough night.

July 25. They shelled us again to-day, but no one was hit. (Our opponents must have had very poor powder, for many of their shells refused to explode.) I was relieved at 8 p. m., and returned to the fort and regiment. The enemy threw a shell into our fort to-day for the first time.

July 26. We turned out at 6. Beautiful weather. The Second Corps moved out of the line to make a demonstration somewhere. (They returned the next day.) The Rebels shelled us from 5 p. m. to 10 p. m. They managed to put three shells into our fort, but no one was injured.

July 27. Turned out at 5 a. m. We are expecting an attack sure. Loads of ammunition have been brought up, and the men are more than ready. Heavy firing is going on at our right. Rumors are plenty. One man killed and two wounded on our picket line, men of our brigade, of the One Hundred and Fourth New York Regiment.





July 28. We turn out at 5 a. m. A dull day, with threatening rain. I was detailed for fatigue. All quiet through the day. At night I was detailed on picket. A quiet night. We were intending to advance our picket line, if possible, but the Rebels got the start by placing their videttes too near us.

July 29. Very warm. The enemy throw shells at daylight over our skirmish line, and again at 6 p. m. We on picket are relieved at 8 p. m. An order is given for the whole corps to turn out at 2.30 the next morning.

July 30. This order is obeyed, and our corps (the Fifth) moved to the right, into a trench just in the rear of the Ninth Corps, about a half-mile from our fort, and remained in line there with the Second Corps on our right. At 4.44 that morning there was a terrible explosion right in front of us. A tunnel four hundred and ninety feet long had been dug to a point under a Rebel fort, since known as "the Crater." It was blown up with about two hundred and fifty men. This fort was at the right of Fort Sedgwick—our right. This was a signal for all the guns on our side to open, and the cannonading was terrible. This lasted till 8 a. m. Our Ninth Corps rushed up and took the Rebel fort and their works, but about 2 p. m. the enemy re-took them. Besides being driven back, we lost fully four thousand men, and all through mismanagement. We—that is, the Second and Fifth Corps—never received an order to advance. As a piece of engineering the mine, which was under the direction of Lieutenant-colonel Pleasants, was well managed. That day the Northern army lost three men to the enemy's one. Who blundered? It is said that General Grant and General Meade did not take kindly to the plan from the first. Burnside, however, favored it. It seems as if Petersburg might have been taken then, instead of months later. That night the dead and wounded that had been lying between the lines all day, exposed to the glare of the hot sun, were brought in; most of them were in a terrible condition. We went back to the fort, and, except for the grumbling, everything went on as before.

[To be continued.]







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

January, 1908

Vol. VI

No. 1







## CONTENTS

THE 10TH ANNIVERSARY BANQUET, OCT. 29, 1907	Page 3
A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE SOCIETY	<i>William B. Holmes</i> 75
THE FIRST GOVERNMENT OF THE MASSACHUSETTS BAY COLONY	<i>Admiral Sargent</i> 78
SOMERVILLE, LIKE ROME, SITS ON HER SEVEN HILLS	<i>Mayor Charles A. Greenough</i> 80
MASSACHUSETTS, THE BRIGHTEST STAR IN THE NATIONAL CONSTELLATION	<i>Major Edward Glavin</i> 86
BY LAWS	86

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

## Somerville Historical Society

AT

### 19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and  
Custodian Alfred Morton Cutler, 254 Medford Street to whom all  
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

### PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAYES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. FARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

Vol. VI.

JANUARY, 1908

No. 4

## THE TENTH ANNIVERSARY BANQUET, OCTOBER 29, 1907.\*

The Somerville Historical Society celebrated its tenth anniversary on Tuesday evening in Unitarian Hall in a manner befitting the organization, when the traditions dear to the heart of Somerville citizens were recalled as the foundation for true civic pride and loyalty. An informal reception was followed by a banquet in the lower hall, after which came the speech-making. Although the attendance was not as large as anticipated, on account of the weather, many representative people of the city were in attendance. Chief amongst the evening's guests was Aaron Sargent, who was eighty-five years of age on the day of the celebration, and who found himself the recipient of numerous congratulations.

The banquet hall was adorned with flags, several of which are valued possessions of the society. A Betsey Ross flag, with thirteen stars, also several other colonial flags, graced the walls, and were objects of much interest. The various tables were strewn with pinks and ferns, and a large basket of flowers ornamented the head table. While the banquet, one of Hicks' excellent affairs, was being served, Green's orchestra discoursed a delightful programme of music.

Frank M. Hawes, president of the society, opened the speech-making with words of greeting to the tenth anniversary celebration, and called upon William B. Holmes, treasurer of the organization, for a sketch of the society.†

Aaron Sargent was next presented, and in his opening remarks expressed his great desire that a creditable Somerville history should be shortly produced. He then read a paper on "The First Governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony."‡

\*Arranged from the report published in the Somerville Journal, November 1, 1907.

†See page 75.

‡See page 78.





Mr. Hawes then called upon Charles D. Elliot to act as toastmaster. Mr. Elliot proved himself most adept in his introduction of the various speakers, and first referred to the letters of regret received from Admiral Merry, President Hamilton, of Tufts College, Professors Dolbear, Bolles, and Maulsby, and others who were expected.

The first toast proposed by him was: "Somerville, like Rome, sits on her seven hills, each crowned with an historic halo."\* This was responded to by Mayor Charles A. Grimmons, who was warmly applauded at the close.

He was followed by Major Edward Glines, whose toast was: "Massachusetts, the brightest star in the national constellation."† Mr. Glines brought the congratulations of Governor Guild as he spoke for the old Bay state in eloquent words.

John F. Ayer, former president of the society and founder of the Bay State League, was called upon as the "bard of Wakefield" to speak for the League, and opened his remarks by reading a rhyme merrily dedicated to Mr. Elliot.

Chief James R. Hopkins was asked to speak for "The Blessing of the Bay, the First Ship of Our Navy," and much interest was created in his remarks as he produced a large piece of log from the old wharf or way in the Mystic River, where the Blessing of the Bay was launched in 1631.

"In May, 1892," he remarked, "I left the Central fire station with William A. Perry and William A. Burbank, both members of the fire department. We called at the Forster School for the master, John S. Hayes. Together we went to the shore of the Mystic, near the Wellington Bridge. The time selected was when the tide was low. Getting down to the edge of the water, the mud was scraped from the logs and the axe driven in. The wood was soft, almost pulp, and had a strong odor of marsh gas. After getting all that was wanted, we returned to the Central fire station. There have been made from this wood three vases and two gavels. One of the gavels is possessed by the Masonic order, another by the Somerville Historical Society. No more of this wood can now be obtained."

Chief Hopkins referred to the grand ball at the incorpora-

---

\*See page 80

†See page 82





tion of the town in 1842, and closed by quoting the toast of Mrs. Nancy Thorning Munroe upon that occasion: "Somerville, her three hills, Spring Hill, Winter Hill, Prospect Hill. May her spring ever be fresh, her winter ever green, and her prospect ever glorious."

Miss Elizabeth A. Waters spoke for the charities of Somerville, on account of her connection with the Somerville Samaritan Society, the precursor of the Associated Charities. Her toast was: "The Good Samaritan."

Will S. Eddy, president of the Bay State League, and of the Medford Historical Society, spoke for "Medford, the Emerald of the Mystic," and Miss Mary E. Elliot spoke stirringly on "Woman and Patriotism." Leon M. Conwell, editor of the Somerville Journal, was the last speaker called upon, and made brief remarks upon "The Press—the Preserver of Passing Events and Moulder of Public Opinion."

After the speeches the president presented the basket of flowers from the head table to Mr. Sargent, and then brought the exercises to a close.

---

## A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE SOCIETY

By William B. Holmes

Mr. President, Guests and Members of the Somerville Historical Society:—

As upon all such occasions as this, it becomes the duty of those who still control its destiny to give an account of such events as have taken place in the past history of our Society, that duty has been assigned to me, but as the principal part of the time will be devoted this evening to the other speakers I will make only a brief outline.

As you are well aware, we have reached to-day our tenth milestone, and though ten years seem but a day when we look back on time, that short period marks many an important and pleasant period in any society.

Pursuant to a call made by circular June 17, 1897, by the late John S. Hayes, Esq., fifteen prominent citizens of Somerville met at the Public Library on the evening of June 29, 1897, and





a temporary organization was then made by the choice of John S. Hayes as chairman and Dr. E. C. Booth as secretary. After remarks made by those present and letters read from prominent citizens approving the movement, it was then and there voted "that it is the sense of this meeting that an historical society be formed, and that a committee be appointed to formulate a plan of organization and prepare a set of by-laws and present them for approval," which was done in the following October, 1897 (ten years ago to-night), and one hundred and thirty-five persons paid and signed the by-laws.

Hon. George A. Bruce was elected first president, together with an efficient council, and re-elected in April following, it being our first annual meeting, though he resigned August 24, 1898, while in office. All this was called a voluntary organization, and so it was voted in regular meeting assembled that the necessary steps be taken to incorporate this body under the laws of Massachusetts; the papers were prepared and signed, and sent to the Secretary of State, and so on the third day of November, 1898, which was one year later, certain subscribers met for the purpose of reorganizing under the state charter which had been granted, and then and there adopted by-laws and elected officers for the ensuing year. Charles D. Elliot was elected president; since then we have had John F. Ayer for four years and the present incumbent, Frank M. Hawes, for two years.

Step by step this little plant grew, fostered by material which very few communities are blessed with, but the leading spirit did not live long to see the results. John S. Hayes, our first chairman and founder, died March 7, 1898, during the first year of its existence.

The first literary treat given under the auspices of the Society was by Dr. John Fiske, of Cambridge, celebrated the world over in his department. It was given in Unitarian Hall on a Sunday evening before a large audience. His subject was "General Lee of Revolutionary Fame," whose headquarters during the siege of Boston in 1775 were in the old house on Sycamore Street, where we held our meetings for some few years.

December, 1898, there was held in Union Hall, Union





Square, an Historical Festival, continuing for one week, depicting various historic events in the life of our city and country, and which for its kind has never been equaled in this vicinity, and will long be remembered by those who attended. Since then the committee on essays has furnished for us at stated intervals each season a series of topics by persons celebrated in historical research, touching, not only upon every detail of value to our own city, but upon subjects interesting to the lover and student of bygone days, most all of which have been published in the Society's organ, called *Historic Leaves*. The first number was issued early in 1902, and although published at considerable expense to us, it has been steadfastly continued until the present day, in the belief that without such an organ there would be no permanent record of the Society's work. It may not be appreciated fully in our day, but in time to come many of its subjects will be of inestimable value, like the "Minutes of the Stamp Act," which could not be found, and were given up as destroyed, until some person eager for research discovered them in an old leaky garret in Baltimore and brought them to light, to the great assistance of history, and so I am in hopes that our efforts will be appreciated in time.

We read in our histories and school books, and hear from speakers in the pulpit and rostrum, about Concord, Lexington, and Bunker Hill, and these names are familiar to almost every child in America, but if in the future our own city receives its just deserts, Somerville will be coupled with them, for would you believe it, we have right here about us just as many sites of celebrated events.

On December 12, 1898, the Society met at the historic Tufts House (General Lee's old headquarters) for the first time, in the shape of a house-warming, having leased the same and furnished it with gifts received from the various members, and there our meetings were regularly held until May 1, 1905, when for various reasons it was deemed advisable to return to our apartments in the Public Library, where we have been ever since.

In 1899 a committee on Historic Sites was appointed, and through their efforts an appropriation was made by the city council, and certain tablets have been erected commemorating





localities and events in the early history of our city, and placed thereon, to the great interest of visitors and others.

Our membership is now near 200, comprising most of our leading people in education and public concern, and were we so fortunate as to be able to have a home of our own, where we could display our various historic gifts made to us by our people, we would no doubt become soon a celebrated landmark to both old and young, and a power among our celebrated institutions, and we live in hopes that we may yet receive from some patriotic and philanthropic person sufficient funds to realize a structure, or else money which will be a nucleus for a building fund, devoted to history, and where the sons and daughters of Revolutionary heroes may also find a home. What better building could be erected in our midst?

Like all organizations, death has entered into our midst, taking away some helpful workers. None will be more missed than our first vice-president, Luther B. Pillsbury, who died in 1905, and who was ever constant and interested in the growth of our Society. Also Mrs. Martha Perry Lowe, President Capen, of Tufts College, Quincy A. Vinal, and a few others. Having now covered the principal part of our doings the past ten years, we are working for still better results in the next decade to come.

---

## THE FIRST GOVERNOR OF THE MASSACHUSETTS BAY COLONY.

By Aaron Sargent.

This honor has been claimed for three persons,—Matthew Cradock, Roger Conant, and John Endicott. Perhaps none of them were entitled to the distinction. Matthew Cradock was the first governor of the Massachusetts Bay Company, formed in London in 1628 and 1629, the precursor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony in New England, for so the company became in 1630; but Cradock was not its governor. John Winthrop, by virtue of his having been the follower in London of Cradock, as second governor of the company, became the governor of the colony, its successor. Roger Conant came over seven years before Winthrop, and in 1627 was at Salem as governor, agent,





or superintendent of the Dorchester projected settlement of perhaps fifty persons, and he was nothing more. John Endicott came over in 1628, and was at Salem governor, agent, or superintendent of London's Plantation of about thirty persons, superseding, also, Conant, and he was nothing more at that time. "Honor enough there is for Endicott, the earliest patentee who came over under the indenture from the Plymouth Colony," says Savage, "without challenging for him any that does not belong to him. . . . Endicott is entitled to no more office than the Plymouth company gave by their deed of indenture." Bradford says that at Salem "Mr. Endecott had cheefe comand," and gives him no further title. In 1629 Endicott sent Ralph Sprague and a small company overland to Charlestown, where they formed a settlement, but they were no more the Massachusetts Bay Colony, or any part of it, at that time than was Thomas Walford, the only white man whom they found in that peninsula. Walford was called a blacksmith, but what he could find to do at his calling among Indians it would not be easy to tell, unless it was the delightful occupation of making tomahawks and scalping knives for the savages.

Winthrop, as governor, came over in 1630, with a company of about fifteen hundred persons, to Charlestown; and the Massachusetts Bay Colony commenced its existence in that part of the town which is now in Somerville. Cradock remained at home, but had possessions here, and the Cradock house at Medford was purchased some years ago by General Samuel C. Lawrence, for the laudable purpose of saving it from demolition, or perhaps from what might have been a worse fate.

The annual Manual of the General Court of Massachusetts for many years has contained, and still contains, a list of public officials, colonial and state, from the earliest time. The compilation from 1860 to 1870 was by Dr. Shurtleff, and Cradock is named as first governor in 1629, followed by Winthrop in the same year. In placing the governorship as above stated, Shurtleff, in part, followed Savage. The compilation for the thirty-two years from 1871 to 1902 was by David Pulsifer. For the first seven years, he says Endicott and Cradock were governors in 1629, and Winthrop in 1630. For the remaining twenty-five





years he omits Cradock, and names Endicott as governor in 1629, and Winthrop in 1630. Always Endicott first; but Pulsifer was a Salem man. The compilation from 1903 to the present time places Cradock, Endicott, and Winthrop as governors in 1629. Winthrop is called the "chief" governor, and Endicott the "local" governor; but it will not probably be claimed that these adjective prefixes were legal titles, or were even used or known at the time. None of the compilers, or Savage, make any recognition of Conant.

Matthew Cradock was not a governor of the colony as a fact, but only so by a lively imagination and misapplication of a title. Roger Conant was not a governor of the colony as a fact, but only so by family invention and easy credulity, and John Endicott was not the first governor of the colony as a fact, but only so by local pride and pleasant fiction.

Somerville, and not Salem, gave birth to the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

---

## SOMERVILLE, LIKE ROME, SITS ON HER SEVEN HILLS, EACH CROWNED WITH AN HISTORIC HALO.

By Mayor Charles A. Grímmons

"O Caesar, we who are about to die  
Salute you!" was the gladiators' cry  
In the arena, standing face to face  
With death and with the Roman populace."

And as the gladiator faced great odds, so I feel as I approach the consideration of so grand a subject as has been assigned to me.

Somerville, which our orators delight to couple with the seven-hilled city of antiquity, has some features which go beyond the suggestion of our toastmaster. I should enjoy bringing an old Roman to our good city. The 'L' road across the Charles might suggest the picturesque aqueduct of Claudius in the Campagna; the Sullivan-Square terminal, an arch of peace, through which, like the arch of Constantine and of Titus, traffic passes without ceasing. I would show him Roman lines in the archi-





ture of our fire stations, and assure him that the purpose of the occupants is to put out fires, rather than perpetuate eternal ones, as did the Vestals in their Roman fire house. On Central Hill I would show him our temples of learning, where his own language is taught to-day. I would show him our Public Library, where his histories are perpetuated—and the institution itself as a finished accomplishment of the objects of the Roman Tabularium. I would show him our City Hall, whose architecture would suggest to him his own temple of Castor and Pollux, where assembled the lawmakers, and the temple of Saturn, where were received the taxes, and where the finances of the empire were administered. Further down the avenue the Armory would suggest the temple of Mars, where, however, war is now taught as a preservative of peace. He would miss his wine shops and circuses, and in their places I would show him our churches, where is preached the Christianity which arose and spread from the catacombs of his native city.

In contrast to Rome's historic heritage of war and conquest, I would tell him of our patriotic heritage of heroism, in peace as well as in war. Recalling a Roman triumph to the nation's heroes, with all its barbaric splendor, I would tell him how Somerville, a few years ago, gave a banquet to her civic heroes; how we all accorded them a veritable triumph; how we marched in their triumphal procession, brought them to our Somerville forum, ate with them bread and salt in token of our lasting friendship; crowning them, as it were, with a chaplet of our appreciative commendation, which is more lasting than the laurel or the bay leaf.

I would show him our Old Powder House, coming down to us from Colonial days, contemporaneous with a long struggle for religious and political liberty. I would show him our Prospect Hill, where was raised the first American flag, and whose beautiful tower commemorating that event was the crowning accomplishment of Somerville's most brilliant administration.

I would acknowledge to him that in the statue of Marcus Aurelius Rome has the finest specimen of ancient monuments; so we on Central Hill propose to erect one of the finest monuments of modern times to the memory of Somerville's soldiers





and sailors who fought in our Civil War. In comparison with compulsory service, which maintained the Roman arms, and leaves only glory without existence, I would tell him that our monuments are the proud acknowledgement of a voluntary service and patriotic motive, which are so ideal that they will perpetuate existence as well as an undying glory.

I would call his attention to the fact of the replacement of paganism by Christianity, of license by morality, of drunkenness by temperance, of war by peace, of slavery by freedom, of imperialism and its abuses by a government of the people, and that nowhere could he find the latter better exemplified than in our own city of Somerville, where the term "public servant" means absolutely that, and in the greatest degree.

The seven hills of Rome, in the light of history and morality, are crowned in fact, as well as in fancy, with a miasmatic mist; our seven hills present its direct antithesis—in the language of my toast, "crowns of patriotic glory."

---

## MASSACHUSETTS, THE BRIGHTEST STAR IN THE NATIONAL CONSTELLATION

By Major Edward Glines

Before another month has come and gone a new star will have been added to that galaxy of stars which we call the United States of North America, but every addition of a new star upon our banner but gives additional lustre to the original thirteen, of which our own grand old commonwealth stands sixth in number.

To a citizen of Massachusetts called upon to sing her praises, it is a contemplation worthy of the best thought, the best mind, the best ability, and the best endeavor of which one is capable.

I would that it were in my power to express to you tonight the thoughts that must come to us all, and which involuntarily will seek expression, despite the inability to adequately give them voice. But it is a theme which I love, and which is dear to us all.

Massachusetts, representative of all that is highest, and noblest, and best in the history of that great republic which





stands at the forefront of the nations of the world, the character of her citizens is as sturdy as the rugged pines which grow upon her shores; her charities as wide as the world itself; her patriotism as pure as the love of a mother for her child.

In all human endeavor where self-sacrifice, where high and lofty purpose, where industry, and zeal, and patriotism have been required, Massachusetts has always been called upon, and has never been found wanting. First to shed her blood in the war of the Revolution and in our own terrible Civil struggle, first to respond in the late Spanish war; at the same time she has always been first in promoting the arts of peace; her schools, her colleges, and her institutions of learning thickly dot the hills and valleys of her broad expanse, and have disseminated light and learning throughout the broad domain of our republic.

Wherever among civilized peoples the name of Massachusetts has been known or spoken, it has always stood for what was highest and best in all that pertains to human advancement and happiness.

Her soldiers have shed their blood upon every important battlefield in every war that has been waged in the republic; her statesmen have adorned the halls of legislation, not only state, but also national, and have left their impress for good upon every page of our history.

Her judiciary has been second to none, not only in this free republic, but also in the monarchies of the old world, and the laws which they have interpreted stand to-day in the forefront of judicial decisions the world over.

Her ministers of the gospel have been noted for their depth of character, breadth of view, and religious fervor wherever the language is spoken or written, and her citizenship is generally acknowledged to stand pre-eminent for its breadth, intellectually, educationally, and humanely.

Had I the time, I could give innumerable instances familiar to you all of the illustrious names of men who have made Massachusetts great, but the time is too short, and I can only kneel with you at the altar of our love and affection and offer up my heartfelt tribute to the worth and greatness of my native state; to pay my tribute of love and veneration for the cherishing





mother to whom you and I owe a debt of gratitude for what we are and what we may become.

It is peculiarly fitting that in this beautiful city of Somerville, the brightest gem in Massachusetts' crown, that I, who have been so honored by you, should be permitted to speak the word which comes to the lips of us all in the praise of our grand old commonwealth. We stand here upon hallowed ground. These hills, now beautified and adorned by the habitations of man, once resounded to the shrill whistle of the bullet, the roar of the cannon, and the groans of the dying, who poured out their life's blood in the war of the Revolution that Massachusetts might live and continue to shine as a bright star in the wonderful constellation that was to be.

On these hills, within sight and sound of Bunker Hill, the sons of Massachusetts offered up their lives, their fortunes, and their sacred honor, if need be, to preserve to themselves and their children, and their children's children the precious jewel of liberty of which our own state of Massachusetts was the first and greatest exponent.

At the foot of these hills, in the valley of the Mystic, was built the vessel which we are proud to call the real beginning of the American navy; and over these hills and through these valleys the men of Massachusetts have walked barefoot and on frozen ground to wrest the sceptre from the hand of tyranny, to tear down and destroy the false god of monarchy, and in its place to erect a temple dedicated by the lives of men perpetually to human liberty.

In all the history of the world no grander encomium can be given to the people than that they dedicated their lives to the cause of liberty, of truth, and of justice; and from the time that the Pilgrims first set foot upon the historic rock at Plymouth until the present day, Massachusetts has stood and does stand pre-eminent for those qualities of heart, of mind, and of soul which will make of the world, if carried to their fullest fruition, what it was intended to be by its Maker—the Kingdom of God made manifest among men upon earth. Massachusetts—the brightest star in the national constellation. Somerville—the brightest gem in Massachusetts' crown.





## ARTICLE IV. DUES.

1. The membership fee shall be one dollar payable on enrollment, which shall include all dues until the next annual meeting.

2. The annual dues shall be one dollar, payable in advance.

**SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.**

4. Honorary and corresponding members shall be exempt from all dues.

---

**BY - LAWS.****ARTICLE I. NAME.**

The name of this Society shall be the Somerville Historical Society.

**ARTICLE II. OBJECT.**

The object of this Society shall be the collection and preservation of everything relating to the history and antiquities of Somerville, and incidentally of other places, and the diffusion of knowledge concerning them.

**ARTICLE III. MEMBERS.**

1. Any person who, after being recommended for membership by the council, shall be elected by a majority of votes at any meeting, and shall pay the membership fee, shall be a member of this Society.

2. Members may become life members upon the payment of fifteen dollars, which shall exempt them from further dues.

3. Honorary and corresponding members may be elected, upon recommendation by the council, by a two-thirds vote of the members present at any meeting. They may enjoy all the privileges of membership, except voting.





## ARTICLE IV. DUES.

1. The membership fee shall be one dollar payable on enrollment, which shall include all dues until the next annual meeting.
2. The annual dues shall be one dollar, payable in advance.
3. Non-payment of dues for two years shall forfeit membership.
4. Honorary and corresponding members shall be exempt from all dues.

## ARTICLE V. OFFICERS.

1. The officers shall be a president, three vice-presidents, a recording secretary (who shall be clerk of the corporation), a corresponding secretary, a treasurer, a librarian and curator, and three others to complete the council. All of these, except the president, shall be elected by written ballot of the Society.
2. The president shall be elected by written ballot of the council.
3. These shall constitute a council of eleven members, who shall have all the powers of directors. This council shall be invested with all the powers of the corporation, except as may be inconsistent with these by-laws or repugnant to the statutes of the Commonwealth. It may fill all vacancies.
4. The council shall appoint the standing committees of this Society, and shall define their duties.
5. Three members of the council shall be a quorum thereof.

## ARTICLE VI. DUTIES OF OFFICERS.

1. The officers of this Society shall perform the usual duties pertaining to their respective offices, and such other duties as may be otherwise stipulated in these by-laws.
2. The treasurer shall give a bond for the faithful performance of his duties, in such amount as shall be determined by the council, with sureties to be approved by the council.
3. The treasurer shall pay only upon the written approval





of the president and one vice-president. His books and accounts shall always be open to the inspection of the president, and to any committee appointed for the purpose by the council.

4. The treasurer, secretaries, and librarian and curator shall report in writing upon the work of their respective offices at each annual meeting.

#### ARTICLE VII. LIFE MEMBERSHIP FUND.

1. Fees received for life membership shall constitute said fund. Income accruing from said fund may be used for the general purposes of the Society.

#### ARTICLE VIII. MEETINGS.

1. The regular meetings of this Society shall be held on the first Monday evening in April and October, the meeting in April being the annual meeting.

2. Special meetings may be called by the corresponding secretary at the request of the president or at the written request of three members.

3. Ten members shall be a quorum.

#### ARTICLE IX. AMENDMENTS.

These by-laws may be altered or amended by a two-thirds vote of the members present at any meeting, notice whereof has been given in the call of such meeting.





# LIST OF MEMBERS PAST AND PRESENT

## Somerville Historical Society

†Mr. Herbert L. Adams	†Mr. Daniel E. Chase
†Mr. Winifred C. Akers	Mrs. J. Walter Christie
Mrs. Julia R. Aldrich	†Mr. Elijah C. Clark
†Mrs. Harrison Aldrich	†Mr. Herbert L. Clark
§Mrs. Hannah Allen	†Mr. Wilbur S. Clarke
†Miss Abbie A. Anderson	*Mr. Walter M. Coddington
Mrs. Ellen P. Angier	Mr. James Cohen
†Mrs. H. B. Armstrong	§Mr. Adelbert E. Cole
†Mr. Frank L. Arnold	†Mr. Charles W. Colman
†Mrs. E. C. Ashton	†Mr. Simon Connor
§*Mr. John F. Ayer	†Mr. William J. Corthell
§Mrs. John F. Ayer	†Mr. Edward Cox
Miss Frances M. Aymer	†Mr. Edward S. Cox
Miss Jane H. Aymer	†Mrs. Emma S. Cox
Mr. Oliver Bacon	†Mr. William H. Cushman
†Mr. Ernest W. Bailey	§* Mr. Alfred M. Cutler
†Mr. Harold C. Bailey	Mr. James R. Cutler
†Mr. Fred C. Baldwin	Mrs. Richard E. Cutler
†Mr. John N. Ball	*Mr. S. Newton Cutler
Mr. William L. Barber	§Dr. Charles K. Cutler
†Mr. William M. Barber	Mr. Charles X. Dalton
Mrs. Annie R. Barker	Mrs. Charles X. Dalton
Mr. James A. Barker	†Mrs. William E. Daniels
†Mrs. Sarah J. Battelle	†Mr. Samuel C. Darling
§*Mr. George L. Baxter	Mr. Joshua H. Davis
†Mr. Dana W. Bennett	†Dr. Roland A. Davis
†Col. Edwin C. Bennett	Mr. James F. Davlin
†§*Mr. James F. Beard	§*Mr. Howard Dawson
*Miss Alice Burt Berry	Mr. Israel H. DeWolff
†Mr. William H. Berry	*Mr. George H. Derby
Mr. Norman W. Bingham, Jr.	†Mr. Roswell C. Downer
†Mr. Edward A. Binney	†*Mr. Frank E. Dickerman
†Mrs. Elizabeth Blodgett	†Mr. George H. Dickerman
§Dr. E. C. Booth	Mr. Quincy E. Dickerman
†Mr. Belding B. D. Bourne	†Mrs. Quincy E. Dickerman
†Mr. Charles E. Bowers	†Prof. A. E. Dolbear
Mr. S. Z. Bowman	†Mrs. Nellie Bradshaw Downer
†Mr. Harry P. Bradford	†Mr. Edward W. Doyle
†Mr. Charles E. Brainard	Miss Sarah M. Draper
Mr. William E. Brigham	†Mrs. Alma L. Durell
†Mrs. Hannah S. Brine	Mr. John H. Dusseault
†Miss Nellie F. Brine	Mr. Samuel C. Earle
†Mr. William Percival Brine	†Miss Maverette E. Eddy
†§Mr. Elbridge L. Brooks	Mrs. Helen F. Ediefson
†Mrs. Elbridge L. Brooks	†Mr. Albert W. Edmands
Mr. George E. Brown	*Mrs. Lucy Stone Edmands
†§Hon. George A. Bruce	§*Mr. Charles D. Elliot
†Mr. Francis Boyer	Miss Clara Z. Elliot
*Mrs. Francis Boyer	§*Mrs. Emily J. Elliot
†Mr. William Buckley	Miss Mary E. Elliot
†Mr. Walter H. Bullard	Mrs. Charlotte P. Emerson
†Mr. John Haskell Butler	*Mr. John S. Emerson
†Pres. Elmer H. Capen	†Mr. C. C. Farrington
Mrs. L. P. Carlisle	†Miss Rebecca Fillebrown
†Mr. Allen F. Carpenter	†Mr. Frank E. Flits
†Mrs. Allen F. Carpenter	Mrs. Harriet A. Flitz
†Mrs. Emily L. Carr	†Mr. Otto Fleishner
Miss Florence E. Carr	*Mrs. Annie L. Fletcher
†Mr. Martin W. Carr	†Mr. William K. Fletcher
§Dr. A. C. Carvill	†Mrs. Mary B. Flint
Mrs. Harriett A. Chamberlain	†Mr. Warren F. Flint
†Mr. Russell T. Chamberlain	†Mr. J. Henry Flitner
*Mr. Leonard B. Chandler	*Mr. Charles C. Folsom
†Mrs. Annette F. Chapman	Mr. Sam Walter Foss
†Resigned.	*Life members.
§Charter members.	†Deceased.





- †Mrs. Mae D. Frazar  
 Mr. Benjamin F. Freeman  
 †Mrs. Charles H. Frye  
 †Miss Emma Frye  
 Mrs. Stephen M. Fuller  
 Miss Anna S. Gage  
 †Mrs. Barbara Galpin  
 †Mr. Merle S. Getchell  
 †Mr. Joseph J. Giles  
 †Mr. J. Frank Giles  
 †Mr. B. W. Gillette  
 \*Mrs. Eunice M. Gilmore  
 †Mr. Howard A. Gilson  
 †Mrs. Mary E. Gilson  
 †Mr. Valentine E. Gilson  
 \*Col. Edward Glines  
 Mrs. Elizabeth F. Goodrich  
 Mr. Frank W. Goodrich  
 Mr. George A. Gordop  
 †Mr. Henry C. Graves  
 Mrs. Emma Walter Gray  
 Rev. Francis A. Gray  
 Mr. Walter F. Grievies  
 †Mr. Nelson H. Grover  
 Mrs. Emma P. Hadley  
 Mr. Henry S. Hadley  
 Miss Mary A. Haley  
 †Mr. John E. Hall  
 Mrs. Alice S. Hanson  
 \*Mr. J. Torr Harmer  
 †Mr. Albert L. Haskell  
 †Mrs. Mary M. Haven  
 Mr. Frank M. Hawes  
 Mrs. Harriet F. Hawes  
 Mr. Levi L. Hawes  
 Mrs. Mary D. Hawes  
 \*Mr. Joseph O. Hayden  
 †Miss Edith B. Hayes  
 Mrs. Emma S. Hayes  
 †Mr. John S. Hayes  
 †Miss Lydia Y. Hayes  
 Mrs. Helen E. Heald  
 †Mrs. Charles M. Hemenway  
 †Mrs. Caroline E. Henderson  
 †Mr. John Herbert  
 †Mrs. Georgiana Hill  
 †Mr. Herbert P. Hill  
 Mr. William H. Hilling  
 †Mr. William H. Hodgkins  
 †Mr. Frank S. Holden  
 Mrs. Florence E. Holmes  
 Mr. John Albert Holmes  
 Mr. William B. Holmes  
 Mr. Charles W. Hopkins  
 Mr. James R. Hopkins  
 \*Miss Isabel F. Horne  
 †Mr. Frederick C. Hosmer  
 Mr. George M. Houghton  
 †Mr. J. C. Howard  
 †Mr. O. C. Hubbard  
 †Mrs. Anna H. Hunkins  
 †Miss Agnes M. Hunt  
 Mr. James F. Hunt  
 †Mr. Charles H. Hunter  
 Mrs. Ella Ruth Hurd  
 †Mr. George H. Ireland  
 †Mr. Fred D. Irish  
 Mrs. Ann E. Johnson  
 †Miss Edith Johnson  
 Mrs. Elizabeth T. Johnson (nee  
 Hammond)  
 †Mr. Melville D. Jones  
 †Mr. William P. Jones  
 Miss Mary H. Joyce  
 †Resigned.
- †Mr. Frank W. Kaan  
 †Mr. James E. Kelly  
 †Mr. Isaac B. Kendall  
 Mr. Andrew M. Kidder  
 Mr. Arthur T. Kidder  
 Mr. George A. Kimball  
 Mrs. George A. Kimball  
 Miss Marion Knapp  
 †Mrs. O. S. Knapp  
 †Mrs. Alice E. Lake  
 †Miss Elsie S. Lake  
 Mr. F. DeWitt Lapham  
 Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham  
 †Mrs. Anna S. Leighton  
 †Mr. James H. Leighton  
 †Mrs. Catherine Libby  
 Mr. Charles P. Lincoln  
 †Mr. Charles S. Lincoln  
 †Mrs. Emma A. Lincoln  
 Mr. Williston Lincoln  
 \*Mr. George E. Littlefield  
 \*Mr. Samuel T. Littlefield  
 Mrs. Samuel T. Littlefield  
 †Mr. Ernest S. Loring  
 †Mrs. Ernest S. Loring  
 †Mr. George F. Loring  
 †Mrs. Sarah F. Loring  
 †Mrs. Martha P. Lowe  
 Mrs. Mabel F. Luce  
 †Mr. Robert Luce  
 †Miss Eliza F. McKay  
 †Miss Mary M. McKay  
 †Mr. G. Roscoe Marsh  
 †Mr. George L. Marshall  
 \*Mr. Seth Mason  
 Prof. David L. Maulsby  
 Mrs. David L. Maulsby  
 Mrs. Caroline L. Maynard  
 †Mrs. E. A. Maynard  
 †Mr. Walter C. Mentzer  
 Mr. Fred H. Merrifield  
 Mr. Frank E. Merrill  
 †Mrs. May J. Miller  
 Mrs. Harriet G. Minot  
 †Mr. Walter H. Mitchell  
 †Mr. William P. Mitchell  
 Mr. Horace H. Morse  
 Mrs. John E. A. Mulliken  
 †Mr. Arthur B. Munroe  
 †Mr. Edwin F. Nealley  
 †Mr. William M. Newton  
 †Mr. G. Leslie Nichols  
 †Mr. John L. Nichols  
 †Mrs. John L. Nichols  
 Miss Mary E. Northup  
 †Mr. Thomas T. O'Malley  
 Mrs. Sarah M. Osgood  
 Mr. Henry D. Padelford  
 †Mr. Harold P. Palmer  
 \*Mr. Frederick W. Parker  
 Mrs. Frederick W. Parker  
 †Mrs. Clara B. Parkhurst  
 Mr. Melville C. Parkhurst  
 †Mr. Charles E. Parks  
 †Mr. Edward L. Pease  
 Mrs. Ella Worth Pendergast  
 Mr. George H. Pendergast  
 Mrs. Leila Colby Pennock  
 †Mr. Nathan L. Pennock  
 Hon. Albion A. Perry  
 Dr. Eugenie M. Phillips  
 Mr. Richard E. Pickthall  
 †Mr. Luther B. Pillsbury  
 Mrs. Mary A. Pillsbury

\*Charter members.

\*Life members.

†Deceased.





†Mr. Henry W. Pitman	†Mr. Elmer E. Tilden
†Mr. Chester A. Polsey	†Mrs. Elmer E. Tilden
*Mr. George S. Poole	†Miss Helen Tinker
†Mrs. Charles G. Pope	§†Rev. Anson Titus
†Rev. Levi M. Powers	Mr. Andrew Tower
*Hon. George O. Proctor	Miss Harriet E. Tuell
†Mr. William H. Ralph	§†Mr. Albert Tufts
†Mrs. William H. Ralph	†Miss Alice M. Tufts
§Hon. Frank H. Raymond	Mr. Francis Tufts
†Mrs. Clara B. Reed	Miss Martha B. Tufts
†Mr. Edwin F. Reed	†Mrs. Mary L. Tufts
†Mr. James F. Reynolds	Mr. Timothy Tufts
Mrs. R. H. Rhodes	†Mr. William Fuller Tufts
†Mr. Charles F. Rice	†Miss Minnie S. Turner
Mrs. Isaac Rich	†Mr. Augustus Underhill
Mr. Samuel T. Richards	†Mrs. Augustus Underhill
Mr. W. C. Richardson	Mr. Herbert E. Valentine
Mrs. W. C. Richardson	†Mr. William Veazie
Mrs. Carrie E. Robertson	§Miss Anna P. Vinal
Mr. Charles S. Robertson	§Miss Louise A. Vinal
†Mr. Albert M. Robinson	§Mrs. S. Augusta Vinal
†Mr. Warren J. Robinson	†Mr. Quincy A. Vinal
†Mr. Cromwell G. Rowell	†Mr. George I. Vincent
†Mr. Christopher E. Rymes	†Mr. Rufus R. Wade
†Mrs. Clara B. Sackett	†Mr. George M. Wadsworth
Mr. Stephen D. Salmon	†Miss Lizzie F. Wait
Miss Adaline L. Sanborn	†Mrs. Mary E. Walker
†*Mr. Charles E. Sanborn	†Mr. Lewis A. Wallon
†Mr. Clifton P. Sanborn	†Mr. W. Fred Walters
†Mr. Daniel W. Sanborn	†Mrs. W. Fred Walters
Mr. J. Walter Sanborn	Miss Elizabeth A. Waters
Mrs. Lillian K. H. Sanborn	†Mr. William E. Weld
Mr. William A. Sanborn	*Miss Mina J. Wendell
†Mrs. Abbie M. Sanderson	§*Mr. J. Frank Wellington
Mr. Aaron Sargent	Mrs. Hanson D. Wentworth
Mr. A. Eugene Sargent	§*Hon. L. Roger Wentworth
†Mr. Charles W. Sawyer	†Mr. Thomas S. Wentworth
†Mr. Walter S. Sawyer	†Mr. Charles A. West
†Mrs. Amelia J. Sears	†Mrs. Charles A. West
§†Mr. Charles I. Shepard	†Miss Alice L. Westgate
†Mr. George C. Skilton	†Mr. George A. Whipple
Mr. Arthur A. Smith	†Dr. Horace C. White
†Miss Marie T. Smith	†Mr. J. Harvey White
†Mrs. Nellie P. Smith	Mr. W. W. White
†Mrs. Sarah A. Smith	†Mr. Charles T. C. Whitcomb
†Mr. Winthrop Smith	†Mr. William A. Whitehouse
Mr. Lemuel H. Snow	†Mrs. William A. Whitehouse
†Mrs. A. G. Sollers	†Mrs. George Whiting
§†Mr. Gordon A. Southworth	Mr. James F. Whitney
§†Mrs. Gordon A. Southworth	*Mr. B. Frank Wild
†Miss Mary E. Stiles	†Mr. Charles F. Wilder
§Mr. Frederic W. Stone	†Mrs. Frances A. Wilder
†Mrs. S. A. Stone	§†Mr. William J. Willard
§Miss Sara A. Stone	*Mr. Charles Williams, Jr.
†Judge Isaac Story	†Mr. B. T. Williston
†Mr. Isaac M. Story	†Mrs. B. T. Williston
†Miss Annie G. Stover	Mrs. Mary E. Winning
†Miss Amy B. Sylvester	Mr. Albert E. Winship
†Mrs. Clara A. Sylvester	†Mrs. Amelia Wood
†Mr. John E. Sylvester	†Miss Katherine W. Wood
†Mrs. Clara Taylor	†Mr. James H. Woods
†Mrs. Isadore Taylor	Mr. John M. Woods
†Mr. Frank A. Teele	†Mrs. Lucy A. Woods
†Miss Jeanette P. Teele	†Miss Grace M. Wright
†Mr. Edward F. Thayer	Mr. Alphonso A. Wyman
†Mrs. Francis E. Thornton	
†Resigned.	§Charter members.
	*Life members.
	†Deceased.





# INDEX

## LIST OF OFFICERS PAST AND PRESENT

### Presidents

Mr. George A. Bruce, 1897-1898	Mr. John F. Ayer, 1901-1904
Mr. Charles D. Elliot, 1898-1900	Mr. Frank M. Hawes, 1905—

### Vice-Presidents

Mr. Charles D. Elliot, 1897	Mr. Luther B. Pillsbury, 1901-1905
Mr. John F. Ayer, 1898, 1905-1907	Mr. James F. Whitney, 1901, 1904-1906
Mr. Elbridge S. Brooks, 1898-1901	Mr. Levi L. Hawes, 1902-1907
Mr. Frederic W. Parker, 1898	Mr. Seth Mason, 1902
Mr. John S. Emerson, 1899	Mr. Oliver Bacon, 1903
Mr. F. DeWitt Lapham, 1907	

### Recording Secretaries

Mr. George F. Loring, 1897-1898	Miss Florence E. Carr, 1900-1902
Mr. Alfred Morton Cutler, 1899	Mrs. Elizabeth F. Hammond, 1903-1904
Mrs. Florence E. Holmes, 1905-1907	

### Corresponding Secretaries

Mr. George E. Littlefield, 1897	Miss Florence E. Carr, 1905
Mrs. V. E. Ayer, 1898-1904	Mrs. Ella Ruth Hurd, 1906-1907

### Treasurers

Mr. Frederic W. Stone, 1897-1899	Mr. Seth Mason, 1903-1906
Mr. Oliver Bacon, 1900-1902	Mr. William B. Holmes, 1907

### Librarians and Curators

Mr. Howard Dawson, 1897-1899	Mr. Alfred Morton Cutler, 1900—
------------------------------	---------------------------------





# INDEX

- Adams, Henry, 7.  
 Adams, John, 52.  
 Adams, Joseph, 50, 52, 53.  
 Adams, Major Joseph, 52.  
 Adams, Rebecca, 50.  
 Adams, Sanford, 6, 14.  
 Alewife Brook, 26, 53.  
 Allen, Alfred, 53.  
 Allen, Benjamin F., 12.  
 Allen, Hiram, 11, 34.  
 Allen, Hiram, Jr., 11.  
 Allen, Lucy, 11.  
 Allen, Margaret, 11.  
 Alsop's Farm, 56, 57.  
 Alston Street, 9.  
 American Flag, The First, 81.  
 American Navy, The, 84.  
 Amesbury, Mass., 1.  
 Anderson, 56.  
 Andersonville Prison, 22.  
 Andrew, Governor, 43.  
 Antietam Bridge, 20.  
 Arlington, D. C., 18.  
 Arlington, Mass., 26.  
 Armory, The, 81.  
 Army of the Potomac, 44, 56.  
 Arnold, J. Frank, 8.  
 Arnold, Leonard, 8, 10.  
 Arnold, William J., 56.  
 Associated Charities, 75.  
 Austin, Richard, 29.  
 Avery, Mathew, 30.  
 Ayer, John F., 74, 76.  
 Ayer, William, 28.  
 Bachelder, Abigail, 29.  
 Bachelder, William, 29.  
 Baker, Rev. Charles, 39.  
 Baker, William, 30.  
 Baker, William A., 18.  
 Baltimore, Md., 77.  
 Banks, Governor, 38.  
 Banks, Hon. N. P., Jr., 42.  
 Barker, Isaac, 10, 14, 36.  
 Barden, ———, 67.  
 Barrell, Hannah, 53.  
 Barrell, Joseph, 53.  
 Bay State League, 74, 75.  
 Beacon Street, 14, 15, 33.  
 Bealton Station, Va., 21.  
 Bean, G. W., 22.  
 Bean, Hattie E., 10.  
 Beck, G. W., 13.  
 Beecher, Thomas, 30.  
 Bell, Dr. Luther V., 41, 55.  
 Bennett, Clark, 10, 11, 14, 41, 55.  
 Bennett, Dana, 10.  
 Bennett, Dexter, 10.  
 Bennett, Edwin Clark, 10, 41.  
 Bennett, George Eldon, 10, 41.  
 Bennett, Herbert W., 10.  
 Bennett, Irving M., 10.  
 Bennett, Josiah, 10.  
 Bennett, Melvina, 10.  
 Berkeley Street, 32.  
 Berlin's Station, 20.  
 Bethesda Church, 61.  
 Betsey Ross Flag, 73.  
 Bigelow, ———, 69.  
 Blair, Nathaniel, 14, 36.  
 Bleachery, 33.  
 "Blessing of the Bay, The," 74.  
 Blodgett, Phineas W., 41.  
 Bolles, David, 8.  
 Bolles, Professor, 74.  
 Bonner, Phillip, 9.  
 Bonner, William, 9.  
 Booth, Dr. Chauncey, 12.  
 Booth, Dr. E. C., 12, 51, 76.  
 Boston & Maine Railroad, 26.  
 Boston, Mass., 18, 28, 37, 38, 39.  
 Boston Street, 12.  
 Bottom's Bridge, 64.  
 Boutwell, Hon. George S., 41.  
 Bowdoin Square, 38.  
 Bowman, Francis, 55.  
 Bow Street, 7, 15, 16, 33, 36.  
 Boxford, Mass., 18.  
 Bradford, ———, 79.  
 Bradshaw, Edward H., 12.  
 Bradshaw, Samuel C., 12.  
 Brass Tube Works, 37, 42.  
 Brastow, Captain, 17.  
 Brastow, George O., 42, 55.  
 Brick Yard Lane, 33, 34.  
 Bridgewater, Mass., 2.  
 Bridgewater, N. H., 1, 2.  
 Brighton, Mass., 12.  
 Brinsmeade, John, 30.  
 Bristow Station, 23.  
 Broadway, 25, 29.  
 Broadway Congregational Church,  
     3, 4.  
 Brooks, Elbridge S., 13.  
 Brooks Family, 3.  
 Bruce, George A., 76.  
 Bucknam, D. P., 18.  
 Buford's Cavalry, 2.  
 Bullard's Bridge, 33, 34.  
 Bullard, William, 31.  
 Bull Run, 23.  
 Bull Run Ridge, Va., 43.  
 Bull's Church, 60.  
 Bunker, George, 30.  
 Bunker Hill, 36, 77, 84.  
 Bunker Hill Day, 1864, 66.  
 Burbank, Alonzo, 14.  
 Burbank, William A., 74.  
 Burt, William L., Esq., 41, 42.  
 Burt, General William L., 7.  
 Butler, General, 63.  
 Caesar, 80.  
 Cambridge Electric Light Co., 10.  
 Cambridge, Mass., 14, 18, 26, 27, 29,  
     33, 36, 37, 39, 49, 52, 53, 54, 69, 76.  
 Cambridge Street, 35.  
 Cambridgeport, Mass., 26, 33, 39.  
 Campagna, 80.  
 Camp Chase, 18.  
 Camp Nordquest, 22.  
 Campton, N. H., 2.





Canada, 37.  
 Canton, Mass., 2.  
 Capen, President, 78.  
 Castor and Pollux, Temple of, 81.  
 Catlett's Station, Va., 43.  
 Cedar Mountain, 45.  
 Cedarville (Sandwich), Mass., 2.  
 Centerville, 23.  
 Central Hill, 32, 81.  
 Central Street, 12, 16, 22.  
 Chain Bridge, 19.  
 Chancellorsville, Battlefield of, 44.  
 Charles City Court House, 65.  
 Charlestown, Genealogies and Estates of, 51.  
 Charlestown, Mass., 2, 14, 25, 26, 29, 36, 54, 79.  
 Charlestown Neck, 12.  
 "Charlestown Pigs," 36.  
 Charles River, 33, 37, 80.  
 Chickahominy River, 64, 65.  
 Chittenden, Rebecca, 50.  
 Chittenden, Stephen, 50.  
 Clark, Ambrose, 9.  
 Clark, Arthur, 9.  
 Clark, J. Manly, 9, 40, 41, 42.  
 Clark, Joseph, 9, 10, 14, 55.  
 Clark, Joseph H., 10.  
 Clark, Mary A., 9.  
 Clark, Samuel Adams, 9.  
 Clark, T. Cordis, 19.  
 Claudius, 80.  
 Cleur, John C., Esq., 42.  
 City Hall, 81.  
 Civil War, 5, 35, 82, 83.  
 Company A, of Peabody, 46, 67.  
 Company B, Roxbury, 46, 64.  
 Company C, Medford, 22, 46.  
 Company C, of Scituate and Boston, 46.  
 Company D, of Quincy, 46.  
 Company E, 46, 47, 58, 60, 63, 66, 67.  
 Company E, Thirty-ninth Massachusetts Infantry, in the Civil War, 17-23, 43-47.  
 Company F, of Taunton, 46.  
 Company H, of Dorchester, 46, 64.  
 Company I, of Natick, 46.  
 Company K, Woburn, 46, 57.  
 Cobble Hill, 53.  
 Cold Harbor, 63, 64.  
 Cold Harbor, Battle of, 63.  
 Conant, Roger, 78, 79, 80.  
 Concord, Mass., 28, 77.  
 Conrad's Ferry, 18.  
 Constantine, Arch of, 80.  
 Convent Hill, 11.  
 Conwell, Leon M., 75.  
 Coolidge, Eunice, 49.  
 Cooper-Shop Eating House, 18.  
 Cotimore Katharine, 29.  
 Cow Commons, 25, 28, 30.  
 Cradock House, 79.  
 Cradock, Matthew, 78, 79, 80.  
 "Crater, The," 72.  
 Crawford, General, 45.  
 Crosby, Elkanah, 18.  
 Cross Street, 9, 29, 39.  
 Crosswell, Andrew, 51.  
 Crosswell, Benjamin, 51.  
 Crosswell, Caleb, 51.  
 Crosswell, Joseph, 51.  
 Crosswell, Thomas, 51.  
 Crowell, ———, 30.

Crow, John, 30.  
 Crow, Yelverton, 30.  
 Cuba, 41.  
 Cub Run, 23.  
 Culpeper, 44.  
 Culpeper, C. H., 21.  
 Cutler's Division, 63.  
 Cutter, Ammi, 52, 53.  
 Cutter, Charlotte W., 53.  
 Cutter, Ebenezer F., 53.  
 Cutter, Luward, 53, 55.  
 Cutter, Ephraim, 53.  
 Cutter, Fitch, 53, 55.  
 Cutter, Francis, 53.  
 Cutter, Lydia, 52, 53.  
 Cutter, Rebecca, 53.  
 Cutter, Richard, 53.  
 Cutter, Samuel, 53.  
 Cutter, Samuel, Jr., 53.  
 Cutter, William, 53.  
 Dane, Osgood, 15.  
 Dane, Osgood B., 16.  
 Daniels, Granville W., 13.  
 Danville, Vt., 1.  
 Dartmouth College, 2.  
 Davies, Gershom, 50.  
 Davis, Elizabeth, 50.  
 Davis, James, 50.  
 Davis, P. S., 68, 69, 70.  
 Davis, Captain P. Stearns, 46.  
 Davis, Colonel Phineas Stearns, 18.  
 Dedham, Mass., 21, 49.  
 Deering, N. H., 2.  
 Dirty-marsh, 26.  
 Ditson's Music Store, 5.  
 Dodge, Seward, 13.  
 Dolbear, Professor, 74.  
 Donnell, Captain, 8.  
 Dorchester, Mass., 19, 79.  
 Drouet's Block, 33.  
 Dugan, John, 9.  
 Dusseault, John H., 17, 43, 56, 58, 61.  
 Early's Corps, 59.  
 East Cambridge, 35, 36.  
 Eddy, Will S., 75.  
 Edgerly, John S., 55.  
 Edward's Ferry, Md., 18.  
 Egan, Patrick, 14.  
 Eighteenth Corps, 63.  
 Eighth Massachusetts Regiment, 20.  
 Elliot, Charles D., 5, 32, 73, 76.  
 Elliot, Mary E., 75.  
 Elliott, M. P., 13.  
 Emerson, Rev. George H., 39.  
 Endicott, John, 78, 79, 80.  
 Everett, Hon. Edward, 38.  
 Farrar, George, 66.  
 "Father Baker," 5, 39, 40.  
 Felker, Samuel O., 58.  
 Fellows, ———, 11.  
 Field, ———, 16.  
 Fifth Corps, 44, 45, 72.  
 Fifty-first Massachusetts Regiment, 20.  
 Fillebrown, Elizabeth, 50.  
 Fillebrown, Isaac, 50.  
 First Corps, 44, 45.  
 First Massachusetts Artillery, 60.  
 First Massachusetts Cavalry, 12.  
 First Methodist Church, 5.





- First Universalist Society, 39.  
 Fiske, John, 76.  
 Fitchburg Railroad, 6, 9, 14, 16, 33, 37.  
 Fitts, Corporal, 67.  
 Forster School, 74.  
 Fort Davis, 69.  
 Fort MacMahon, 69.  
 Fort Sedgwick, 69, 71.  
 Forty-sixth Massachusetts Regiment, 20.  
 Fosket, John, 29, 50.  
 Fosket, Thomas, 29.  
 Fourth Brigade, 20.  
 Franklin Hall, 39, 40.  
 Franklin Institute, 40.  
 French, Edward Beecher, 70.  
 Fresh Pond, 37.  
 Fresh Pond Ice Co., 10.  
 Frost, Abigail, 49.  
 Frost, George, 15.  
 Frost, Joseph, 49.  
 Frost, Samuel T., Esq., 15, 33, 55.  
 Frothingham, Sarah, 50.  
 Frothingham, William, 50.  
 Fuller, John E., 66.  
 Funkstown, Md., 20.  
 Garrison, ———, 10.  
 Geldowsky's Pond, 32.  
 General Court of Massachusetts, Manual of, 79.  
 "General Howard," The Transport, 65.  
 "General Lee of Revolutionary Fame," 76.  
 George, Hannah, 49.  
 George, James, 49.  
 George, John, 49.  
 George, Richard, 49.  
 Georgetown, Va., 19.  
 Germania Ford, 44.  
 Gerry, Martha J., 15.  
 Gettysburg, 19, 20, 69.  
 Gibbons, Edward, 28.  
 Gibbons-field, 26, 28, 29, 30, 31, 49.  
 Gibbons River, 29.  
 Giles, John B., 9, 41.  
 Giles, John C., 6, 13, 14.  
 Giles, J. Frank, 6.  
 Giles, Joseph J., 10, 17, 19.  
 Giles, Mary O., 10.  
 Gilman, Charles E., 55.  
 Gilmore, Mrs. Eunice (Giles), 6.  
 Glass Works, The, 42.  
 Glines, Edward, 74.  
 Goble, Thomas, 28.  
 Goodhue, Thomas, 8, 36.  
 Goodhue, Mrs. Thomas, 9.  
 Gooding, Edmund H., 12.  
 Gooding, Samuel H., 12.  
 Goose Creek, 20.  
 Gorham, David, 58.  
 Gossom, ———, 5.  
 Grant, General U. S., 45, 56, 57, 65, 66, 72.  
 Gray, Rev. Francis, 4.  
 Green, ———, 73.  
 Green, John, 28.  
 Green, General Nathaniel, 15.  
 Greene, Colonel J. D., 41.  
 Griffin, ———, 57.  
 Griffin, General, 45.  
 Griffin, Theophilus, 8.  
 Grimmons, Charles A., 74.  
 Grissell, or Griswold, Francis, 28, 31.  
 Griswold, Francis, 49.  
 Griswold, Hannah, 31, 49.  
 Griswold, Joseph, 49, 50.  
 Griswold, Mary, 31.  
 Grocers' Magazine, 2.  
 Guild, Governor, 74.  
 Guinness Station, 60.  
 Hagarstown, Md., 20.  
 Hale, Edward A., 17.  
 Hall, Gustina, 10.  
 Hall, Primus, 15.  
 Hall, Samuel, 30.  
 Hamblen, ———, 14.  
 Hamilton, President, 73.  
 Hamilton, Va., 20.  
 Hancock's Corp, 58, 63.  
 Hannaford, Edward Francis, 13.  
 Hannaford, Frederick W., 13.  
 Hanover, 61.  
 Harbard, Henry, 31.  
 Harbour, or Harbard, Henry, 31.  
 Harlow, George R., 53.  
 Harper's Ferry, 19.  
 Harris, T. P., 67.  
 Harvard College, 37.  
 Hawes, Frank M., 73, 74, 76.  
 Hawkins, Christopher, 14, 33, 53.  
 Hawkins, Guy C., 14, 15, 33, 53, 55.  
 Hawkins, Nathaniel, 53.  
 Hawkins, N. Carleton, 15, 41.  
 Haven, George D., 9.  
 Hayes, John S., 74, 75, 76.  
 Haymarket, Va., 43.  
 Hazeltine, Amos, 14.  
 Hicks, ———, 73.  
 Highfield, The, 25, 26, 29, 30, 31, 49, 52.  
 Highfield-mead, The, 25, 26.  
 Highland Avenue, 32.  
 Hill Building, 36.  
 Hill, Charles, 9.  
 Hill, Harriet, 9.  
 Hill, Ivers, 11.  
 Hill, James, 55.  
 Hill, James F., 9.  
 Hill, James, Jr., 9.  
 Hill, Richard, 9.  
 Hills' Rebel Corps, 60.  
 Historical Festival, 77.  
 "Historic Leaves," 77.  
 Historic Sites, Committee on, 77.  
 Hitchings, Mrs. Augustus, 9.  
 Hodges, John, 30.  
 Holmes, William B., 73.  
 Home for the Aged, 32.  
 Homer, Annie, 6.  
 Homer, George W., 6.  
 Homer, Jacob, 6.  
 Homer, Mrs. Mary B., 6, 10.  
 Homer Square, 33.  
 Hopkins, James R., 74.  
 Hopkinton, Mass., 2.  
 Horton, John E., 56.  
 Houghton, Amory, 5.  
 Houghton, Francis, 5.  
 "Hourglass," 5.  
 Howe, Henry, 22.  
 Huchins, Captain John, 22.  
 Hudson, Charles H., 41.  
 Hunnewell, Charles, 50, 51.





- Hunnewell, James, 51.  
 Hunnewell, Joseph, 51.  
 Hunnewell, Richard, 50, 51.  
 Hunnewell, Thomas, 50.  
 Hunnewell, William, 50.  
 Hunt, Captain C. R., 46.  
 Hutchinson, Governor, 1.  
 Hyde, Richard J., 18, 22.  
 Hyde, Thomas, 56.  
 Ipswich, Mass., 2.  
 Ireland, George W., 15, 16.  
 Ireland, Jonathan, 15.  
 Jamaica Plain, 15.  
 James River, 64, 65, 70.  
 Jaquith, Abraham, 31.  
 Jerusalem Plank Road, 69.  
 Jones, Edward, 28.  
 Jordan, Jeremiah, 5.  
 Joy, Benjamin, 54.  
 Joy Street, 12.  
 Keedersville, Md., 20.  
 Kelley's Ford, 22, 44.  
 Kenneston, Elliot, 18.  
 Kent, John, 31, 49.  
 Kent, Lucy, 50, 52.  
 Kent, Rebecca, 50, 53.  
 Kent, Samuel, 50, 52, 53.  
 Kent, Sarah, 50, 53.  
 Keyes, Colonel Rolin, 5.  
 Keyes, R. W., 41.  
 Kettle, Abigail, 50.  
 Kettle, Mary, 50.  
 Kettle Run, Va., 43.  
 Kettle, Samuel, 50.  
 Kidder, Andrew M., 11.  
 Kidder, Arthur T., 11.  
 Kilcop, William, 31.  
 Kingman, —, 14.  
 Kinsley, Albert C., 12.  
 Kinsley, Captain Fred R., 16, 46.  
 Kinsley, Frederick W., 12, 36.  
 Kinsley, Henry, 12.  
 Kinsley, Joanna, 12.  
 Kinsley, Willard C., 12, 17, 18, 36.  
 Kinsley, Captain Willard C., 46, 57, 66, 70.  
 Kinsley, Zebediah, 12.  
 Kirkland Street, Cambridge, 15, 33.  
 Knapp, Mrs. Oren S., 9.  
 Lake, Alice E., 15.  
 Lane, Sarah, 49.  
 Laurel Hill, 58.  
 Lawrence, Samuel C., 79.  
 Leach, Elizabeth, 29.  
 Leach, Robert, 27, 29, 50.  
 Leathe, Edwin B., 3.  
 Leathe, Mary A., 3.  
 Leavitt, Major, 23.  
 Leavitt, Rev. Horace H., 4.  
 Lee, General, 44, 57, 77.  
 Leighton, —, 13.  
 Leland, —, 14.  
 Leland, Caleb W., 55.  
 Leland, Thomas J., 55.  
 Lexington, Mass., 77.  
 Libby, Mrs. Mary A., 3.  
 "Liberty Pole Square," 5.  
 Licking Run, Va., 43.  
 Lincoln, Charles S., Esq., 5, 41, 42.  
 Line-field, The, 26.  
 Linwood Street, 12.  
 London, Eng., 30, 78.  
 London's Plantation, 79.  
 Long Bridge, 64.  
 Longstreet's Corps, 56.  
 Loudon, N. H., 1, 2.  
 Lowe, Martha Perry, 78.  
 Lowell Railroad, 12.  
 Lovett, Washington, 22.  
 Lyle, Colonel Peter, 45, 64.  
 Magoun House, 52.  
 Magoun, John C., 8, 55.  
 Main Street, Charlestown, 54.  
 Malden, Mass., 5, 28, 51, 52, 54.  
 Mallet, Andrew, 51.  
 Mallet, Jean, or John, 51.  
 Manassas Railroad, Va., 43.  
 Mann, Eben C., Jr., 15.  
 Marcus Aurelius, 81.  
 Market Bank, 10.  
 Marks, Patrick, 27.  
 Marrett, D. A., 5, 40.  
 Marrett, S. H., 5, 40.  
 Mars, The Temple of, 81.  
 Martindale Barracks, 19.  
 Maryland Heights, 20.  
 Massachusetts, 82.  
 Massachusetts Bay Colony, The, 78, 79, 80.  
 Massachusetts Bay Colony, The First Governor of, 73, 78-80.  
 Massachusetts Bay Company, The, 78.  
 Massachusetts Society of the Sons of the American Revolution, 3.  
 Maulsby, Professor, 74.  
 McLean, Asylum, 12, 54.  
 Mead, General, 20.  
 Meade, General, 43, 44, 72.  
 Medford Genealogies, 51.  
 Medford, Mass., 3, 25, 52, 75, 79.  
 Medford Street, 9, 11, 33, 39.  
 Menotomy, 26, 27.  
 Menotomy River, 26.  
 Mercantile Trust Co., 10.  
 Merry, Admiral, 73.  
 Methodist Society, 39.  
 Middleburg, Va., 21.  
 Mile Run, Va., 44.  
 Miller, Charles, 11, 55.  
 Miller, James, 11, 29, 49.  
 Miller, Joseph, 29, 49.  
 Miller, Richard, 29, 31.  
 Miller, Thomas, 49.  
 Miller's Creek, 11.  
 Miller's River, 29, 32, 33, 34, 35, 37.  
 Miller's River Basins, 36.  
 Mills, Edwin, 18, 41.  
 Mills, Lieutenant, 58.  
 Mills, William, 41.  
 Milk Row, 51.  
 "Milk Row Primary School," 15.  
 "Milk Row" Station, 12.  
 Milk Street, 6, 40.  
 Mine Run, 46.  
 Minot's Ledge Lighthouse, 37.  
 "Minutes of the Stamp Act," 77.  
 Mitchell's Station, 44.  
 Moore, Abraham M., 53.  
 Morrisville, Va., 43.  
 "Mother Baker," 40.





- Moulton, William, 60.  
 Mount Auburn, 37, 69.  
 Mousal, John, 30.  
 Mousal, Ralph, 30.  
 Muddy Branch, Md., 18.  
 Munroe, Benjamin Sweetser, 13.  
 Munroe, Edwin, 13.  
 Munroe, Edwin, Jr., 11, 13.  
 Munroe, Emery H., 41.  
 Munroe, George S., 13.  
 Munroe, Nancy Thorning, 11, 75.  
 Munroe Street, 12, 13.  
 Music Hall, 38.  
 Myers, George, 60.  
 Mystic Avenue, 11.  
 Mystic Bridge, 27.  
 "Mystic, No. 6," 10.  
 Mystic Pond, 26.  
 Mystic River, 25, 74, 84.  
 "Neck," The, 27, 28.  
 Nelson, William, 2.  
 Newcastle, 61.  
 Newell, John, 27.  
 New England Conference, 39.  
 New England Historical and  
   Genealogical Register, 51.  
 New Hampton Institute, 2.  
 Newton, General John, 20.  
 Newton Street, 33, 34.  
 Newtown, 26.  
 Newtown Highway (Road to Cam-  
   bridge), 28.  
 New York, 37.  
 Ninetieth Pennsylvania, 22, 46, 64.  
 Ninety-fourth New York, 21.  
 Ninth Corps, 47, 72.  
 Ninth Massachusetts Battery, 63.  
 Ninth New York Regiment, 62.  
 Norfolk Railroad, 66.  
 Norris, E. A., 41.  
 Norris, Thomas F., 5.  
 North Anna River, 60, 61.  
 Northey, George A., 56.  
 North Sandwich, Mass., 2.  
 Norton, Charles Elliot, 15.  
 Norton's Ford, 22.  
 Norton's Grove, 15, 37.  
 Noyes, Rev. Charles L., 4.  
 Ny, The, 59.  
 Oak Street, 14, 34.  
 "Oasis," 6.  
 Odiorne, William, 58.  
 Offert's Cross Roads, Md., 18.  
 Ogdensburg, N. Y., 10.  
 "Old Mill and Other Poems," 3.  
 Olive Branch, 5, 41.  
 Oliver, F. J., 22.  
 Oliver, Judson W., 18, 22.  
 One Hundred and Fourth New  
   York, 62, 71.  
 One Hundred and Seventh Penn-  
   sylvania, 21.  
 Orange and Alexandria Railroad,  
   44.  
 Orcutt, Edward L., 16.  
 Orcutt, Levi, 8, 16.  
 "Original English Inhabitants and  
   Early Settlers in Somerville,"  
   25-31, 49-55.  
 Page, Major Caleb, 5.  
 Palfrey, Hon. John G., 15.  
 Palfrey's Grove, 15, 37.  
 Palgrave, Richard, 28.  
 Paine, Edward, 30.  
 Palmer, Abraham, 29.  
 Palmer, William D., 56.  
 Park Street, 33.  
 Parochial School, 33, 37, 40.  
 Parry Brick Co., 10.  
 Patten, Margaret, 50.  
 Pemunky River, 61.  
 Pennsylvania Avenue, Washington,  
   D. C., 19.  
 Perry, William A., 74.  
 Petersburg, 65, 66, 69, 72.  
 Pettengill, ———, 14.  
 Philadelphia, Penn., 18.  
 Phillips, 10.  
 Phipps, John, 50.  
 Phipps, Solomon, 50.  
 Pierce, Major, 62.  
 Pierce, Mary, 29, 51.  
 Pierce, Thomas, 29.  
 Pierson, Charles L., 69.  
 Pilgrims, The, 84.  
 Pillsbury, Caleb, 1, 2.  
 Pillsbury, Dr. Ernest L., 3.  
 Pillsbury, Edwin Brooks, 3.  
 Pillsbury, Harry Nelson, 3.  
 Pillsbury, Luther B., 1, 2, 78.  
 Pillsbury, Miss Mav F., 3.  
 Pillsbury, Nancy (Nelson), 1, 2.  
 Pine Street, 34.  
 "Piper's Tavern," 6.  
 Pleasants, Lieutenant-Colonel, 72.  
 Ploughed Hill, 26.  
 Plymouth Colony, 79.  
 Plymouth, Mass., 84.  
 Po, The, 59.  
 Polly's Swamp, 52.  
 Pony Plain, 22.  
 Poolsville, Md., 18, 19.  
 Pope Schoolhouse, 12.  
 Portland, Me., 38.  
 Potomac River, 18, 20.  
 Powder House, 51, 81.  
 Powers, Robert, 58.  
 Prescott Grammar School, 2.  
 Prince of Wales, 37.  
 Prospect Hill, 11, 17, 18, 26, 29, 33,  
   35, 36, 37, 53, 75, 81.  
 Prospect Hill Grammar School, 9.  
 Prospect Street, 6, 10, 11, 13, 14, 33,  
   34, 35, 39.  
 "Prospect Street Station," 16.  
 Provincial Congress, 1.  
 Public Library, 75, 77, 81.  
 Pulsifer, David, 79, 80.  
 Pump Works, 42.  
 Putnam, Dr. Charles L., 5.  
 Raccoon, Ford, 22.  
 Randall, Deacon Benjamin, 9.  
 Rand, Robert, 52.  
 Rand, Sarah, 52.  
 Rand, Thomas, 52.  
 Rand, William, 52.  
 Rapidan River, 22, 44, 45.  
 Rappahannock River, 21.  
 Rappahannock Station, 21, 43.





- Raymond, Mrs. Francis H., 15.  
 Reading, Mass., 2, 3.  
 Revere House, Boston, Mass., 38.  
 Revolution, The, 83, 84.  
 Richardson, Ezekiel, 30, 55.  
 Richardson, Thomas, 31.  
 Richmond, Va., 43, 61, 65, 66, 70.  
 Richmond "Whig," 64.  
 Ricker, Benjamin F., 13.  
 Ricker, Melvin F., 13.  
 "Road to Cambridge," 28, 51, 52.  
 Robertson's Tavern, 43.  
 Roberts, William, 30.  
 Robinson, General, 57.  
 Rollins, Sumner P., 18.  
 Rome, 80, 81.  
 Roman Tabularium, 81.  
 Roxbury, Mass., 19.  
 Ruersville, Md., 20.  
 Runey, Horace, 9, 11.  
 Runey, John, 41.  
 Russell, A. W., 8.  
 Russell, Joseph, 53.  
 Russell, Levi, 55.  
 Russell, Philemon, 53.  
 Russell, Philemon Robbins, 53.  
 Russell, William, 53.  
  
 Salem, Mass., 78, 79, 80.  
 Sanborn, Adaline L., 8, 15.  
 Sanoorn, Albert L., 6.  
 Sanborn, Daniel A., 8.  
 Sanborn, David A., 8, 13, 52.  
 Sanborn, David A., Jr., 8.  
 Sanborn, George A., 6.  
 Sanborn, J. Walter, 9.  
 Sanborn Map Company, 8.  
 Sanborn, Robert, 7, 8, 32.  
 "Sand Pit Square," 5, 14.  
 Sandwich Islands, 41.  
 Sargent, Aaron, 25, 49, 73, 75, 78.  
 Sargent, Judith, 1.  
 Saturn, Temple of, 81.  
 Savage, ———, 79, 80.  
 School Street, 7, 15, 32.  
 Second Corps, 44, 63, 65, 71, 72.  
 Sedgwick, General, 57.  
 Seneca, Md., 18.  
 Seventh Massachusetts, 65.  
 Sewall Dr. Stephen B., 10.  
 Shady Hill Nurseries, 33.  
 Shawmut Street, 29, 39.  
 Shed, Ebenezer, 52.  
 Shorthus, Robert, 29.  
 Shurtleff, Dr., 79.  
 Sibley, John, 28.  
 Sibley Tents, 19.  
 Sixteenth Maine, 21.  
 Sixth Corps, 44, 46, 57.  
 Smith, ———, 8.  
 Smith, Baldy, 63.  
 Smith, Mrs. W. French, 8.  
 Somerville Avenue, 11, 13, 15, 16, 33, 40.  
 Somerville Board of Trade, 3.  
 Somerville Fire Department, 14.  
 Somerville Fire Underwriters, 3.  
 Somerville Historical Society, 3, 13, 14, 16, 73, 74, 75.  
 Somerville Historical Society, By-Laws of, 85.  
 Somerville Historical Society, A Brief History of, 75-78,  
 Somerville Historical Society, List of Members, Past and Present, 88.  
 Somerville Historical Society, List of Officers, Past and Present, 91.  
 Somerville Historical Society, Officers and Committees of, 1906-1907, 24.  
 Somerville Historical Society, Officers of, 1907-1908, 48.  
 Somerville Journal, 75.  
 Somerville Journal Building, 32.  
 Somerville Light Infantry, 40, 42.  
 Somerville Mass., 77, 79, 80, 81, 82, 84.  
 Somerville Samaritan Society, 75.  
 Somerville Savings Bank, 8.  
 Somerville Sons and Daughters of New Hampshire, 3.  
 Somerville Y. M. C. A., 3.  
 Southampton, L. I., 28.  
 South-mead, The, 26.  
 South Yarmouth, Mass., 2.  
 Spanish War, The, 83.  
 Spottsylvania, 56, 57, 58, 60.  
 Sprague, Ralph, 75.  
 Sprague, Sarah White, 52.  
 Springfield Street, 34.  
 Spring Hill, 15, 32, 75.  
 Spv Pond, 37.  
 Stearns, Peleg, 52.  
 Stearns, Dr. William, 52.  
 Stevensburg, 22, 44, 45.  
 Stevens, Charles F., 40.  
 Stevens, Edward L., 13.  
 Stevens, Leslie, 18.  
 Stinted Pasture, The, 25, 26, 27.  
 Stokes, Benjamin, 50.  
 Stone, F. W., 8.  
 Stone, Hannah A., 52.  
 Stone, John, 52.  
 Stone, Jonathan, 8.  
 Stone, Jonathan, Jr., 52.  
 Stone, Mrs. Jonathan, 8.  
 Stone, Lucy, 8.  
 Stone, Lydia, 52.  
 Stone, Nathaniel T., 8, 52.  
 Stone, Mrs. N. T., 8.  
 Stone, Sara, 8.  
 Stone, Seth, 52.  
 Stone, Susanna, 53.  
 Strawberry Hill, 26, 27.  
 Sturtevant, Richard, 7.  
 Sullivan, John O., 66.  
 Sullivan Square Terminal, 80.  
 Summer Street, 32.  
 Sumner, ———, 10.  
 Swett, ———, 14.  
 Sycamore Street, 76.  
 Teele, Jonathan, 52, 53.  
 Teele, Samuel, 52.  
 Teele, William, 52.  
 Tenth Anniversary Banquet, The, 73-84.  
 Ten Hills Farm, 25, 26, 28, 55.  
 "Tent holes," 36.  
 Third Brigade, 61.  
 Third Corps, 44.  
 Thirteenth Massachusetts Regiment, 21, 62.  
 Thirteenth Massachusetts Volunteers, 70.  
 Thirty-fourth Massachusetts Regiment, 19.

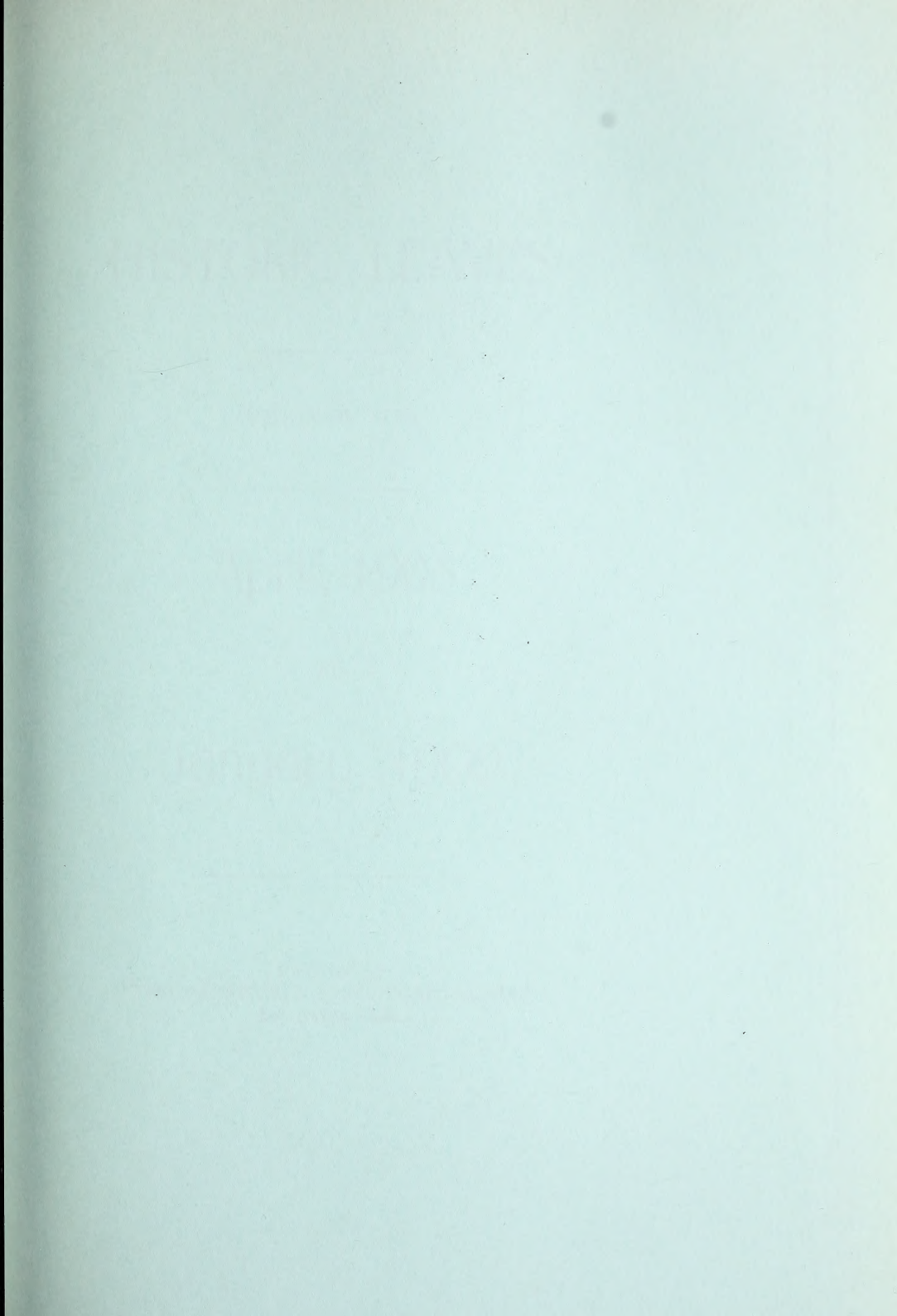




- Thirty-ninth Massachusetts Infantry in the Civil War, 17-23, 43-47, 56-72.  
 Thirty-ninth Massachusetts Regiment, 19, 46, 63.  
 Thompson, James, 29.  
 Thompson, Samuel, 13.  
 Thorning, John, 11.  
 Thoroughfare Gap, Va., 43.  
 "Three-Pole Lane," 29.  
 Titus, Arch of, 80.  
 Towne, Orr N., 55.  
 Trowbridge, J. T., 12.  
 Tufts, Benjamin, 53.  
 Tufts, Charles, 9, 12.  
 Tufts College, 9, 12, 74, 78.  
 Tufts, Edmund, 55.  
 Tufts, Elizabeth, 51.  
 Tufts, Francis, 11, 41, 42.  
 Tufts House, 77.  
 Tufts, Isaac, 53.  
 Tufts, James, 51.  
 Tufts, John, 51.  
 Tufts, M. Alice, 12.  
 Tufts, Martha, 53.  
 Tufts, Mary, 52.  
 Tufts, Nathan, 12, 55.  
 Tufts, Nathan, Jr., 12.  
 Tufts, Nathaniel, 52.  
 Tufts, Peter, 29, 51, 52.  
 Tufts, Samuel, 15.  
 Tufts, Sarah, 52.  
 Tuttle, Isaiah W., 5, 41.  
 Tuttle, James S., 5, 40.  
 Twelfth Army Corps, 22.  
 Twelfth Massachusetts, 67.  
 Twenty-third Street, Washington, D. C., 19.  
 Twombly, J. Q., 13, 41.  
 Two Penny Brook, 27.  
 Tyler, Columbus, 55.  
 Underwood, James, 11.  
 Union Hall, 76.  
 Union Square, 13, 15, 16, 32, 39, 42, 76.  
 Union Square and its Neighborhood About 1846, 5-16.  
 Union Square Before the War, 32-42.  
 United States, 41.  
 United States of North America, 82.  
 Unitarian Hall, 73, 76.  
 Unitarian Society, 39.  
 "Upper Basin, The," 33.  
 Van De Sande, George, 18.  
 Vestals, 81.  
 Vinal, Alfred E., 7.  
 Vinal, Edward E., 7, 41.  
 Vinal, Elizabeth, 7.  
 Vinal, Emeline, 7.  
 Vinal, John W., 7, 41.  
 Vinal, Lucy, 7.  
 Vinal, Lydia, 7.  
 Vinal, Margaret, 7.  
 Vinal, Martha, 7.  
 Vinal, Quincy A., 7, 40, 78.  
 Vinal, Robert, 52, 55.  
 Vinal, Deacon Robert, 7, 32, 33, 40.  
 Vinal, Robert A., 7, 41.  
 Walford, Thomas, 79.  
 Walnut Street, 7, 32.  
 Wapping, Eng., 31.  
 Ware, John S., 5.  
 Warren Bridge, 12.  
 Warren, General, 44, 45, 70.  
 Warrington Junction, 23.  
 Warrington, Va., 21.  
 Waters, Elizabeth A., 75.  
 Waters, Sarah, 49.  
 Watertown, Mass., 52.  
 Waterville, Va., 20.  
 Washington, D. C., 18, 19.  
 Washington Street, 7, 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 26, 33, 37, 39, 40, 52.  
 Washington Street Bridge, 33.  
 Webster Avenue, 6, 14, 33, 37, 40.  
 Welch, Abraham, 13.  
 Wellington Bridge, 74.  
 Wellington-Wild Coal Office, 32.  
 West End, 26, 28, 29, 30, 31, 49.  
 Weston, Dr., 5.  
 Weston Family, 3.  
 Westwood Road, 12.  
 White, Artemas, 13.  
 White Oak Swamp, 64.  
 White Plain, Va., 21.  
 White's Guerrillas, 18.  
 Whitmore, Joseph, 22, 36.  
 Whitmore, William H., 51.  
 Whitridge, Elizabeth P., 39.  
 Wilderness, Battle of the, 56.  
 Wilderness, Battlefield of the, 41, 45.  
 Wildridge's Hill, 29, 51, 52.  
 Willard, ———, 13.  
 Willard C. Kinsley Post, 139, G. A. R., 3.  
 Williams, Charles, Jr., 41.  
 Williamsport, Md., 20.  
 Wilson, ———, 10.  
 Wilson, Richard, 28, 31.  
 Winter Hill, 4, 5, S. 50, 51, 52, 75.  
 "Winter Hill Eagle," 55.  
 Winter Hill Lodge, Knights of Honor, 3.  
 Winter Hill Road, 53.  
 Winter Hill Universalist Church, 4.  
 Winthrop Avenue, 25, 29.  
 Winthrop, John, 28, 79, 80.  
 Woburn, Mass., 29, 30, 31, 52.  
 Woolrych, John, 28.  
 Wyatt, G. W., 14.  
 Wyman, David, 53.  
 Wyman, Elizabeth, 53.  
 Wyman, Lieutenant, 65.  
 Wyman, Thomas B., 51.  
 Yarmouth, Mass., 30.  
 Youth's Companion, 3.











# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOLUME VII.

---

April, 1908

TO

January, 1909

---

Published by  
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Somerville, Mass.







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1908

VOL. VII.

No. 1







## CONTENTS.

---

COMPANY E, 39TH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY  
IN THE CIVIL WAR.—(IV.)

*From Diary of John H. Dussault.*

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON NECROLOGY OF  
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, in advance.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of William E. Holmes,  
312 Broadway, Winter Hill, to whom all communications  
regarding exchanges should be addressed.

---

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

Vol. VII.

APRIL, 1908

No. I

## COMPANY E, 39TH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, IN THE CIVIL WAR.—(IV.)

[Diary of John H. Dusseault—Concluded.]

July 31. We turned out at 5 A. M. Another extremely hot day. I was detailed for fatigue duty. Our lines were the same as before the Ninth Corps made the attack. The Rebels would not grant a flag of truce, because, it was said, a part of the attacking corps were negroes, who, by the way, had done nobly. Finally our wounded were all brought within the lines.

August 1 and 2. Turned out at 9 A. M.; very hot weather. There are rumors of a move, but both days have been quiet ones.

August 3. Turned out at 6 A. M. I was detailed for picket at 8 P. M., and had command of the One Hundred and Fourth New York pickets.

August 4. All quiet on the skirmish line. I was relieved from picket at 8 P. M. This day was appointed as a National Fast, and a religious meeting was held in the fort. (I succumb to toothache.)

August 5. Turned out at 6 A. M. (I had five teeth filled with lead by a private in One Hundred and Seventh Pennsylvania.) From 4 to 6 heavy firing.

August 6. Another quiet day.

Sunday, August 7. We had an inspection, as was usually the custom on Sundays.

August 8. Pleasant, but a very warm day.

August 9. Cloudy, with thunder, but no rain for us.

August 10. A quiet day.

August 11. I was detailed for picket at 8 P. M.

August 12. Everything was quiet on the picket line. A Rebel came into our line, who said he was from Cambridge, Mass. I sent him to the rear as a prisoner of war. He stated





that he was in Richmond the Sunday before. Probably he was a "bounty-jumper." I was relieved at 8 P. M.

August 13. Heavy firing on our right to-day.

August 14. Sunday inspection. A rain began at 7 P. M., which continued through the night. Rumors of a move.

August 15. We turned out at 4 A. M., and a brigade of Burnside's colored troops took our places in the fort. Our whole corps was relieved, and we went back two miles to be held in reserve.

August 16. Turned out at 6. I was detailed with sixty men to work on Fort Sedgwick. All work had to be done in the night, as no one could live there in the daytime. The Rebel Fort MacMahon was near, and their sharpshooters were nearer, and picked off men with every opportunity. We reached the fort at 10 P. M., and soon had our tools in hand. We had just begun work, when orders came to report back to the regiment at once. We arrived there at midnight, and were told that our corps was to march at 3 P. M.

Accordingly, August 17 we fell in, ready to carry out this order, but while we were waiting another order came to turn in for the night, as we were not to move until the next morning.

August 18. We turned out at 3 A. M. This was the day of the "Battle of Weldon Railroad," sometimes called that of "the Six-Mile House," or "the Globe Tavern." We began our march at 5 towards the railroad (southwest and to our left), a distance of five or six miles, to the Yellow Tavern, or Six-Mile House. Here we found the Rebel pickets, and drove them before us. General Crawford's Division, to which our regiment belonged,\* formed a line of battle on the right of the railroad, and General Ayer, of the Second Division of our corps (the Fifth), formed on the left of the railroad. General Griffin's First Division (our corps) was in the rear tearing up the tracks, as we thus advanced towards Petersburg. We had proceeded about a mile

---

\*After Spottsylvania, May 8 to 20, our brigade was commanded by General Crawford, as General Robinson, our division commander, lost a leg at that time and was obliged to leave the front. General Crawford was the physician at Fort Sumter when it was taken in 1861.





and a half in dense woods, when Hill's Rebel Corps charged on us. (The Yellow house was behind us now.) Ayer's Division gave way, letting the enemy come around our left flank. There was nothing for us to do but to fall back or be captured. The Rebel line in front of us was within forty feet. The order was accordingly given to fall back. All were lying down flat on the ground at the time, the Rebels in the same position, also, but ready to shoot as fast as we stood up. Colonel C. L. Pierson was already badly wounded in the bowels by a minie ball. He was able to stand long enough to give the command, and then fell.† Immediately as I rose a bullet hit me in the right side. It broke the eighth rib and entered the lower lobe of the lung. I was taken off the field along with the colonel to the field hospital just back of us. Sergeant Bradshaw, afterwards second lieutenant, and Private Thomas, both of Company H, were leading me. The latter was shot in the wrist while supporting me, and tarrying a moment, in consequence was captured by the enemy. The command now devolved upon Captain F. R. Kinsley, of Company E. Our side was beaten for a time, but after being driven about one-quarter of a mile, the men re-formed and held the enemy. (See reports of the Adjutant-general for 1864, pp. 850-51.)

August 19. The fight was resumed. The Rebels found a gap on our right and came through, thus flanking us again. Our artillery opened on them as they were between us and the artillery, and the shells did us as much harm as they did the Rebels. The men of both sides were now pretty generally mixed up in the woods. One squad, whichever was the bigger, would capture the other. This day our regiment was in the worst part of the line, and suffered more than any other, unless it was the Sixteenth Maine, which was captured almost to a man.

August 20. Both lines were rather quiet to-day, and both

---

†General Pierson is still living in Beverly. He was shot three times, on May 8, May 10, and August 18. After the first wound he was back in the fight in less than two hours; after the second, caused by a shell cutting across his breast, he was sent home. The third wound was a terrible one in the lower bowels and his life was long despaired of. He lay in the next bunk to mine in the field hospital.





were stationed on either side of the railroad, back a little from where we first charged the enemy. We held the railroad, and they were bound to drive us off.

Sunday, August 21. The enemy attacked us, but were repulsed, and during the rest of the war our side held the railroad.

In this battle Company E—the Somerville company—suffered severely. Captain F. R. Kinsley was captured on August 19, and the command devolved upon Captain George S. Nelson, of Company A. Including Captain Kinsley, thirteen Somerville men were captured, of whom seven died in Rebel prisons. The seven were: James M. Allen, Corporal David Gorham, Corporal Fred A. Glines, John E. Horton, George H. Hatch, Charles G. Jones, and Frank W. Thompson. David Kendrick died just after he was exchanged. Captain Kinsley was paroled. John B. Canfield, Patrick Horgan, John F. Locke, and Sergeant John Kennedy, these four, brought up in Salisbury (N. C.) prison, and were paroled in March, 1865. In this fight John S. Roberts and William M. Herbon were killed, and the following wounded: Chandler G. Cole, Dexter Gray, George R. Harlow, and Lieutenant John H. Dusseault.

By this time only seven or eight men were left in Company E out of the original one hundred and one men who enlisted from Somerville in 1862. Of course the company had been supplied from time to time with raw recruits, or with men from other regiments. May 4, when the army crossed the Rapidan, there were five hundred and thirty muskets (men) in the Thirty-ninth Regiment—as many as were in any other two regiments in their brigade. On the morning of August 22, after this battle, one hundred and one men and nine officers of this regiment reported for duty. On the nights of August 18 and 19 the wounded were sent back to the Division Hospital, two miles in our rear.

On August 21 the wounded, of whom I was one, were sent to the City Point Hospital on the James. On August 23 we turned out, and were told to get ready to go on board a boat which would take us to Fortress Monroe, where we arrived at dark, and were transferred to the Atlantic, an ocean steamer. I





could walk at this time, and continued to do so till September 6 or 7. On this river boat there were seventy-five wounded officers of the Fifth Corps and many private soldiers, who were lying upon the deck and about the vessel. (There were two rows of cots on each side of the deck for the men who had lost a limb or two, between two and three hundred, at least. I had a state-room with Lieutenant Felch.) On August 24 we took in stores at the fort, and started for Philadelphia at 5 P. M. We reached Philadelphia at 7 P. M. August 25, and were taken in carriages to the Soldiers' Retreat, which was near the landing, and thence to a receiving hospital for the night. August 26 we were taken to McLellan Hospital, located in the suburbs of the city, perhaps five miles out ("Nice town").

September 3. I received leave of absence and started for home, via New York, where I arrived at 9 P. M., and put up at the Western House.

September 4. At 5 P. M. I started for Boston by train, Lieutenant Felch still with me. He was wounded in the shoulder. We reached Boston Monday, September 5, at 4 A. M. By September 10 my wound was troubling me severely. The bullet had been extracted an hour or two after I was wounded, but when I had my wound dressed at the hospital in New York, probably it was washed with an infected sponge, for gangrene set in, as it so often did in those days. For seven weeks I was on my back, and was reduced to one hundred and five pounds. But thanks to a kind doctor and home nursing, the wound finally closed in April, 1865, the same month that the war closed.

---

#### Account of Company E After August 21.

Practically everything was quiet till September 15. The Regiment was at Weldon Railroad all this time. Many changes of position were made, new lines of works built, and strong forts took the places of the earlier breastworks.

September 15. The Regiment, together with the rest of the Brigade, was sent to support a cavalry reconnoissance on the





left of the line; it returned without loss, after accomplishing the work.

September 16. The Second Brigade was assigned to garrison duty in forts on the left of the line. The Thirty-ninth Massachusetts was ordered to Fort Duchesne, on the rear line (still on the Weldon Railroad), and camped just outside the fort. This, with the 104th New York Volunteers, the Eleventh, Eighty-eighth, and Ninetieth Pennsylvania, formed the garrison, under Colonel R. Coulter, of the Eleventh Pennsylvania.

September 29. The garrison was sent out on reconnoissance over the same ground as on September 15, the Thirty-ninth acting as skirmishers. The enemy were found in force near Poplar Spring Church. After a brief skirmish, a return was ordered.

September 30. The Regiment moved from the camp outside into the fort, where it remained till October 16. It then left the rear, and took a position (still on the railroad) one-half mile in front of Duchesne, and one mile from the Globe Tavern.

October 26. The Regiment moved to the left and garrisoned Fort Conahey. The whole army made a reconnoissance in force to Hatcher's Run.

October 31. Having returned from the Run, the Regiment resumed its position in line near Fort Wadsworth.

November 5. Lieutenant-Colonel Tremlett (major of the Thirty-ninth) returned from draft-rendezvous, Boston Harbor, and took command of the Regiment, relieving Nelson.

December 1. The state colors, borne by the Regiment since leaving home, were returned to the adjutant-general because they were too worn for use.

December 5. The Regiment moved to the rear line, where the Fifth Corps was being massed, and went into camp.

December 7. The Corps started on a march on Jerusalem Plank Road, the Thirty-ninth taking the advance of the Infantry. After marching south some eighteen miles, the Nottoway River was crossed at 5 P. M., and after four more miles they halted for the night near Sussex Court House.





December 8. The next morning the march was resumed, when they passed through the place last mentioned and Coman's Well. Just before reaching Halifax Road, skirmishing was heard in advance, and the Regiment (designated Skirmish Regiment of the Brigade) was deployed and sent forward to hold the road. After establishing a line of pickets, the Regiment was left to guard the road, while the main column passed on. A little after dark the line was abandoned, and the Regiment followed the column, overtaking the Corps on the Weldon Railroad, near Jerrett's Station. The night was spent in destroying the road, burning railroad ties, etc.

December 9. A position was taken at the extreme left of the Corps, and the Regiment picketed the front of the Brigade, which was engaged in tearing up the road. At 6 P. M. it was withdrawn to Cross Roads above Bellfield, and one-half the Regiment was sent on picket and one-half to bivouac with the Brigade.

December 10. In the morning the troops began to return, and the Thirty-ninth was designated to cover the rear. In the afternoon the enemy made a dash on our rear and drove in our rear guard of cavalry. But they were checked by the shots of our Infantry. The enemy's cavalry followed closely all day, and captured many stragglers. Four of the Thirty-ninth Regiment were thus taken. The halt for the night was near Sussex Court House.

December 11. The march began at daylight. The Nottoway River was crossed at 4 P. M., and at 9 P. M. there was a halt for the night. On the next day, after a rapid march of twelve miles, the lines before Petersburg were reached, where we went into camp near Jerusalem Plank Road.

December 16. Here we were ordered to build huts for the winter, and after a week's work the Regiment moved into its new quarters. This camp was occupied about a month, during which time there were many alarms, and the Regiment turned out often for real or imaginary danger. Drilling and fatigue duty occupied most of the time, with a large detail for picket and guard duty. Once the Regiment was selected as a guard





for a wagon train, to go outside for bricks and boards; a deserted house five miles away furnished the material. A safe return was made.

Saturday, February 4, 1865. The Regiment had orders to move at a moment's notice. The next day orders came to report at Brigade headquarters, where we found the rest of the Brigade, and the Corps was joined near the Gurley House at 7 A. M. The march was continued towards Dinwiddie Court House. The halt for the night was within two miles of this place. The Regiment was detailed on picket till Monday morning, but the Brigade had already commenced its march towards Hatcher's Run. In the afternoon this was crossed and a line of battle was formed, the Thirty-ninth Regiment having the right of the first line. The enemy was found entrenched in strong works near Dabney's Mills. The first attempt to dislodge them was unsuccessful, but a second charge took the works, which, however, were abandoned for want of support; the troops recrossed the river and bivouacked for the night.

February 7. The line of battle was formed at 8 A. M. Our Regiment was deployed as skirmishers in front of the Brigade. They advanced and drove the enemy's skirmishers from three lines of rifle pits back into their works, which were near. At 5 o'clock in the afternoon our line was ordered to advance upon them, but as the assault was not successful, the line fell back to its original position, where it remained, exposed to a galling fire till late at night, when it was relieved. At Hatcher's Run February 6 and 7 E. B. Hadley was killed and Ambrose W. Coles lost an arm. J. W. Oliver was captured for the second time.

February 8. In bivouac all day.

February 9. The Regiment was on picket, and when relieved Friday (February 10) it returned to its old camp near Jerusalem Plank Road to get the baggage of the men. It then broke camp and took a new position at the extreme left of the new line, near Hatcher's Run. A camp was laid out, and the men began once more to build winter quarters.

Thursday, March 9. The Regiment passed in review be-





fore Major-General John C. Robinson, our former division commander. Others that were under him participated in the review. [It may be mentioned here that General Robinson later on was lieutenant-governor of New York, and was present at a regimental reunion held at Somerville in 1887. He has since died.]

March 14. A review of the whole Fifth Corps took place before Major-General Warren.

March 16. There was another review before Secretary of War Stanton. On each of these occasions the Thirty-ninth Regiment acquitted itself well.

Saturday, March 25. The Regiment was ordered out about daylight to go to the right and assist in re-capturing Fort Stedman, which had just been taken by the enemy. The division marched back, and near the Gurley House was reviewed by President Lincoln. It was then ordered to the left as support to the Sixth Corps, but as no attack was made, it returned to camp about 9 P. M.

March 29. The spring campaign was entered upon. The Regiment broke camp about 3 A. M., and was marched to the left till Boynton Plank Road was reached. After some skirmishing the enemy was driven back from here and their lines taken. This position was held through the next day, the Regiment remaining in skirmish line during the whole time until the morning of the 31st, when a move was made still farther to the left to a point near Gravelly Run. Here the enemy was found in strong force. They attacked us, and our Regiment was sent out hurriedly as skirmishers to check them until the lines could be formed. This, however, proved impossible, and after suffering heavily, the men were obliged to fall back, leaving many dead and wounded on the field. (They were the designated skirmish regiment of the Brigade.) Lieutenant-Colonel Tremlett was wounded early in this engagement, and was conveyed to the rear with much difficulty. At the hospital it was found necessary to amputate his leg at once. The command of the Regiment now devolved on Captain J. J. Cooper (Taunton, Company F). In this action, March 31, Corporal James Moran, Company E, was mortally wounded, and Captain Willard C. Kinsley





(Woburn, Company K) received a wound which resulted in his death April 2. From second lieutenant he had been promoted to captain by being jumped over every first lieutenant in the line. By his death the Regiment lost one of its most popular and beloved officers, as well as one of its best soldiers. His remains were taken to his old home in Somerville, and he was accorded a public funeral. The Grand Army Post of Somerville was named in honor of him. Corporal Elkanah Crosby helped to take him from the battlefield. As the enemy were close at hand, Captain Kinsley begged his men to leave him and take care of themselves, but this they would not do. After a rally had been made and reinforcements arrived, another advance was made on the enemy's breastworks. The ground that had been lost in the morning was regained. This position was held through the night.

April 1. The Corps left this part of the line, moved to the left, and united with the Cavalry under Major-General Sheridan. At noon lines were formed near the Five Forks for an assault. The Cavalry was on either flank, and our Corps in the centre; the Thirty-ninth Regiment was in the front line near the centre. About 4 P. M. the forward movement began; the enemy's skirmishers were found and driven back. A quick and spirited fight soon gave us an opening in the enemy's lines, and after this the victory was certain. Some five miles of the enemy's lines were taken, and the pursuit was followed up till long after dark.

The battle of Five Forks was the most successful one the Regiment was engaged in; almost the entire force of the enemy was captured, and their rout was complete. Our loss was comparatively slight. Lieutenant Melville C. Parkhurst was in this engagement, in command of Company B (Roxbury).

Sunday, April 2. Soon after daylight the march was taken up towards the north and west. About 2 P. M. the South Side Railroad was crossed, not without some cheering, and after a long march a halt was made for the night near Hickanoek Creek. Here a small force of the enemy formed, and our Regiment was sent out as skirmishers; but after a few shots were exchanged, no enemy could be found, and the night was without further disturbance.





April 3. The march was resumed early (for we were now following up Lee, who was on his way to Appomattox). This programme continued through the week, with occasional skirmishes which resulted in the capture of many prisoners. The march was rapid, and the troops were encouraged by evidences of hasty flight all along the route.

Sunday, April 9, found us at Appomattox Court House, in the immediate presence of the enemy. But soon after our arrival upon the field all hostilities suddenly ceased, and later in the day the entire army opposed to us surrendered. We remained here while the paroling of the enemy went on, until Saturday, April 15, when we broke camp and began the return march to Petersburg.

Sunday, April 16. We reached Farmville in the afternoon, where we received the sad news of President Lincoln's assassination. A gloom rested on the camp that night which will never be forgotten.

Friday, April 21. We reached Black's and White's Station in the forenoon. Camp was laid out and a halt made here. During the following days many of the officers and men of the Regiment, who had been in the hands of the enemy since August, returned from the paroled camp. Major F. R. Kinsley was of this number, and the command of the Regiment now devolved upon him.

May 1. We broke camp once more and began the march to Washington; passed through Petersburg May 3; through Richmond May 6; over the memorable Fredericksburg battleground May 9; crossed the Rappahannock for the tenth and last time; and halted Friday, May 12, at Arlington, near Fort Albany, and very near the first camp ground of the Regiment in Virginia.

May 23. The Regiment took part in the grand review of the army in Washington, returning to camp in the afternoon.

June 2. The mustering out of the Regiment began, and Sunday, June 4, we broke camp and reported in Washington for transportation to Massachusetts. The journey home was made quickly, with but few halts: one at the well-known Cooper





Shop, which never allowed a soldier to pass through Philadelphia hungry; one in New York, where lunch was promptly provided by the New England Relief Association.

Tuesday, June 6. The Regiment arrived at Readville, and was assigned quarters in barracks there. The arrival home was saddened by the death of Colonel Henry M. Tremlett at his home on Beacon Street, Boston. He was a good commander, and much beloved by all for his distinguished courage.

It only remains to speak of the men of Company E, who, unless otherwise designated, entered service August 12, 1862.

Abbott, Jesse B., honorably discharged May 16, 1865; died in Cambridge February 18, 1873.

Allen, James M., taken prisoner August 19, 1864; died at Salisbury, N. C., November 23, 1864.

Arnold, William J., wounded May 8, 1864; honorably discharged May 20, 1865; died at Ashland in 1905.

Baker, William A., went out as corporal; reduced to private, June, 1863; discharged for disability October 26, 1863; died in Cambridge March 25, 1897.

Bean, George W., went out as corporal; taken prisoner October 11, 1863; in prison seventeen months; discharged from service May 12, 1865; on the Somerville police force; retired; lives in Cambridge.

Belding, Charles H., transferred to the Veteran Reserve Corps, March 31, 1864; lives at 1 Oak Terrace, Malden.

Benz, August, died on the transport Utica, going down James River, October 5, 1864.

Brotchie, James, one of the very few to remain with the company during its whole period of service; mustered out June 2, 1865; in the employ of Somerville many years; lives in Cambridge.

Bodge, George A., enlisted as private; promoted to corporal; to sergeant; to first sergeant; commissioned second lieutenant April 3, 1865; never ill, never on a furlough; mustered out June 2, 1865; on the Somerville police force; died November 4, 1899.





- Bolton, John T., on detached service, Ordnance department; mustered out June 2, 1865; died in Mexico April 23, 1885.
- Boynton, William F., came as a recruit March 29, 1864; wounded August 18, 1864; mustered out January 12, 1865; died in Somerville in August, 1892.
- Bucknam, Davis P., enlisted as corporal; discharged for disability June 18, 1863; lives at 12 Vine Street, Somerville.
- Byrnes, John, transferred to the Veteran Reserve Corps February 15, 1864; lives at 202 Summer Street, Somerville.
- Canfield, John B., taken prisoner August 19, 1864; in prison until March, 1865; discharged May 1, 1865; died November 12, 1897.
- Carr, William M., enlisted in Company I, Fifth Regiment, May 1 to July 31, 1861; went out with Company E as corporal; discharged for disability December 9, 1862; died in Chelsea fifteen years ago.
- Clark, Gustavus A., promoted to corporal; transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; discharged June 1, 1865; lives at 164 Winslow Avenue, Somerville.
- Cole, Chandler G., wounded August 18, 1864; returned February 23, 1865; mustered out June 2, 1865; not living.
- Coles, Ambrose W., wounded February 7, 1865 (lost an arm); discharged May 16, 1865; died in Somerville in December, 1882.
- Collett, Herbert, discharged February 8, 1863; died in Philadelphia since 1899.
- Conner, Thomas, discharged March 12, 1863; died some fifteen years ago.
- Crosby, Elkanah, enlisted in Company I, Fifth Regiment, May 1 to July 31, 1861; went out with Company E as corporal; promoted to sergeant; one of the few to remain with the company during its whole period of service; mustered out June 2, 1865; lives at 110 Hudson Street, Somerville.
- Crowley, Daniel, musician (drummer); was with the company during its whole term of service; mustered out June 2, 1865; lives in Peru, Ill.





Cutter, George, deserted June 3, 1863; afterwards seen in a New York Cavalry Regiment.

Davis, Amos F., detached for special service; came back to the Company May 26, 1865; mustered out June 2, 1865; lives in Dorchester.

Dodge, Albert H., deserted December, 1864; has died since the War; came from Nova Scotia.

Dodge, William H., brother of Albert H., discharged for disability May 18, 1865; died twelve years ago.

Dusseault, John H., went out as first sergeant; promoted to second lieutenant October 20, 1863; promoted to first lieutenant September 8, 1864; wounded three times, slightly at Spottsylvania; severely wounded August 18, 1864, at Weldon Railroad; discharged December 10, 1864; sealer of weights and measures; lives at 42 Sargent Avenue, Somerville.

Dyer, Jonathan C., transferred to the Navy April 22, 1864; died in Somerville about fifteen years ago.

Edlefson, Charles E., injured December, 1862; discharged February 26, 1863; died in Somerville December 24, 1891.

Emerson, Samuel, went out as teamster; discharged for disability, or perhaps transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; mustered out June, 1865; on the Boston police force; died, no date.

Fairchild, Willard C., transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps some time in 1863; died in the vicinity of Worcester more than ten years ago.

Farrar, George A., wounded June 18, 1864; discharged later; died in Somerville June 27, 1901.

Fay, Walter, transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps August 1, 1863; died in Somerville September 25, 1904.

Felker, Samuel O., promoted to corporal; killed in battle May 10, 1864.

Fellows, Charles C., detached for special service, Ambulance Corps, from August 5, 1863, to May 2, 1865; mustered out June 2, 1865.





Fitcham, Charles E., went out as corporal; transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps in 1863; discharged September 23, 1864; died several years ago.

Fuller, John E., wounded June 18, 1864; discharged February 12, 1865; on the Somerville police force; retired; lives at 79 Glenwood Road.

Gilcrease, Elijah H., discharged April 22, 1863; died in Somerville February 18, 1898.

Giles, Joseph J., enlisted in Company I, Fifth Regiment, May 1 to July 31, 1861; went out as first lieutenant with Company E; discharged at Washington August 23, 1864; lives in Somerville.

Glines, Frederick A., promoted to corporal; taken prisoner August 19, 1864; died in prison, Salisbury, N. C., January 6, 1865.

Gorham, David, promoted to corporal; wounded May 12, 1864; taken prisoner August 19, 1864; died in prison, Salisbury, N. C., December 10, 1864.

Graham, William L., came home on five-days' furlough, and deserted June, 1863; from Nova Scotia.

Grant, Edward L., on detached service from September 13, 1863, to May 20, 1865, Ordnance Department; mustered out June 2, 1865; lives at 177 Washington Street, Somerville.

Gray, Dexter, wounded August 18, 1864; discharged May 17, 1865; died some twenty years ago.

Hadley, Eugene B., killed in battle February 6, 1865.

Hale, Edward M., went out as second sergeant; on detached service, April 6, 1864; mustered out June 2, 1865; served in the Adjutant-General's Office, War Department, Washington, long after the War; last living in Passaic, N. J.

Hafford, John, discharged June 20, 1863; died November 15, 1905.

Hanley, John H., discharged August 12, 1863; died more than twenty years ago in Somerville.

Herbon, William M., killed in battle August 18, 1864.

Harlow, George R., promoted to corporal May 1, 1864; wounded May 10, 1864; wounded August 18, 1864 (lost an arm); discharged March 17, 1865; lives at Chattanooga,





Hatch, George H., taken prisoner August 19, 1864; died in Salisbury prison February 1, 1865.

Hills, George A., discharged January 29, 1863; lives in Springfield, Mass.

Hagan, Patrick, discharged April 21, 1863; claimed to have served in the Crimean War; died many years ago.

Horgan, Patrick, taken prisoner August 19, 1864; returned May 20, 1865; returned with the Company and mustered out June 2, 1865; died twenty years ago.

Horton, John E., promoted to corporal July 1, 1864; wounded May 8, 1864; taken prisoner August 19, 1864; died in Salisbury prison January 6, 1865.

Howe, Henry E., taken prisoner October 11, 1863; died at Andersonville, Ga., November 22, 1863.

Hyde, Richard J., enlisted in Company I, Fifth Regiment, May 1 to July 31, 1861; went out as sergeant with Company E; taken prisoner October 11, 1863; died at Andersonville August 13, 1864.

Hyde, Thomas L., wounded May 8, 1864; discharged March 9, 1865; last heard from in New York City in the 90's.

Jones, Charles G., taken prisoner August 19, 1864; died in Salisbury prison November 23, 1864.

Kelly, Thomas, discharged October 27, 1863; lives in Medford.

Kendrick, David, taken prisoner August 19, 1864; died in hospital at Annapolis, after an exchange, March 15, 1865.

Kennedy, John, promoted to sergeant; taken prisoner August 19, 1864; escaped; re-captured; finally returned; discharged May 15, 1865; died at Soldiers' Home, Chelsea, July 24, 1898.

Kenneston, Elliot, discharged April 21, 1863; died soon after the War.

Kinsley, Frederick R., second lieutenant Company I, Fifth Regiment, from May 1 to July 31, 1861; went out as captain of Company E; promoted to major July 13, 1864; promoted to colonel June 7, 1865; taken prisoner August 19, 1864; paroled March, 1865; lives at Dorchester, N. H. (Cheever P. O.).





Kinsley, Willard C., enlisted in Company I, Fifth Regiment, from May 1 to July 31, 1861; went out as second lieutenant of Company E; promoted to first lieutenant November 13, 1862; to captain March 30, 1864; wounded June 17, 1864; mortally wounded March 31; died April 2, 1865.

Locke, John F., taken prisoner (Salisbury, N. C.) August 19, 1864; returned May, 1865; discharged May 26, 1865; assistant in Public Library, Boston.

Lovett, Washington, taken prisoner October 11, 1863; died at Andersonville, Ga., July 12, 1864.

McCarthy, John, transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps September 12, 1863; died in Somerville November 2, 1907.

McGurdy, Alexander, served all through the War and came home with the Company; mustered out June 2, 1865; died some twelve or fifteen years ago.

McJunkin, Samuel, musician (bugler); served throughout the War and came home with the Company; mustered out June 2, 1865; died in Somerville May 9, 1887.

McNall, George, served as captain's cook most of the time; served throughout the War and came home with the Company; died in Somerville fifteen years ago.

McQuade, John, discharged January 23, 1863; died, no date.

Merritt, John S., detailed for special service, Construction Corps, December 6, 1863; mustered out June 2, 1865; lived a few years after the War; buried in Somerville Cemetery.

Mills, Edwin, went out as sergeant; promoted to sergeant-major; to second lieutenant January 8, 1864; wounded May 10, 1864; discharged October 19, 1864; lives in Arlington.

Moran, James, promoted to corporal; wounded March 31, 1865; died at Washington, D. C., April, 1865.

Moulton, William, went out as servant to his cousin, who was adjutant of the Regiment; later enlisted in Company E; wounded May 23, 1864; died at Wakefield, 1905.

Myers, George, promoted to corporal; wounded May 23, 1864; died in Florida December 30, 1896.





Newell, James H., musician (bugler), transferred early to the Veteran Reserve Corps, no date; died, no date.

Northey, George A., wounded and taken prisoner May 8, 1864; discharged March 6, 1865; died in Malden September 4, 1902.

Odiorne, William, wounded May 12, 1864; mustered out June 2, 1865; died some fifteen years ago.

Oliver, Francis J., taken prisoner October 11, 1863; died at Andersonville October 10, 1864.

Oliver, Judson W., enlisted in Company I, Fifth Regiment, from May 1 to July 31, 1861; went out as sergeant; taken prisoner October 11, 1863; released April 16, 1864; taken prisoner again February 6, 1865; mustered out June 2, 1865; on the Somerville police force; died April 7, 1908.

O'Neil, Henry, discharged May 15, 1863; died in Somerville, no date.

O'Sullivan, John, wounded June 18, 1864; mustered out June 2, 1865; died in Cambridge November 19, 1875.

Paine, Jeremiah T., died in hospital October 13, 1863.

Palmer, William D., promoted to corporal; to sergeant; killed in battle May 8, 1864.

Parkhurst, Melville C., went out as corporal; promoted to second lieutenant, Company B (Roxbury), September 8, 1864; to first lieutenant January 15, 1865; commissioned captain Company B June 7, 1865; Chief of Police, Somerville; resides at 56 Columbus Avenue, Somerville.

Perry, Gideon W., put on special service, September 8, 1864, to May 20, 1865; mustered out June 2, 1865; lives at West Fairlee, Vt.

Pinkham, Horace W., discharged December 9, 1862; dead (?).

Powers, Robert, killed in battle, May 10, 1864.

Roberts, John S., killed in battle August 19, 1864, while carrying the Brigade color.

Rollins, Sumner P., a half-brother of Kenneston; died November 22, 1862.





Shaw, Henry, detailed to special service (hospital duty), October 3, 1862, to May, 1865; mustered out June 2, 1865; lives at 121 Cross Street, Somerville.

Shaw, John B., brother of the above; detailed to special service (hospital duty), August 5, 1863 to May, 1865; mustered out June 2, 1865; address, 121 Cross Street, Somerville.

Skehan, John, discharged February 9, 1863; probably not living.

Smith, Addison, discharged July 1, 1863; died in Somerville June 25, 1895.

Stevens, Leslie, had seen service earlier; went out as corporal; discharged January 25, 1863; lives at Canton, Mass.

Stickney, Hiram C., discharged April 22, 1863; probably not living.

Thomas, William H., on special duty as guard for quartermaster's stores, January 12, 1864, to May 27, 1865; mustered out June 2, 1865; lives at 12 Essex Street, Somerville.

Thompson, Frank W., taken prisoner August 19, 1864; perhaps he died January 10, 1865.

Van de Sande, George, went out as corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged August 22, 1863, to accept commission as second lieutenant in a regiment of colored troops; died since the war.

Whitmore, Joseph W., taken prisoner October 11, 1863; died at Andersonville, Ga., July 1, 1864.

Willcutt, William C., deserted in Washington September 9, 1862; arrested and sent to Fort Independence; discharged for disability; probably not living.

The Company originally was composed of three officers and ninety-eight enlisted men. William Moulton and William F. Boynton, who joined later, came from Somerville, and are included in this record, and make the number accounted for 103. In June, 1864, Company E was reinforced by some recruits from Massachusetts, and about forty men from the Twelfth and Thirteenth Massachusetts Regiments whose time had expired transferred to our Company. In all, there were 146 men connected with Company E from 1864.





Number killed .....	8
Number died in Rebel prisons.....	12
Number died in camp or hospitals.....	4
Number wounded.....	18
Number discharged for disability.....	22
Number discharged for promotion.....	1
Number transferred to Invalids' Corps.....	10
Number transferred to United States Navy.....	1
Number on detached service.....	10
Number returned prisoners.....	8
Number deserted.....	4
Number musicians, not in battle.....	2
Number officer's cook, not in battle.....	1
Number present during the entire two years and ten months of enlistment.....	5
	<hr/>
	106
Names on two lists (wounded and prisoners).....	3
	<hr/>
	103

As nearly as can be ascertained, there are twenty-seven of the original 103 now living, April, 1908.





## REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON NECROLOGY OF THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Ladies and Gentlemen: Six members of the Society have died during the year 1907, as follows:—

Lucy M. (Clark) Knapp, died June 16, 1907.

Daniel E. Chase, died July 13, 1907.

Charles W. Sawyer, died June 21, 1907.

L. Frank Arnold, died July 25, 1907.

Isaac B. Kendall, died November 26, 1907.

Nathan L. Pennock, died December 10, 1907.

Lucy M. Knapp was born December 2, 1832, near where the Stone Building now stands in Union Square. Her father, Joseph Clark, one of the numerous brick makers in the town at that time, was from Windham, N. H., and her mother, Lucy Brooks Locke, was a Cambridge woman. As there was no high school in Somerville in her school days, she attended Woburn Academy, then a well-known institution, and often spoke with pleasure of the years spent there and the friends and acquaintances thus formed. She was always interested in the First Universalist Church of Somerville, and at one time was a teacher in the Sunday School. She was married August 9, 1859, to Oren S. Knapp, then a teacher in the Prospect Hill School, afterward a Boston lawyer. He died in November, 1890. Two daughters survive their parents: Lizzie G. and Marion Knapp; a brother of Mrs. Knapp is also living, S. Adams Clark.

Mrs. Knapp was of a sweet and gentle disposition, beloved by all who knew her. Of a retiring nature, she gave most of her thought and energy to her home and family. She was interested in the old families of Somerville and in the city's history. Although she seldom attended its meetings, she kept a warm place in her heart for the Somerville Historical Society. She contributed a "Neighborhood Sketch" on "Washington Street as It Was," which appeared in *Historic Leaves* in 1903.

Daniel E. Chase, born in Warner, N. H., in 1829, was a descendant of Aquila Chase, and thus in family rela-





tions with Salmon P. Chase and other distinguished men. Mr. Chase came to Boston in 1850, and in 1857 moved to Somerville. He served as a member of the first Board of Aldermen, representing Ward 2. He was elected to the School Board in 1874, and served four years. His business was that of a distiller, at first with the Boston firm of Ezra Trull & Co., and later under his own name in Somerville.

In 1850 Mr. Chase married Miss Mary A. Hoxie, of Castine, Me. The first Mrs. Chase lived to celebrate the fiftieth anniversary of her wedding day, dying in 1900. In May, 1904, Mr. Chase married Miss Emmeline May Grimes, who survives him. Five children are left: Charles Henry, Washington Irving, Dr. Daniel E., Jr., Mrs. Mary Ella Arnold, all of Somerville, and Mrs. Albert C. Robinson, of Reading.

Mr. Chase was prominently identified with the Masonic fraternity and the Odd Fellows. He was a member, also, of the Order of the Eastern Star, of the Wonohaquaham tribe of Red Men, and of the Somerville Veteran Firemen's Association, as well as of the Somerville Historical Society. As a man, Mr. Chase represented the "rugged New Hampshire gentleman of the old school," manly, strong, and honest. He left many friends.

Charles W. Sawyer was born in Charlestown February 28, 1833. His grandmother's uncle, Asa Pollard, was the first man killed at Bunker Hill. Mr. Sawyer was educated at the old Training Field Grammar School, graduating at fourteen. He took a year in a private school, and then a course in a Boston commercial college. Leaving school, he was employed first in his father's restaurant in City Square, Charlestown, and at the age of twenty was appointed clerk in the Charlestown post-office. In 1869, having served fifteen years as assistant postmaster, he left the government service to enter the real estate business. He did an immense amount of work in adjusting claims in behalf of the Boston Elevated and the Boston & Maine Railroad, as well as for the city of Boston and many syndicates and individuals. In fact, he became an expert in real estate.

In 1873 he moved to Somerville, where he resided until his





death, taking active and aggressive part in public affairs. In 1875 he was elected to the Common Council, and the next year to the Board of Aldermen. Many city improvements were made, some of them in the face of opposition. The most important was the laying out of Broadway Park. In 1877, the first year that the Board of Health became a separate department, Mr. Sawyer was its first chairman, and served two years. The Board discovered and abated innumerable city nuisances. Next Mr. Sawyer was appointed to the Board of Trustees of the Public Library, on which he served five years, and was especially active in securing for the Library its fine collection of German works. Mr. Sawyer read German with pleasure, having traveled in Germany and other parts of Europe.

He was a well-known Mason, a member of the Henry Price Lodge of Charlestown, one of the founders of Soley Lodge, and a Royal Arch Mason and Knight Templar. He aided in forming the Coeur de Lion Commandery of Charlestown, and for two years served as commander. Mr. Sawyer was for nearly half a century president of the 999th Artillery Association of Charlestown. He was also an Odd Fellow, a member of the Manomet Club, and president for two years of the Training Field School Association in Charlestown. He married Julia A. Heal, of Belmont, Me., who died in 1894. One son survives his parents, Dr. Edward K. Sawyer, born in 1868.

L. Frank Arnold was born in Somerville September 4, 1845, son of Leonard and Irene G. (Clark) Arnold. He lived in Somerville all his life. He attended the old Prospect Hill School, was employed for many years as a bookkeeper, and afterward for six years kept a boarding and baiting stable for horses in Boston. Mr. Arnold was a member of John Abbot Lodge, A. F. and A. M., since 1867, and was also a member of Highland Chapter, Order of the Eastern Star. He was the only resident of Somerville that enjoyed membership in the Society of Cincinnati—an order formed by General Washington and his officers in 1783. He held this membership for eleven years through his great-grandfather, Captain Samuel Frost, of Framingham, one of George Washington's officers, and succeeded his father in it,





who at the time of his own death had belonged to the society for fifty-five years. Mr. Arnold married Lilla E. Poole, of Worcester, October 25, 1877, who survives him, without children.

A friend says of Mr. Arnold: "He was devoted to his home and thoughtful and kind to every one. He was suddenly stricken helpless while in the vigor of full health, but was cheerful and patient through all his long illness. He was loved and respected by all who knew him."

Nathan Loveman Pennock was born in Strafford, Vt., June 10, 1814, and was the son of Peter and Phebe (Fellows) Pennock, of that town. He left school to learn the harness business, and followed this business during the greater part of his long life. As an avocation, he was an itinerant singing master. From 1838 to 1863 he resided in Randolph, Vt. In the latter year he came to Lexington, and in 1864 to Somerville, where he remained till his death. For twelve years Mr. Pennock held a responsible position in connection with the McLean Asylum. On the completion of the Davis Schoolhouse, about twenty-five years ago, he was made janitor of the school, and acceptably performed his duties, beloved by the children, until within two days of his death.

He married in 1844 Ellen Moulton, niece and adopted daughter of Hon. Dudley Chase. Two of the four children of this marriage are now living: Salmon Cotton Pennock, of Somerville, and Ellen M. Pennock, of Jacksonville, Fla. Mr. Pennock's second wife was Mrs. Mary A. Cheney, of Randolph, whom he married in 1877. She, with their two children, Anna Louisa and Nathan Lewis, survives her husband. Elizabeth, the late wife of J. L. Tyler, former teacher and principal of the Brastow School, was a daughter by the first marriage.

Mr. Pennock was a man of remarkable physical and mental alertness, considering his advanced age. He was fond of reading, especially poetry and travel. His cordial greeting on the street will be recalled by many, for it was his custom to speak to all he met. Mr. Pennock was interested in this Society, and prepared a paper on his Reminiscences which was delivered at one of the regular meetings.

[To be continued.]







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1908.

Vol. VII

No. 2.







## CONTENTS

MILK ROW SCHOOL TO 1849  
OLD CEMETERY INSCRIPTIONS

Frank Mortimer Hayes 25  
Charles D. Elliot 42

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT  
19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postage

Single copies, 25 cents

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of William B. Holmes,  
317 Broadway, Winter Hill, to whom all communications  
regarding exchanges should be addressed.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAYES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. FARLE, Editor





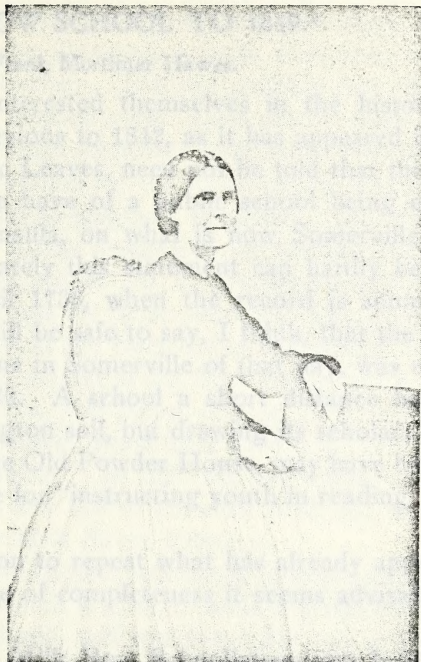
# HISTORIC LEAVES

VII JULY, 1908

No. 2

## MILK ROOM

By Miss M. Burnham



MISS SARAH M. BURNHAM

Those who have interested themselves in the history of  
Somerville schools probably in 1912, as it has appeared in re-  
members of Historic Leaves, found that the first  
dated date which we have of a school building estab-  
lished the Peninsula, on a hill, on a hill, on a hill, on a hill,  
in 1778. Unfortunately, the date is said  
to be estimated until 1778, when the school is said to  
be opened. But it was safe to say, that the Milk  
Room School, the only one in Somerville of the same date  
as far from 1778. A school a school a school a school  
and a school, on Arlington Hill, but down a hill, down a hill,  
as far south as the Old Powder House, a school a school  
and a school, both were "instructing southern reading, writing  
and ciphering."

It was not my intention to repeat what has already appeared  
but for the sake of completeness it seems advisable to  
state a few points.

First when the first school building in Somerville was built  
it was never known. "The Milk Room" is known  
from references on the town books to repairs made there.  
Undoubtedly it stood where later structures were built, on  
corner of the cemetery lot, Somerville Avenue.  
May 3, 1777, the town voted to fix up "the Milk Room" for  
schools. Just where this building stood I have not been  
able to learn. In previous articles on this subject I went on the

and a paper read before the Somerville Historical Society, February





# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. VII.

JULY, 1908

No. 2.

## MILK ROW SCHOOL TO 1849.\*

By Frank Mortimer Hawes.

Those who have interested themselves in the history of Charlestown schools previous to 1842, as it has appeared in recent numbers of Historic Leaves, need not be told that the first recorded date which we have of a public school being established outside the Peninsula, on what is now Somerville soil, was in 1728. Unfortunately this statement can hardly be said to be substantiated until 1736, when the record is somewhat more explicit. But it will be safe to say, I think, that the Milk Row School, the only one in Somerville of that day, was established not far from 1730. A school a short distance beyond Alewife Brook, on Arlington soil, but drawing its scholars from a point as far south as the Old Powder House, may have been of an equal age; both were for "instructing youth in reading, writing, and ciphering."

It is not my intention to repeat what has already appeared in print, but for the sake of completeness it seems advisable to emphasize a few points.

Just when the first Milk Row Schoolhouse was built will probably never be known. That one was standing in 1780 is inferred from references on the town books to repairs made thereon. Undoubtedly it stood where later structures were built, on the easterly corner of the cemetery lot, Somerville Avenue.

May 5, 1777, the town voted to fix up "the block house" for a schoolhouse. Just where this building stood I have not been able to learn. In previous articles on this subject I went on the

---

\*From a paper read before the Somerville Historical Society, February 4, 1908.





supposition that it was somewhere on the Peninsula, for we know that the schoolhouses there were both destroyed in the general conflagration of June 17, 1775, and school affairs were at a standstill for some time thereafter. But the more I think of it, the more inclined I am to believe that, being a relic of earlier days, this "block house" would naturally be located in the outskirts of such a community as we imagine this one was. Another thing which seems to favor the theory that it may have stood on Somerville soil is the fact that some of the committee for making the necessary repairs were men who lived in this part of Charlestown. Is it not possible that this ancient edifice stood on the cemetery lot? How did the town obtain its title to that corner of this lot where later schoolhouses stood?

The local name for the school which we are considering, almost from first to last, was, doubtless, "the Milk Row School," but officially it was designated by various titles. After 1790 it was known as school No. 2. Sometime after 1801 and before 1812 (the records for those years are lost) it was known as No. 3, the new one at the Neck being designated No. 2. In 1829 it was called No. 5 (that at the Neck being No. 3 and the new one on lower Winter Hill Road, No. 4). The sections of the town where these schools stood were known in early times not as districts, but "wards." In 1839 our old school was known as Primary No. 20, and last of all, after 1846, and when a Somerville school, as the Milk Street Primary.

One of the earliest acts of the incorporated body of trustees was to vote, March 6, 1795, to build a schoolhouse on Milk Row. This act, no doubt, met with favor, for now and then the records are not silent to the fact that some jealousy existed, as this section of the town felt that it was not getting its proportional share of the school money. The sum voted for the new building was £100, or \$500. Three years after, or May 14, 1798, when the trustees exhibited the building account, we learn that the cost was not far from \$750. For the maintenance of this school for the year 1801-2, the town appropriated \$287.

From the trustees' report of May 8, 1812, we learn that there were 133 school children, between the ages of four and





fourteen, outside the Neck, or less than one-eighth of the entire school population; and that no children there under seven or over fourteen were allowed to attend the town school (within the Peninsula).

Two years later, April 12, 1814, when the trustees made their semi-annual visit, this school, then under the instruction of Moses Hall, had an attendance of sixty-nine pupils. In their report they add that the schools without the Neck are kept only part of the year, and the scholars there are not confined to any age limit. (Note.—The name of Moses Hall is found in Charlestown records. See Wyman's History, and Volume II., Report of the Record Commissioners of Boston, pp. 248, 252.)

After their visit of April 12, 1815, the trustees report this school to be "in a respectable state of improvement. The females at this and every examination have been distinguished for their juvenile attainments as well as propriety of behavior." The master for the winter term, 1814-15, four months probably, was P. T. Gray, who received \$82.50 for his services.

April 19, 1816, Milk Row was visited by two of the trustees and several of the inhabitants of the district. "The school appeared very well, notwithstanding many difficulties under which it had labored during the winter. Yorick S. Gordon, the teacher, discharged his duties acceptably." This gentleman, some time after this, was advertised in the papers to keep a private school in Boston. Captain George A. Gordon, of this city, who is authority for anything relating to the Gordon family, informs me that Yorick Sterne Gordon was born at Hancock, N. H., January 9, 1793; the second son of Samuel and Lydia (Ames) Gordon. He died in South Carolina, May 12, 1820, where he was employed as a teacher. He was educated at Dartmouth College, in the class of 1817, but did not graduate.

March 25, 1818, the trustees visited School No. 3. Fifty scholars were present out of a total of eighty, "and they appeared well in all their performances." Daniel Russell, the teacher, received \$115. for his winter's services. The next year, 1819, we read that this school was going on very well under the care of Mr. Russell until the building was destroyed by fire. This oc-





curred March 3. We can imagine the scholars were not wholly in tears, as they escaped the ordeal of an examination that season. The late Mrs. Sarah Tufts Kidder attended the Milk Row School at the time it was burned. It has come to us through a reliable source that this old building was a "double decker," that is, not a two-story structure, but with a gallery running around on three sides of the schoolroom, thus affording seating capacity for gatherings of all kinds.

The report of 1819 says: "The district commences in Cambridge road, sweeps around the Cambridge line, runs across Milk Row by Isaac Tufts' to Winter Hill, by the house of Joseph Adams, Esq., to Mystic River, and down to the cluster of houses near the entrance of 3 Pole Lane, and over to the place of beginning. It contains sixty-one families and 196 children, from four to fourteen, about one-third of whom are under seven years of age."

The following May it was voted that the new Milk Row School be erected where the former one stood. Isaac Tufts and James K. Frothingham were made a building committee, and it was decided to build of wood. The house was completed by October. "Its sides were filled in with brick and it was finished in a plain, neat style with two coats of paint on the outside." The cost was \$675. Its predecessor had succumbed to the flames after a service of twenty-two or twenty-three years. This newer one, the last of the Milk Row schools, after housing a generation of children was destined to a like fate.

October 22 of that year, the school, which was in charge of Miss Charlotte Remington, was visited by Rev. Edward Turner, Isaac Tufts, and James K. Frothingham, three of the trustees. "They were highly gratified with the specimens of the children's improvement, particularly in reading." This was the first public gathering in the new building. The winter term (1819-20) was kept by Daniel Russell, who had been in charge for three seasons, and at the close the commendatory word was that the school had passed an examination "which was highly creditable to themselves and their instructor." Paige, in his *History of Cambridge*, p. 650, states that Daniel Russell was eldest son of





Philemon R. and Martha (Tufts) Russell, born about 1793; long in office at the State's prison, Charlestown; died Ipswich, December 11, 1849, aged fifty-six. Wyman's "Charlestown" makes the same statement, but we have it on the best authority that Philemon R. Russell had no such son. The settlement of the estate of Mrs. Russell's father, wherein the grandchildren are named, confirms the fact that there was no Daniel. I have come no nearer than this in my attempt to learn who Daniel Russell, the teacher, was.

At this time the school had an enrollment of ninety-two. It continued to increase in numbers, as the returns for the two following winters show, when a Mr. Parker was in charge, with 100 scholars for his first term and 119 for the second season. At his last examination "some handsome specimens of writing were particularly noticed." Who this Mr. Parker was I am unable to state positively. His work as a teacher is so highly commended that it would not be strange if he were the same gentleman who was elected to the board of trustees for the following years, 1823, 1824, and 1825. His last year he was president of the board, and more than once he was one of a special committee to examine Milk Row School, the last time being October 4, 1825. This was Leonard Moody Parker (see Wyman's "Charlestown"), son of James Parker of Shirley, where he was born January 9, 1789. He became a councilor-at-law, naval officer, and state senator. He married Martha Lincoln of Worcester in 1814, and a daughter, Sarah Rebecca, was born while he lived in Charlestown, March, 1822. If he was the teacher in question, he was about thirty-one years old at that time.

The two following winters, when the school was taught by Nathan Blanchard, there was a falling off to 100 pupils, 1822-3, and 107 pupils in 1823-4. This was the showing of the district when the town voted to build a new schoolhouse, spring of 1824, on the Pound lot, on lower Winter Hill Road.

The reports show that a summer school had existed in the East Somerville neighborhood since 1813, and that it was held in a private building. Our old school, shorn of a part of her patronage, now had to endure a new experience—she had a rival





that was to grow and wax strong, while she, alas! the mother of schools, was to become less and less. Who at that time could have foreseen the changes that were to come with the many divisions and sub-divisions of this old school district?

That summer, 1824, Miss Eliza Wayne at Milk Row had a school of eighty pupils, and the next year her sister, Charlotte, had seventy-five. These ladies taught twenty weeks, or five months each, at a stipend of \$4. weekly. In commendation of the former, the trustees reported that "the appearance and performance of her scholars as well, in writing, geography, and grammar very well. Some samples of needle work, with baskets, etc., were exhibited, all neatly executed." It was at this time that the trustees voted that schools beyond the Neck be no longer permitted to be closed on the afternoon of Wednesday, and that five and one-half days' service be required of the instructors.

A venerable lady who has always lived in this city attended Charlotte Wayne's school, eighty-three years ago. She remembers her teacher well and once went with her on a visit to Charlestown, where Miss Wayne had a married sister living, a Mrs. Winship.

That winter, 1825-6, the Milk Row School was kept, five months, by Joshua O. Colburn, at \$30. per month. Timothy Tufts remembers his name well, but can give no information about the man, or his predecessor, Michael Coombs, who taught the winter before that. Passing over the next year, when the teachers were a Miss Flanders and Ezekiel D. Dyer, we come to a name which stands out prominently in the school reports, that of Miss Ann E. Whipple, who taught the school at two different periods. At this time, May, 1827, she came with a fine record from the Lower Winter Hill School, where she had taught the previous season. So satisfactory was her work in both places that she was induced to keep a private school of a few weeks in the interim between the fall and winter terms. Later on we shall have occasion to speak of Miss Whipple again.

The next teachers, of whom I have learned nothing, were Ira Stickney and Eliza D. Ward. Joseph W. Jenks, son of Dr.





Jenks, a Charlestown divine, taught during the winter of 1828-9. He had a brother who kept a private school in that part of Malden which is now Everett. (Note.—While here Mr. Jenks boarded with Mrs. Phipps, daughter of a Mr. Copp, who lived in a house at the lower end of Craigie Street, on the Spring estate. Mr. Farrar, a later teacher, boarded also with Mrs. Phipps. Miss Martha Tufts has in her possession a silver medal, given her in 1827, when a pupil of Mr. Dyer. This gentleman boarded with Miss Sarah Hawkins; Mr. Sherman, and probably Mr. Coombs, boarded there also. Miss Hawkins was the sister of Guy C. Hawkins, and the house stood on Bow Street, near the site of the Methodist church. It was here that Miss Hawkins opened a private school, to be mentioned later on. She married Henry Adams, Esq., and it was with them that other teachers found a home, among them Miss Sarah M. Burnham.)

The length of the school year had now increased to ten and one-half months. Miss Catherine Blanchard, who is remembered by Timothy Tufts, was the next teacher; she was followed by Henry C. Allen and Lewis Colby, who completed that school year, 1829-30. The number enrolled for the winter was seventy-four. We have learned that Mr. Allen came from Bridgewater. Lewis Colby, a student at Harvard College, finished out the term and proved most acceptable. He was born at Bowdoinham, Me., August 19, 1808, and graduated from Harvard in the class of 1832. He also held the degree of A. M. and graduated from the Newton Theological school in 1835. He was ordained to the Baptist ministry at Cambridgeport in September of that year. During the years 1836-38 he seems to have been teaching in the South—perhaps as professor in the theological department of a denominational school in South Carolina. From 1836 to 1842 he was pastor of a church at South Berwick, Me., and from 1842 to 1849, of the Free Street church, Portland. From 1849 to 1858 he was connected with a Baptist publishing house in New York city. From 1858 to 1865 we find him living in Cambridge without a pastorate. After that he was associated with the Benedict Institute at Columbia, S. C., and from 1876 to 1878 he was president of that institution.





He died in Cambridge, January 6, 1888, in his eightieth year. From this barren sketch, it is possible to conceive somewhat of his long and useful life.

During the spring and summer of 1830 Milk Row School had the services of Miss Sarah A. Mead, a young lady from Waltham. She was followed by Jeremiah Sanborn, who taught the winter term, 1830-1. Miss Mead was born in Cambridge and was educated at the Lexington Institute, when under the charge of Rev. Caleb Stetson. This, it will be remembered, developed into our first State Normal School. It was here that Miss Mead became acquainted with her future husband, Bowen Adams Tufts, son of Thomas Tufts of Charlestown and Lexington. Mr. Tufts was educated at Bradford Academy, and before marriage was also a teacher in this vicinity. For several terms he taught school at Charlestown "End," called in this history the Gardner Row district. At another time he was teaching in Cambridge in a school just over the Somerville line from our Elm Street, and boarded with the parents of Timothy Tufts. Mr. and Mrs. Bowen Tufts passed their married life in Lexington. One of their large family of eleven children, Mrs. Selwyn Z. Bowman, is a resident of this city. Mrs. Sarah Mead Tufts died in October, 1874, aged about seventy; among her pupils at the old Milk Row School were the late Robert and Quincy A. Vinal.

A school census, taken in 1830, by Messrs. John Runey and Guy C. Hawkins, reports 109 scholars between the ages of four and fifteen in this district. The school calendar was now lengthened to the full twelve months of the year. The school building, now about a dozen years old, was reported to be in need of repairs and April 25, 1731, John Sweetser received \$64.62 for attending to the same.

The year 1831-2 finds the school in a fine condition, apparently, with Miss Catherine Blanchard engaged for her second term and John N. Sherman for the winter. At the close of the season, on the recommendation of Guy C. Hawkins, it was voted to retain the service of Mr. Sherman for the entire year at a salary of \$360. This is the first instance, in this part of





Charlestown, of a teacher being hired by the year. "The trustees by this action incur the additional expense of \$72 for meeting the wishes of the people at Milk Row." So satisfactory was Mr. Sherman, as a teacher, that he was retained in all two years and a half, an extraordinary event in the history of this old school.

Efforts to learn something of this man's history have thus far failed. A suggestion has been made that he may have come from Sudbury or its vicinity. Of his pupils here Miss Martha Tufts, Captain Francis Tufts, and their sister, Mrs. Allen, remember him well. He was a popular teacher, and seems to have ruled by "moral suasion" rather than by the rod. One means of interesting his pupils was to take them on little excursions of inspection. One of these was to the State's prison in Charlestown, another to Mt. Auburn, which had but recently been laid out, a delightfully rural spot in those days.

In 1833 a curtailment of holidays was made; both Wednesday and Saturday afternoons were to be granted, but aside from this concession the actual number of days when school did not keep was reduced to fourteen for the year, viz.: Election day, Fast day, the day after the April examinations, June 1, June 17, July 4, and in August, the days of holding the American Institute (not more than four probably), Commencement day at Harvard, the day after the October examinations, Thanksgiving day, Christmas day.

John Tufts and others, about this time, enter a petition for the removal of the schoolhouse in Milk Row, and the matter is referred to three trustees, including Mr. Hawkins. This seems to be the first move towards establishing a school at Prospect Hill on Medford Street. The petition was justified, as the school population of the district had now increased to 127.

In the spring of 1834 Mr. Sherman was succeeded by Ann W. Locke, who, following such a popular teacher, seems to have had her troubles. Fortunately, the trustees sustained her, but some unruly ones evidently vented their spite by turning it upon the schoolhouse; for we read under date of June 30, "It having been represented by C. Thompson that the windows in





the schoolhouse have been badly broken, it was voted that the committee in charge get evidence and act as they think proper." Repairs this year amounted to \$112. Miss Locke very soon after this became one of the primary teachers on the Peninsula, where her school was burned in a general conflagration, August 31, 1835.

The winter term of 1834-5 was under the management of Calvin Farrar, concerning whom the general opinion was that he was a good teacher, even if he did wield the rod, or, less metaphorically, a cow-hide strap which he kept at hand in his desk. Mr. Farrar was born at Waterford, Me., May 22, 1814, and graduated at Bowdoin College in 1834, in the same class with an elder brother, Luther Farrar, who, according to our school records, received the call to Milk Row, but for some reason, probably that of ill health, never came. They were the sons of Calvin and Bathsheba Burt (Bates) Farrar, and were descended from Daniel, brother of Deacon Samuel Farrar, of Lincoln, Mass. After graduating, young Calvin entered on a theological course at Cambridge, but he never went into the active ministry on account of his health. He experienced so much benefit from the "water cure" in Brattleboro, Vt., that he was led to a careful study of that method of treatment, and opened a similar institution in his native town, which, with a competent physician to help him, proved successful for a few years. Mr. Farrar was esteemed for his social qualities, pure character, and philanthropic spirit. He was a man of considerable culture and contributed often to the press, gave lectures on various subjects, was active in the cause of education, and generous to young men in their efforts to secure its advantages. He was zealous also in promoting all movements in favor of temperance. He was never married. He died January 6, 1839. My informants think that "Artemas Ward" was a nephew of Mr. Farrar.

In the spring of 1835 the trustees were fortunate to secure again the services of Miss Ann E. Whipple, this time to teach the year round, the second instance in the history of this school. The number of scholars enrolled was 116, and a most urgent petition, presented by Edwin Munroe and others, asked the trus-





tees to recommend to the voters at town meeting the expediency of building another school building. The trustees complied, and the result was that by the following November a new house was erected on Medford Street, in what was now first designated the Prospect Hill district.

Some of the women teachers of to-day will be pleased to know that "Miss Whipple was appointed at the same compensation for her winter school as was given to a male teacher," \$30. a month. So well did she sustain herself during the two years which she taught at this time, that the trustees rewarded her by putting her in charge of the new Prospect Hill School. We may safely say that during the teaching of Mr. Parker, Mr. Sherman, and Miss Whipple, the Milk Row School was at its high water mark. Shorn a second time of a large strip of territory from which to draw scholars, we can understand why the old school, as far as numbers were concerned, never again attained unto its former greatness.

In 1837 we have the first mention of an "annual vacation," which was to begin August 17 and to continue to September 1. We understand that a private school was opened in the neighborhood of Union Square at this time, kept by Miss Sarah Hawkins at her own home. For the spring and summer of that year Rachel Y. Stevens was engaged as Miss Whipple's successor. She was the sister of Mrs. Underwood (wife of one of the trustees) and finds her best recommendation in the school records, which say that she was engaged because of the illness of the regular teacher, to finish out the winter term at the Gardner Row School. A Mr. Oliver March taught that winter at Milk Row.

Educational matters in 1838-9 are interesting for several reasons; one is that Miss Sarah M. Burnham first appears as the teacher at our old school. This lady had proved her ability while teaching a term at the Russell district in 1836, and again at the Lower Winter Hill School in 1837. Of her first term at Milk Row, the report says that she had seventy scholars enrolled, but the low percentage of attendance (an average of fifty) is lamented. The report speaks in high terms of her efficiency.





She was followed that winter by Joel Pierce, "an experienced, thorough teacher; very precise in his regulations and mode of teaching." The school numbered eighty scholars. He was the last male teacher to preside over the Milk Row School, and received \$192.50.

In the spring of 1839 a new teacher, Miss Mary Dodge, was hired to teach at "School No. 5." According to recommendations considered the year previous the trustees now made a radical change in the schools without the Neck; the one at Prospect Hill was elevated to the grammar grade, and four primary schools were established,—the Prospect Hill, the Upper and the Lower Winter Hill, and the Milk Row. The two at the upper end of the town, namely, the Russell and the Gardner Row, were still designated as district schools. The change necessitated some slight alterations in the existing buildings, involving a total outlay of \$788.37. The report adds: "The cumbersome desks have been removed from the Milk Row and Winter Hill schoolhouses, and these have been fitted up for the better accommodation of the primaries." James Twombly was the person engaged to make these changes. As Miss Dodge had not given satisfaction, by a unanimous vote of the trustees Miss Burnham was recalled to the place in November, as teacher of "School No. 20," or the Milk Row Primary, as our old school was henceforth to be called. Hers was the largest of the four primary schools, being larger than the two on Winter Hill Road together, and more than a third larger than the primary department at Prospect Hill. The average attendance of her school, for some reason, was the lowest.

This was about the condition of things at Milk Row when Somerville, with a school population of 294—less the number that was set off to Arlington, say thirty scholars—was created a new township in March, 1842. The local trustees for Milk Row district, under the old regime, and after Guy C. Hawkins retired in 1835, were Alfred Allen and James Underwood, one or both, till the division of the town. Mr. Underwood died in office March 4, 1840.

Among the few things inherited by the new town of Som-





erville was the Milk Row schoolhouse, the oldest school structure on our soil, dating from 1819, and valued at \$650.

Among other things that "fell to us" were a few teachers and some of the trustees. Miss Burnham, in point of service, was the oldest of the former, having been first elected to a Charlestown school in the spring of 1836. She remained with us until August, 1846. Up to that time this was an unprecedented term of service within our borders. She received a salary of \$210. Somerville benefited by the experience of two old trustees, Guy C. Hawkins and Alfred Allen, who were elected members of our first school board. We may believe that the policy of our schools, at least for a few years, was much the same as before 1842.

With the growth of the town, Miss Burnham's school increased from fifty-one, the number in 1842, to 101 pupils when she left it. This we learn from the semi-annual examinations, which came—as of old—in the spring and fall. The whole number of scholars in Somerville in 1844, between the ages of four and sixteen, as taken by the assessors (Levi Russell, Fitch Cutter, and David A. Sanborn) was 306.

May 19, 1846, the committee voted to recommend the town to build a new grammar schoolhouse near the burying ground on Milk Street, "provided a suitable lot can be obtained at a cost not exceeding three cents per foot." A lot was found, and immediate steps were taken to build thereon. It was at this juncture that Miss Burnham resigned. There is no direct reference on the records to Miss Burnham during all these years, and no allusion to her severing her connection with the school. Her efficiency is commended in general terms along with the other primary teachers. Evidently Somerville lost a good teacher when they let Miss Burnham go to Cambridge. There are several now living in this city who were her old pupils. For information about her I am chiefly indebted to Mrs. Martha Ellen (Bonner) Libby, who was a Milk Row scholar, Francis Cogswell, for so many years the superintendent of schools in Cambridge, and Mrs. Harriette Reed Woodbury, a lifelong friend of Miss Burnham,





In his school report for 1879, page 40, in speaking of teachers who had resigned that year, Mr. Cogswell says: "One resigned after a service in the schools of Cambridge of more than thirty years. When I say that she was associated with me as head assistant (having charge of the English) for twenty years in the Putnam Grammar School, it will not be deemed inappropriate that I speak of her more at length.

"Miss Sarah M. Burham, having taught for two or three years in what was known as the Eastern Primary School (where she went after leaving Somerville), was appointed during the year 1848 a teacher in the Putnam School, which position she held till her resignation, June 1, 1879. She was a conscientious teacher. She did not allow, as is too often the case, outside attractions to engross her mind, or tax her strength, so as to unfit her for the daily work of the school.

"During all these years, except when abroad in Europe, by permission of the School Committee, she was almost without exception at her post, efficiently discharging her duties. Not content with doing the ordinary daily work of the school, though she did this most thoroughly, she sought to awaken in her pupils a desire for a wider range of studies. Her cabinet of minerals, the many books her scholars read, the drawings upon the blackboards, bear witness to the success of her efforts. Though her term of service was long, it was one of increasing value, and one of the secrets of this is, she was a constant student. No year was allowed to pass that she did not mark out for herself a definite plan of study. Miss Burnham carries into her retirement the respect and esteem of her many pupils and of all who knew her intimately."

After giving up school work she devoted herself to authorship, and among her works I have learned the names of the following, most of which may be found in the Somerville Public Library: "History and Uses of Lime-Stones and Marbles," Boston, 1883; "Precious Stones in Nature, Art, and Literature," Boston, 1889; "Struggles of the Nations," Boston (two volumes); "Pleasant Memories of Foreign Travel," Boston, 1896. Lee & Shepard were the publishers.





From Mrs. Libby I learned that Miss Burnham was a member of the Baptist Church at East Cambridge, and that my informant was also in her Sunday School class there. She also remembered that her old teacher boarded in the family of Squire Henry Adams on Bow Street. The clerk of the Second Baptist Church of Cambridge informs me that Miss Burnham united with that church May 31, 1840, and died August 24, 1901. Mrs. Libby thinks she lived to be eighty-five years of age. Of her antecedents I have learned little. In her later years she was quite alone in the world; her burial was at Goffstown, N. H. The photograph which is reproduced with this article was contributed by Mrs. Woodbury, of Methuen.

August 17, 1846, Adaline L. Sanborn was elected teacher of the Milk Row Primary. Her first examination took place September 28 following, when she had on her list 101 scholars. She had to undergo no slight ordeal that day, when she faced "Messrs. Bell, Allen, Forster, Magoun, and Hill, of the School Board," who no doubt had come to see how the new teacher was doing. Another primary school was started that year in the Leland district near by. This school was held in a room hired for the purpose, and Miss Frances B. Adams was the teacher. At her examination October 2 she had an enrollment of sixty-eight pupils. Meanwhile on the lot of land recently purchased, at the corner of Milk and Kent Streets, a schoolhouse was built, the duplicate of one that was being erected at the same time in East Somerville, and January 8, 1847, it received the name of the Franklin School. One room was given to a new grammar department, and Miss Frances B. Adams took charge of the primary scholars. At the February examination, 1847, in consequence of these changes, Miss Sanborn's school was reduced to a total of sixty-four scholars, and her numbers continued to diminish. The school report for 1847 says: "The Primary School at Milk Street, formerly one of our largest, embracing nearly or quite 100 pupils, contains at the present time about forty, the decrease being mainly attributable to the erection of the Franklin School." At the examination February 13, 1849, Miss Sanborn's school had a showing of only thirty-seven, with





an average attendance of twenty. In consequence of this decrease, the committee voted at its meeting, held June 27, that Milk Street Primary be discontinued after the summer vacation, and that two assistant teachers be employed, one at the Prospect Hill Primary, the other at the Franklin Primary.

At their meeting held July 13, the Committee voted "to recommend to the Selectmen to offer suitable reward for the apprehension and conviction of the person or persons who caused the destruction of the Milk Row Primary School on the night of the 11th instant." July 31 Clark Bennett (of the Committee) was authorized to clear up the ruins and put the fence in order. In their annual report for 1849 is the following allusion to this event: "The school on the borders of the Burial Ground (Milk Street Primary), much to the surprise and indignation of our community, has fallen by the torch of the incendiary. The scholars most of them were transferred to the Prospect Hill School with their teacher, who continued there until the semi-annual examination in the autumn."

If indignation got the better of the School Committee and the community in general, we know for a fact that there was one sincere mourner when this, the one historic school of Somerville, was reduced to ashes never to rise again. From her immediate family we learn that Miss Adaline Louise Sanborn, daughter of David Ambrose and Hannah Adams (Stone) Sanborn, was born in Charlestown, January 11, 1824. The house where she died is still standing, being No. 253 Washington Street. She was educated in the schools of her native town, and besides attending the Female Seminary on Austin Street, Charlestown, where so many Somerville girls finished their education in those days, she received instruction in the French language from Rev. Henry Bacon, who resided for a time on Walnut Street. She died of typhoid fever November 16, 1850, aged twenty-six years, ten months.

In closing this history, which is not so complete as I could wish, I cannot help expressing the hope that some time the Somerville Historical Society may be instrumental in setting up a memorial tablet or marker near where this old schoolhouse





stood. On it I would have an inscription something like this:—

Site

Of the Milk Row Schoolhouse,  
The Mother of our Schools,  
Burned July 11, 1849.

And below this, or on the obverse side:—

Teachers after March 3, 1842,

Sarah M. Burnham,

Adaline L. Sanborn.





## OLD CEMETERY INSCRIPTIONS.\*

By Charles D. Elliot.

The land for the Old Milk Row Cemetery, which is now known as the "Somerville Cemetery," was deeded May 17, 1804, by Samuel Tufts to the following persons, viz.: Timothy Tufts, Nathaniel Hawkins, Samuel Kent, Samuel Shed, John Stone, and their associates, "on the express condition that the same be improved for no other purpose than for a burying place," etc. It was a part of the grantor's farm, and there is no reason to suppose that it had been used as a place of burial previous to 1804.

The following inscriptions were copied from its tombs and headstones in 1857 by Miss Clariana Bailey. From a casual examination which I made in the yard in 1900, I should say that more than one-half of these grave stones are gone, and all traces of the resting-places of the persons whom they commemorated are now obliterated. I have reason for thinking that in many cases this removal of headstones was intentional and for the purpose of providing places for new burials, as the cemetery for many years prior to 1893 was unsightly, uncared for, and almost an open lot. Samuel Tufts Frost, who was grandson of Samuel Tufts, is said, after the death of the original owners, to have assumed the charge of the burial ground and issued permits for graves. It is also said that any citizen of the town could obtain a lot free of cost, upon the condition that he fence and properly care for it.

In 1892 the "Somerville Improvement Society" petitioned the City Government, asking that the city take control of the cemetery, which petition received a favorable consideration, and resulted in an act of the Legislature in 1893 (Chapter 104) authorizing the City Council to "vote such sums as they may

---

\* Read March 3, 1908.





judge necessary for the enclosing, care, and improvement of the burial ground on Somerville Avenue," etc.; under this act the city fenced and now has charge of the Cemetery.

It was through the efforts and petition of this "Improvement Society" that the granite tablets marking the many historic sites in Somerville were erected by the city. This Society, of which J. O. Hayden was President, may be said to have been the forerunner of the Somerville Historical Society.

Inscriptions in the Milk Row Cemetery copied by Miss Clariana Bailey in 1857:—

Tomb No. 1	Samuel Tufts	1805
Tomb No. 2	Timothy Tufts	1805
Tomb No. 3	John Tapley Jotham Johnson Ambrose Cole Reuben Hunt	1817
Tomb No. 4	John Ireland Benjamin Hadley Daniel Major	1850
Tomb No. 5	Samuel Cutter Edward Cutter Moses Whitney Fitch Cutter Ebenezer F. Cutter	1852
Tomb No. 6	John Tufts	May 1, 1852
Tomb No. 7	The Heirs of Samuel Frost's tomb	Sept., 1832
Tomb No. 8	John Tailor Oliver Tailor John B. Fisk	1838





Sacred to the Memory of Rhoda Kent, wife of Samuel Kent,  
who was born in West Cambridge, Jan. 2, 1763, and died  
Dec. 28, 1840, aged 78.

The Faithful Mother.

---

Sacred to the Memory of Samuel Kent, who was born at  
Charlestown, Nov. 21, 1760, and died April 4, 1835, aged 75  
years.

The Good Father.

---

Mr. Jonathan Kent, died Sept. 14, 1833, aged 35.

Stay, gentle stranger, for one moment stay,  
The crushed hope of a widowed heart lies here;  
Wife! Mother! lift thine heart to Heaven and pray;  
That bleeding heart may find a Saviour near.

---

In Memory of John Fellows, who died Feb. 3, 1845, aged 25  
years, 3 months.

---

In Memory of William Kent, son of Mr. Samuel & Mrs. Rhoda  
Kent. He died Sept. 19, 1807, Aged 19 years.  
The sweet remembrance of the just.

---

In Memory of Mr. Benjamin Tufts, who died June 1, 1825,  
Æt 43.

Beneath these sods, in peaceful sleep,  
His mortal body lies;  
Surviving friends forbear to weep,  
For virtue never dies.

---

[Emblem, chain with broken link.]

Parted Below      United Above

Nathaniel Mitchell, died Sept. 15, 1851, aged 46 y'rs.

Let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end be  
like his.

---

Thomas Rand, died Mar. 12, 1850, aged 90 y'rs. 1 mo.





In Memory of Widow Anna Rand, who died May 11, 1831,  
Æt 94.

---

In Memory of Mrs. Hannah, wife of Mr. Thomas Rand, who  
died Nov. 22, 1823, Æt 45.

---

Erected to the Memory of Martha, dau'r of Captain Edward &  
Mrs. Elizabeth Cutter, who died Oct. 6, 1818, Ætat 3 years.

Happy Infant, early blest,  
Rest in peaceful slumber rest,  
Early rescu'd from the cares  
Which increase with growing years.

---

Sacred to the Memory of Mr. Samuel Cutter, who died April 12,  
1820, Aged 62 years.

Just in the last distressing hour -  
The Lord display'd delivering power,  
The Mount of danger is the place  
Where we have witness'd surprising Grace.

---

In Memory of Mrs. Susan Tufts, wife of Timothy Tufts, who  
died June 17, 1827, Æ 37.

---

Miss Mary Ann, daughter of Timothy & Susan Tufts, who died  
Oct. 19, 1827, aged 17 years.

They've fled this world of cares  
For brighter realms above.

---

Sacred to the Memory of Timothy W. Tufts, who died Feb. 24,  
1837, Aged 23 years.

Also Susan W. Tufts, who died April 20, 1838, aged 29 years.  
Children of Timothy Tufts.

---

Sacred to the Memory of Timothy Tufts, who died Mar. 11,  
1839, aged 52 Yrs.

Also Charlotte C. Tufts, daughter of Timothy Tufts, who died  
June 30, 1839, Aged 19 years.

Also Lydia N., daughter of Timothy Tufts, who died Mar. 4,  
1846, Aged 22 Yrs.





George F. Tufts, died Oct. 23, 1853, in his 39 year.

---

Mary P. Torrey, Died Nov. 2, 1853, aged 69 yrs.

---

In Memory of Edward S., died May 15, 1842, aged 5 yrs. 5 mos.  
& 24 ds.; Luther 2d, died Jan. 20, 1846, aged 9 yrs. & 2  
mos. Children of Mary L. & Nathaniel Mitchell.

---

In Memory of Mary L., wife of Nathaniel Mitchell, who died  
Nov. 14, 1841, aged 29 yrs. & 9 ds. Also their child, Mary  
Frances, died Oct. 11, 1841, aged 1 yr. & 3 mos.

---

Mrs. Mary Ann, wife of Mr. Luther Mitchell, died Dec. 11, 1836,  
Æt 28. Also their Infant child.

---

Sacred to the Memory of Mrs. Mary Fenley, wife of Captain  
Charles Fenley, who died Jan. 13, 1822, Æt 33.

Oh, thou who sleep'st within this narrow bed,  
Untimely fall'n beneath the fatal blow,  
Accept the tear thy once lov'd friend would shed,  
The sacred tear that oft for thee shall flow.

---

In Memory of Elbridge Harrington, who died Oct. 6, 1824,  
Æt 18.

Farewell till we shall meet again  
In Heaven to dwell, with Christ to reign,  
Where all our joys will be complete,  
There we shall rest, it will be sweet.

---

James McClune, died July 6, 1854, aged 27 years.

---

Sacred to the Memory of Lucy Ann, daughter of Moses and  
Sarah F. Young, who died August 19, 1837, aged 6 weeks.  
Also of a Son, who was stillborn.

Sleep on, sweet babes,  
And take your rest;  
God calls you home,  
He thinks it best.





In Memory of Harriet S. Thorp, daughter of Ira and Catharine Thorp, died July 2, 1837, aged 13 years 7 mos.

In memory of a gentle child

Parental love has reared this stone;

Hers was a spirit meek and mild,

We weep not, for to Heaven she's gone.

---

In Memory of Edwin H. Thorp, son of Ira and Catharine Thorp, died Sept. 14, 1837, aged 3 years 6 mos.

With humble trust in Him who said,

"Let little children come to me,"

We rear this, to the early dead,

Believing we our child shall see.

---

Josiah Munroe, born at Lexington Nov. 25, 1789; died in Charlestown, Aug. 20, 1837.

A remarkable incident occurred on his return from Liverpool to Charleston, S. C., in the winter of 1829. He was seasick to such a degree that he lost his memory of past and present events, and also the power of standing or walking without help, but still he could converse on past and present affairs with apparent correctness, but it was all lost to his mind when the conversation ended. He was highly esteemed by those who knew him for his honorable and open manner in all his transactions.

---

Mary Adalade, daug. of George H. & Ann S. Day, died Jan. 18, 1847, aged 1 year & 10 months.

---

In Memory of George S. Clark, who died Oct. 23, 1844, aged 23 years 11 months 10 days.

Weep not, my spirit's passed away,

And left this tenement of clay,

And soared on high, to dwell in love

With God, my faithful friend above.

---





Susan Maria, daughter of Horace & Hannah Chick, died July 13,  
1846, aged 1 year 6 mos.

---

In Memory of Lydia, wife of Oscar F. Bennett, who died Oct.  
20, 1844, aged 20 years 7 months.

---

Eva Adaline, daug. of Josiah & Adaline Peirce, died May 3, 1845,  
aged 6 mos. & 29 ds.

---

Ezra Herbert, died Aug. 10, 1847, Æ 1 yr. 16 dys.

---

Hannah Howard, died June 24, 1850, Ae 1 yr. 11 mos.

Children of Joseph & Eliza Hayes.

We miss them, ah! in every place,  
And sometimes feel the unbidden tear,  
We cherish every fading trace,  
But never, never wish them here.

---

In Memory of Priscilla, widow of John Norris, who died May 6,  
1856, aged 79 yrs. 3 mos.

She sleeps in Jesus.

---

In Memory of Levi Orcutt, Jr., who died May 21, 1853, aged 25  
yrs. 6 mos.

A holy solemn stillness reigns  
Around this lifeless, mouldering clay;  
Nor pain, nor grief, nor anxious fears  
Can reach the peaceful sleeper here.

Can sighs recall the spirit fled?  
Shall vain regrets arise?  
Though death has caused the altered mien,  
In Heaven the ransomed soul is seen.

---

In Memory of Albert Tufts, who died May 8, 1845, aged 36  
years.

Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was; and the  
spirit shall return unto God who gave it.

[To be continued.]







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1908

Vol. VII

No. 3







## CONTENTS

	PAGE
PORT HUDSON	49
RECORDS RELATING TO THE OLD POWDER HOUSE	52
OLD CEMETERY INSCRIPTIONS (Continued)	65
REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON NECROLOGY (Continued)	71

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, *postpaid*.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of William B. Holman,  
317 Broadway, Winter Hill, to whom all communications  
regarding exchanges should be addressed.

### PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA AL STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. VII.

OCTOBER, 1908

No. 3.

## PORT HUDSON.\*

By Charles D. Elliot.

Before relating the incidents and general story of the siege of Port Hudson, I will briefly allude to some of the events of the Civil War preceding it.

At the end of the first year of the war, December 31, 1861, all of the seceding states were practically under full control of the Confederate government; and were cut off from, and outside of, the civil or military jurisdiction of the Federal government.

One hundred and eighty-four battles and engagements were fought in 1861, eighty-two of which were in Missouri, and thirty-four in Virginia, twenty-six in West Virginia, eighteen in Kentucky, six in Maryland, and only eighteen in all other parts of the Union and Confederacy. Thus in the first year it had been entirely a warfare in the border states. Of these battles, only sixteen were fought in the first half of 1861, and one hundred and sixty-eight in its last half. Virginia and Missouri were the cyclone centres of the war in 1861.

Virginia, with difficulty, and by only a small majority of their convention (eighty-eight to fifty-five), had been drawn into the Confederacy, and Missouri, only with great effort, been prevented from seceding. In Virginia the great objects of the Confederate government were the defence of Richmond, its capital, the capture of Washington, and the invasion of the North; which object made Virginia a field of carnage for four years.

In Missouri the secessionists hoped to bring the state, nearly equally divided in sentiment, into the Southern fold, and with it Kentucky, thus assuring the control of the Mississippi River and its great tributaries, the Missouri and the Ohio; thereby menacing Illinois and Indiana, and forcing the war onto Union soil.

\*A paper read before the Somerville Historical Society.





Almost from the commencement of secession, until the end of the year 1861, and for some time after, the rebels had and kept control of the Mississippi River, from the Ohio to the Gulf of Mexico, some seven hundred miles. From this vast extent of the greatest of rivers all Union ships and commerce were shut out for nearly a year; so that on January 1, 1862, the secession government was practically what it claimed to be, in sole control of a united and entire Confederacy.

To recover the control of the Mississippi, and thereby sever the Confederacy, was one of the earliest strategic purposes of the Federal government, second only to the defence of Washington or the capture of Richmond.

A free waterway for the safe conveyance of troops of the Union Army and their supplies, and for the commerce of the great West to the Gulf, was alone of untold value to the Union cause; but the permanent severance of the Confederacy into two parts entirely cut off from each other was to be the crushing blow which sealed the doom of secession.

The Confederacy west of the Mississippi embraced the great states of Arkansas and Texas, and the larger part of Louisiana, whose great corn, cotton, and sugar plantations, and vast droves of cattle, horses, sheep, and swine furnished an inexhaustible supply of food and other sinews of war to the rest of secessia, east of the river. In 1860 there were in these three states over 1,000,000 cattle, 150,000 horses and mules, and nearly 620,000 sheep and swine; and they raised 50,000,000 bushels of corn and 1,500,000 bales of cotton annually. All this vast resource and wealth contributed to the success of the Confederacy during 1861 and 1862, and until the summer of 1863, when the capture of Vicksburg and of Port Hudson by the Union forces under Grant and under Banks wrenched the majestic river from the Confederate control, and once again, in the words of Lincoln, it "flowed unvexed to the sea."

The first decisive blow in the recovery of the Mississippi was the capture of Island No. 10 in the river opposite the line between Tennessee and Kentucky in April, 1862. In the same month fell Forts Jackson and St. Philip, not far from the river's mouth, by which victory New Orleans was restored to the





Union. The battles of Pittsburg Landing, north of Vicksburg, in May, and of Baton Rouge, south of Port Hudson, in August, 1862, each a Union success, left only the Fortresses of Vicksburg and of Port Hudson, with the river between them, in the hands of the Confederacy.

This was the military status of the Mississippi on January 1, 1863.

In the foregoing I have noted the events of the war preceding and leading up to the campaigns of Vicksburg and Port Hudson, and the strategic importance of those great strongholds, both to the Confederacy and to the Union.

On November 8, 1862, an order from President Lincoln was issued placing General Nathaniel P. Banks in command of the Department of the Gulf, and relieving General Butler thereof. General Banks, with his staff and attachés, the writer being one of the number, left New York city on the North Star on December 4, 1862, and arrived at New Orleans on December 14.

By the President's order of November 9, 1862, General Banks was named the ranking general in the Southwest, and was authorized to assume control of all forces that might come from the upper Mississippi into his command, including Grant's. The order says: "The President regards the opening of the Mississippi River as the first and most important of all our military and naval operations, and it is hoped that you will not lose a moment in accomplishing it." And "the capture of Vicksburg" is especially mentioned in the order as one of the principal objects for his attention. Meanwhile General McClernand was operating from the north towards Vicksburg, the government apparently intending a junction with Banks, who was to be supreme in command. Misunderstandings and disaster to the northern column prevented this; but besides this, Port Hudson, which in the early fall of 1862 had only a small garrison and few cannon, had during the intervening time been gradually strengthened; so that in January, 1863, it had become a powerful fortification, with complete armament, and a garrison of some 16,000 men. Thus was the problem of opening the Mississippi changed so far as





Banks was concerned, and Port Hudson became plainly his objective point, in place of Vicksburg.

Upon arriving in New Orleans, Banks had sent a large force up the river to Baton Rouge. On March 7, 1863, leaving a sufficient force to protect New Orleans, we sailed up the river. By March 12 all the troops had arrived at Baton Rouge. In this force there were in all some twelve regiments, three batteries, and two troops of cavalry. On the evening of March 13, the army was under way towards Port Hudson for the purpose of making a demonstration and distracting the attention of its garrison, while Farragut was attempting with his fleet to steam up the river past the rebel batteries.

This the admiral succeeded in doing with two of his vessels, viz., the flagship Hartford and the gunboat Albatross; the rest of the fleet, being disabled, fell back below Port Hudson again, in doing which the Mississippi got aground, and was set on fire and blown up by her own crew to save her from the rebels. Thus Farragut became, to a certain extent, master of the river from Port Hudson to Vicksburg.

Banks was afterwards blamed by Halleck, Lincoln's Chief of Staff at Washington, for not taking Port Hudson at this time, but as the rebel garrison was from 16,000 to 20,000 strong behind strong fortifications, while Banks had only 15,000 men, 12,000 of them only available for the attack, and all in the open such an attempt would have been almost criminal. Shortly after this Banks withdrew his forces to Baton Rouge, and a little later the most of them to New Orleans.

On April 8, 1863, we crossed the Mississippi River from New Orleans to Algiers, a dirty, dismal city opposite the terminus of the New Orleans, Opelousas, and Great Western Railroad, over which road, through cypress swamp and alligator paradise, we were carried some seventy-five miles to Brashear City on the Atchafalaya River. This place had been taken possession of in 1862 by Butler, as a base of operations in West Louisiana; and again in January, 1863, learning that the rebel, General Dick Taylor, son of ex-President Zachary Taylor, with





some 4,500 men, was menacing it, Banks sent General Weitzel with reinforcements, who drove the Confederates back again.

Up to January 14, 1863, on which day the writer under instructions completed a detailed map of the Mississippi River, from New Orleans to about thirty miles above Vicksburg, and possibly up to the middle of March, when the demonstration was first made against Port Hudson, as already related, it had undoubtedly been General Banks' intention to carry out his implied instructions from Washington to form a junction with Grant at Vicksburg and take command of that campaign; but the increased strength of Port Hudson from about 1,500 men in October, 1862, to 16,000 in January, 1863, unknown to the government when those instructions were given, now made it evident that such a plan of campaign might be a questionable one, but as late as May 17, 1863, Banks had not abandoned it. Yet it seemed clear that Port Hudson, with its large army, ought not to be left between our forces and New Orleans, as it would be if Banks marched on Vicksburg, unless we wished to lose New Orleans. The plan of campaign, viz., to unite with Grant at Vicksburg, which Banks had originally been instructed to do, but which he on May 13 came near abandoning, and a little later changed to one against Port Hudson, was known in its earlier stages as the "Teche campaign." It was to leave sufficient forces at Baton Rouge and at New Orleans to hold those places; and then, aided and protected by the gunboat fleet, to cross Berwick Bay, and thence to march up the shores of the Bayou Teche and the Bayou Boeuf to Alexandria on the Red River, from thence returning down the Red River to the Mississippi, and to land north of Port Hudson, cut it off from communication with Vicksburg and from all succor; and then either to invest it and capture it, or to join General Grant's forces at Vicksburg. The passage of Farragut's boats past Port Hudson in March rendered this feasible; and Banks succeeded admirably in carrying out this plan of campaign.

The Bayous Teche and Boeuf are nearly the western limits of the "Louisiana Lowlands," a name endeared in song and





story to every Southerner. West of these lowlands and bayous almost abruptly rise the undulating prairies of Western Louisiana. These lowlands teem with the wildest Southern vegetation, and are intercepted everywhere with mazes of black and sluggish bayous, creeks, and lagoons, along some of whose borders lie sugar and corn lands, among the richest of the South; while others form dank, dismal, and almost impenetrable swamps, where alligators sing praises to unknown demons, and wriggling moccasins revel in their muddy and watery gardens of Eden.

Through these lowlands and over these prairies marched the army, followed much of the way by vultures, the so-called "turkey buzzards" of the South, who, perched in platoons on the dead limbs of the cypress, seemed like vanguards of ill omen from the realms of Pluto.

On April 11 we crossed Berwick Bay to Berwick City, and on April 12 began that march of three hundred miles whose destination proved to be Port Hudson. In speaking of Port Hudson, we can hardly leave out the strategic manoeuvres which led up to its investment and capture. I have thus been led to recite the previous movements and marches of the army; all a part of the endeavor by Banks to carry out his instructions relative to the Vicksburg campaign and the opening of the Mississippi River.

When our march from Brashear City began, the army was divided into two divisions; one, under General Grover, with perhaps 7,000 or 8,000 men, was sent in transports, conveyed by gunboats up Grand Lake, with the intention of cutting off a large force of Confederates under General Richard Taylor, who was in command of all rebel armies in Western Louisiana. The rest of our army, under Banks, crossed Berwick Bay, as already noted, landed at Berwick City, a little town of a dozen houses, and an ancient Indian mound, and then marched up the Bayou Teche past Pattersonville to attack Taylor in front. Taylor's force of rebels lay behind fortifications which extended across the bayou, but were flanked





on either side by the swamps. It being Banks' intention to crush Taylor between his own and Grover's forces, how this plan worked we shall see a little later.

On landing at Berwick City, I looked for my horse and equipments, which soon became notably conspicuous by their non-appearance; nor did I return to my own or they to me until after I had marched on foot for thirty miles, when lo, my Bucephalus and I met again, a happy reunion for me, however he may have considered it. He had gone up the lake with Grover's forces, and perhaps taken part in the battle of Irish Bend, while I, on foot, was doing my best to down the rebellion in the battle of Bisland. Mine was only one of many such experiences.

The truth of Burns' old lines that

"The best laid schemes o' mice and men  
Gang aft a-gley";

was constantly and nearly all the time exemplified in the lack of harmony, the non-coöperations and failures of the Civil War. It was here strongly in evidence, especially in the case of the expected capture of Taylor's forces. Grover, owing to delay in the arrival of transports and the small number, was four days late in embarking his troops. This was planned for April 9, but took place on April 13; and after a series of mishaps, running aground, etc., he found the enemy had meantime been fully apprised of his movements and were ready to receive him; and after a desultory fight, he succeeded only in driving the rebels, not in capturing them.

Banks, with the rest of the army, had made a front attack on Taylor's forces behind the fortifications at Bisland, which lasted from the afternoon of April 12 to the afternoon of April 14, when Taylor silently withdrew and escaped capture; not, however, until after our forces had nearly succeeded in flanking him.

The rebels fled in great precipitation, throwing away arms, knapsacks, and ammunition, and were closely pursued by our





troops. But our pursuit soon became almost as disorderly and demoralized as the flight of the Confederates; for all along our route were sugar houses, where not only sugar, but the liquid extract of molasses was manufactured, to which latter many of our boys helped themselves in unlimited rations, and were soon in the most undisciplined of merry moods.

Order was, however, soon restored, and the march continued on towards New Iberia, which, after a skirmish, we entered on April 16. From here an expedition was sent to the Southwest to Isle Petit Anse, an underground hillock of purest salt, and the site of the Avery salt works, which was the principal source of supply for the whole Confederacy. This was captured and the works destroyed.

From New Iberia we marched to Vermillionville, and after another skirmish entered it on April 17. There we left the lowlands, and our march was over the lovely prairies of Western Louisiana, where crystal ponds, scattered live oaks, high lands, and streams skirted with groves abound.

Leaving Vermillionville, continuing across prairies, we reached and, after a skirmish, entered Opelousas, one of the cleanest and prettiest towns of Louisiana. Here I rode in with our cavalry, and under orders seized and put a guard over the State Land Office, in which I found not only innumerable plans of that part of Louisiana, but also many arms stored under heaps of old papers and rubbish, among them the sword of the Confederate Colonel Riley, killed in a recent engagement, and also the commission of another officer in the rebel army. Under instruction I turned over all these trophies to our provost marshal. The army halted at Opelousas several days.

Soon after entering the town, I rode out to its outskirts, and narrowly escaped capture by an ambuscade in the woods near by, being warned by a slave to turn quickly, as the horsemen whom I was riding out to meet in the thick woods were rebels, not Union, as I had supposed. That son of Ethiopia has still a warm niche in my memory.

After some days we again took up our march, soon striking Bayou Boeuf, which we ascended, passing the plantation of the





rebel Governor Moore, and arriving at Alexandria on the Red River about May 8, 1863. The admiral (Porter) had preceded us by one or two days, and his fleet lay in the Red River, opposite the town.

On the march to Alexandria, I was taken sick with congestion of the lungs, or pleuro-pneumonia, and given very clearly to understand that this was my last march; but, thanks to pleasant weather and several days' rest, I was soon convalescent. I can say, however, without romancing, that to be sick of pneumonia on the march, and at the best having only the floors of rebel houses for a couch and a bunch of straw for a pillow, is in no sense a delight; however, others fared so much worse that I ought to have been, and perhaps was, thankful.

We remained at Alexandria several days, or until May 15. Here General Banks was confronted with the most serious problem of the campaign. He had relied up to this time upon the promise of the government that he should receive large reinforcements, in which he was sorely disappointed. He was also disappointed in not being furnished with light draft boats to convey his troops. Up to now he fully expected to join with Grant in besieging Vicksburg, but this lack of troops and transportation, and the fact that the aspect of the Vicksburg campaign was constantly changing rendered co-operation between the two generals apparently impossible.

The campaign of Vicksburg was at first under command of McClernand; shortly after it was intended that Sherman should succeed him; but Grant finally, after several serious mistakes, not of his own, became the master. This affected the movements of Banks very seriously. He for a time knew not what to do. On May 13 he sent word to Grant that he should do his best to join him; later he changed his mind and ordered a retreat of the whole army back to Brashear City, but on May 14 (probably) this order was recalled, as reconnoissances by the Engineer Corps showed that there were fairly good roads along the Red River nearly to the Mississippi. So

strong rebel force threatening both Vicksburg and Port Hudson.





orders were given, and the army commenced its march down the Red River.

I, being on the invalid list, was carried down by boat, losing somewhere on the way my blanket, overcoat, and other valuables. I thought then and think now that they were hoodooed by the handsome and honest-faced young darkey who attended me on the voyage.

We arrived at Simsport, near the confluence of the Red and Mississippi Rivers, about May 17, and here we again camped for several days. I have, I think, already noted this extensive and rum-antic city of Simsport, consisting of a post-office, a rum shop, and possibly three or four houses. We left there May 21 and sailed down the Mississippi to a landing place called Bayou Sara, several miles north of Port Hudson. From Bayou Sara we marched on the night of May 21 to the battlefield of Plains Store, arriving at two o'clock in the morning of May 22, 1863. I was carried in an ambulance. The battle had been fought on May 21. Headquarters were camped on the battlefield, sleeping on the ground, General Banks as well as the rest.

The battle of Plains Store was practically the commencement of the siege of Port Hudson. It was an endeavor by the rebels to push back the Union army, which perhaps for the first time they discovered was intending a siege. Before this the rebels, off their guard, probably supposed that Banks' destination was Vicksburg, as I have already shown that it was.

The Confederates made a sortie against Augur's forces on May 21, but were driven back into their works with considerable loss; the Union side also suffered considerably. But now at Plains Store, on May 22, Banks' forces from the North joined Augur's from the South, and the investment of Port Hudson was complete. Meanwhile Banks established his headquarters on Young's Plantation, about six miles from the rebel works.

Shortly after, the war situation was about as follows: Grant, with his great army, was besieging Vicksburg, Banks Port Hudson; to the east at Jackson there had collected a strong rebel force threatening both Vicksburg and Port Hud-





son, other Confederate forces were collecting further down, threatening New Orleans, which was now garrisoned by a much too small force, under command of Emory, while west of the river the scattered forces of Taylor had again collected and were menacing all important points of Western Louisiana.

While we were at these headquarters, which had only a small guard, and just as a large sum of money had been received for the payment of troops, some hundreds of thousands of dollars, we were alarmed one day by the cry of "Rebels!"—and there they were, a whole line of cavalry in full gallop across the field towards our camp. Hardly had the alarm been given, when from the opposite direction came the ring of a bugle, and Grierson, with a part of his cavalry brigade and two howitzers, came dashing up and deployed into line around our quarters; a few rounds of grape and canister soon halted the Confederates, who then turned and fled, pursued by Grierson.

Grierson's command, composed largely of cavalry, was principally engaged in keeping communications open between Grant and Banks, and cutting off raiding parties of rebels, always active in our rear and in that of Grant's forces at Vicksburg.

Four days after Banks' arrival, or on May 26, an assault was ordered on the rebel lines for the next day. It was intended to be a simultaneous assault along the whole of the enemy's front. The next morning at about six o'clock all our batteries opened a furious cannonade on the enemy, replied to somewhat feebly by them. Our lines were soon formed, consisting of Weitzel's command, including two colored regiments on our right, Grover's and Augur's commands in the centre, and General T. W. Sherman's forces on our left. Weitzel commenced his assault against the rebel left with great promptness, but over the roughest conceivable ground, made up of hillocks, ravines, and tangles of undergrowth, and abattis of fallen trees. They could scarcely see the enemy behind his recently-improved works, but our men formed an easy mark for the rebel riflemen and cannoniers hidden in almost an ambushade. This





assault was quickly repulsed by the rebels, with great loss to our left wing, especially to the negro troops, who behaved with great courage and covered themselves with glory. Grover's troops also assaulted, but with greater success. Augur's forces were held in reserve to assist Sherman; but from Sherman's troops came no sound of battle, and when, after listening in vain the whole forenoon for his musketry and attack, Banks rode to the left wing, he found Sherman and his staff quietly eating dinner, and the entire left wing resting on their arms, and not yet put into line of battle. Hot words passed, and General Andrews was ordered to replace Sherman; but meanwhile Sherman had advanced upon the enemy's right, six hours late, and met with the same fate as the attack by Weitzel in the early morning. Generals Sherman and Dow were wounded in this day's battle, and ten colonels, lieutenant-colonels, and majors killed, wounded, or captured. Our total day's loss was 1,995 men.

It is to be remembered that in this assault, as well as that later, on June 14, in fact, during the whole siege, we were assisted by the navy. In the bend above Port Hudson lay the Hartford, Albatross, Sachem, Estrella, and Arizona; and below lay the Monongahela, now Farragut's flagship, the Richmond, Genesee, and the iron-clad Essex, together with the mortar boats. All of which fleets did great service, not only in bombarding the fortifications, but in keeping the rebels from crossing the river.

On the forenoon of June 13 another furious cannonade was made against the rebel forts from every Union gun and mortar, completely silencing the rebel batteries, after which Banks sent by flag of truce a call to the rebel General Gardner to surrender, which Gardner declined to do. On June 14 another assault was made on the enemy's fortifications, very similar in plan and result to that of May 27. It proved a terrible disaster, the Union loss being 1,805 men, among them Brigadier-General Charles J. Paine, seriously wounded.

Banks now began to prepare for a regular siege. The





lesson of the danger and usual failure of a direct assault against well built and manned fortifications, so often taught to other commanders before, had now been learned by him. New batteries were erected, zigzags or approaches commenced, heavy guns, borrowed from the navy, mounted, mines planned, and everything gave the promise of a long and tedious siege. Our saps and approaches were run towards the rebel works to within a very short distance, and a mine nearly completed and ready for its powder. This was done under supervision of the Nineteenth Army Corps Staff of Engineers, who suffered severely at Port Hudson, three being killed and one wounded, out of less than a dozen of us in all.

To lead the army in the third charge, that was finally to capture Port Hudson, General Banks called upon his army for a volunteer "forlorn hope" of 1,000 men. These came bravely forward and enrolled in the heroic band, but before our mines were exploded, or the rebel works breached, there came to us the news of the surrender of Vicksburg, which capitulated on July 4, 1863. There was great cheering and rejoicing, and salvos of shotted artillery; and the news of Grant's victory was thrown inside the rebel lines. General Gardner, the commander, asked to be assured of the truth of the report, and, being convinced of its accuracy, immediately asked for a cessation of hostilities. Shortly after, after many preliminaries, on July 8, 1863, he unconditionally surrendered. These two victories caused great rejoicing in our lines, and corresponding dejection in the Confederacy.

The garrison captured amounted to 6,340 men, with fifty-one pieces of artillery, and the loss to the Union army during the whole siege was 4,363 men.

We found the inside of the rebel works in a fearful condition. Thus the fall of Port Hudson was the final blow that severed the Confederacy, and which, more than any other up to that time, gave full assurance of the final Union victory and the destruction and fall of the rebellion.





RECORDS RELATING TO THE OLD POWDER  
HOUSE.

In a special message, dated April 25, 1746, from Governor Shirley to the Great and General Court of Massachusetts Bay we find the following paragraph:—

“Another thing I must report to you (having twice before moved it since the Beginning of this War), which is, the great Importance and Necessity of building another Powder House, as well in Consideration of the dangerous Situation of that we now have in Boston and of the great Hazard of risqing our whole Stock in one Magazine, as the Insufficiency of that to hold our present Stock, and allow Room for the turning of it, and thereby keeping it from spoiling.”

[From the “House Journal” for that year, page 246]:  
“Voted that Mr. Welles, Mr. Oliver, Colonel Cotton, Mr. Hutchinson, Colonel Miller, Colonel Heath, Mr. Russell, Mr. Hall, and Mr. Royal be a committee to take under consideration that Paragraph in his Excellency’s Message of the Day relating to the situation of another Magazine for Powder: and report at the next May Session what they Judge proper for this House to do thereon.”

[“House Journal,” 1746, p. 40.]

A Message from his Excellency by Mr. Secretary.

Gentlemen of the House of Representatives: I should at the opening of this Session have urged the Necessity of building a Powder House without Delay, but was informed the late House of Representatives had appointed a Committee to consider & view the most proper place for erecting one; and that the Committee having determined upon a Place were ready to report at the first Meeting of this Court; but finding the matter still delayed, I think myself obliged to press you to proceed in this affair, for I fear there is a great deal of Powder which now lies ex-





posed; then the present Powder House is so full, that there is no Room to turn the Powder, and so keep it from spoiling.

W. Shirley.

Council Chamber, June 13, 1746.

[Vol. XIII., "Acts and Resolves of Massachusetts Bay," Chap. 36, p. 606.]

In the House of Representatives, voted that a suitable Magazine for Powder be built on Charlestown Common between a place called the Neck of Land and Cambridge, near a large gravel pit, and that Andrew Boardman, Esq., & Mr. James Russell, with such as the Honble Board shall join, be a Committee to see that the same be effected as soon as may be. In Council read & concurred, and Ezekiel Cheever, Esq., is joined in the Affair. Passed June 13, 1746.

["House Journal," 1746, p. 110.]

Voted a sum of One Hundred and Fifty Pounds out of the Public Treasury to the Committee appointed to Erect a Magazine for Powder on Charlestown Common, to enable them instead thereof to purchase the Stone Building (with as much land adjoining as shall be necessary), which was formerly used for a Wind-Mill in Said Toun, on the best Terms they can, and agree with Workmen to repair & fitt the sd Building for the Reception of the Province Powder, in the Cheapest Manner and as soon as possible. The Committee to be accountable: and that Mr. Andrew Hall, with such as the Honble Board shall join, be added to the Committee. Aug. 12, 1746.

["House Journal," 1746, p. 238.]

His Excellency having acquainted the two Houses that part of the Province Powder had been removed to a wooden Building in Charlestown which the House are of Opinion is very unsafe and inconvenient, and the guarding of it attended with great & unnecessary Charge, and the House having by their Vote of 12 Aug. last ordered the purchase of a Stone Building in Charlestown, & repairing the same, but which was non con-





curred in by this Honble Board, asks the Honble Board to reconsider their Vote of Non-Concurrence & pass in Concurrence with the House.

Sent up by Captain Partridge, Captain Read, Colonel Gerish. February, 1746-7.

[“Acts and Resolves,” Vol. XIV., Chap. 73, p. 33.]

A vote appointing a Committee to Purchase the Stone Building in Charlestown for a Powder House.

Whereas the Committee appointed by this Court to Purchase a Stone Building (with as much Land adjoining as shall be necessary) in Charlestown for a Magazine, have not proceeded according to the Order of the Court. Therefore

Voted that Mr. Hal & Capt. read, with such as the Honble Board shall join, be a Committee to purchase the Stone Building at Charlestown which was used for a Wind Mill, on the best Terms they can, & agree with Workmen to repair & fit the Same for the receipt of the Province Powder in the cheapest manner & as soon as possible: and that the sum of One Hundred and Fifty Pounds be allowed the Said Committee out of the Public Treasury to enable them to Carry on this Affair. Passed June 30, 1747.

[“Massachusetts Archives,” lxxiii., p. 87.]

The Comtee appointed per this Honble Court to purchase the Stone Wind Mill at Charlestown and to fitt it for a Powder House for the Use of the Province have accordingly purchased & compleated the Same for the Use afore sd, the whole Charge of which Amounts to the Sum of two Hundred Forty-five Pounds, eighteen Shillings, and eight pence one farthing in Bills of the Last Emission, the Comtee charges them Selves with the Sum of One Hundred and Fifty Pounds in Like Bills as also thirty shillings for 2 M. of ye nails that are left, in all One Hundred and Fifty-one pounds, ten shillings, so that the Ballance which Remains due to the Comtee for the full discharge thereof is ninety-four Pounds Eight Shillings, and 8d one farthing.





Which is Humbly Offer'd  
per Saml Watts per order.  
In Council Febr'y 26, 1747-8.  
Read and sent down.

["House Journal," 1747, p. 233.]

Ezekiel Cheever, Esq., brought down the report of a Committee of both Houses appointed to purchase the Stone-Wind-Mill in Charlestown for a Powder House, &c.

Read and accepted, and thereon ordered, That the sum of Ninety-four Pounds eight shillings & eight pence one farthing be allowed out of the Public Treasury to the Said Committee. Passed March 3, 1747-8.

Sent up for Concurrence.

In Council March 3, 1747-8.

Read & Concurr'd, J. Willard, Sec'y. T. Hutchinson, Speaker.

Consented to W. Shirley.

[See also "Acts and Resolves," Vol. XIV., p. 102.]

F. M. H.

## OLD CEMETERY INSCRIPTIONS.

By Charles D. Elliot.

[Continued].

In Memory of Sarah Ann, wife of Albert Tufts, who died May 2, 1842, aged 30 years.

"Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth; they rest from their labors; and their works do follow them."

Also their daughter, Sarah Ann, who died Aug. 10, 1842, aged 3 mos.

"Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me; for of such is the kingdom of Heaven."

Sacred to the Memory of Mr. Luther Mitchell, who died in Somerville, Mass., Sep. 5, 1846, aged 37 years 3 months.





Dearest Husband, thou hast left us,  
And thy loss we deeply feel;  
Yet 'tis God that hath bereft us,  
He can all our sorrows heal.

---

Erected to the Memory of Mary Ethelinda, youngest daughter  
of James M. & Catherine W. Littlefield, who died April 10,  
1847, aged 3 years.

And can it be that Ethelinda's gone?  
Shall we no more that smiling face behold?  
Are those sweet accents hushed upon her tongue?  
Father, "thy will, not ours, be done."

---

Phineas Howe, born in Norway, Me., April 7, 1823; graduated  
at Brown University 1847; studied theology at Newton,  
Mass., and Halle, Germany. He was chosen first Pastor of  
the First Baptist Society, Somerville, April, 1852; died  
Aug. 26, 1852, aged 29 yrs. 4 mos.

"He being dead yet speaketh."

---

In Memory of Mrs. Rebecca, wife of Mr. Charles D. Wild, who  
died November 17, 1844, aged 34 years. Also their son,  
George W., who died Aug. 4, 1844, aged 4 months.

Peaceful be thy silent slumber,  
Peaceful in the grave so low;  
Thou no more wilt join our number,  
Thou no more our songs shall know.

---

Mary Ella, daughter of Edwin and Caroline M. Grant, died Aug.  
25, 1855, aged 6 months.

Farewell, sweet babe, to us thou wert given  
A fair bud of promise, to cheer life's rude way;  
But death has severed the tie which bound thee,  
And angels have borne thee in their bosoms away.

---

In Memory of James A. Fisk, son of J. W. and Mary Fisk, who  
died Aug. 9, 1847, aged 1 yr. 9 mos. & 15 ds.





Dear little one, thy pains are ended,  
Thou hast found a better home;  
Thy songs are now with angels' blended,  
Where no death or sorrow come.

---

Betsey S., wife of Mark Fisk, died May 27, 1848, aged 38 years.  
Free from sickness, pain, and grief,  
All earth's weary hours are past,  
Thy spirit soars to seek relief,  
To dwell with God in Heaven at last.

---

William H., son of George & Mary Teasdale, died June 22, 1855,  
Æt 3 yrs. & 2 mos.  
Allena A., dau. of Benja. F. & Frances Adams, died Aug. 4,  
1850, aged 10 mos. & 19 dys.

---

Eugene, youngest son of Francis G. & Hannah T. Gay, died  
August 23, 1850, aged 3 years 8 months 9 days.  
The grave is but the mansion  
Where rest his mortal dust,  
His spirit is in Heaven,  
O mourner, hope and trust.

---

Sylvia Ellen, dau. of John & Julia P. Gordon, died May 10, 1855,  
aged 2 yrs. 9 mos. & 10 days.

"Whom the gods love die early."

This little seed of life and love,  
Lent to us for a day—  
This benediction from above,  
Now in the ground we lay.

---

Phidelia Jane, died Dec. 30, 1848, aged 3 years.

Martha D., died Jan. 13, 1849, aged 5 years & 10 mos.

Children of Alfred B. & Hannah A. Chase.

I took these little lambs, said he,  
And laid them in my breast;





Protection they shall find in me,  
In me be ever blest.

---

Sarah L. A., Daughter of Solomon & Sarah Story, died Sept.  
13, 1847,  $\text{\AA}$  1 yr. 10 mos. & 16 ds.

Of such is the Kingdom of God.

---

Otis H., son of Lowell and Caroline A. Goodridge, died May 10,  
1851, aged 19 yrs.

---

James Gaw, died July 16, 1851, aged 31 years.

"The memory of the just is blessed."

---

William Farmileo, died Sep. 24, 1845,  $\text{\AA}$  19.

---

Donato Gherardi, died April 21, 1850, aged 52 years.

---

Elizabeth, daughter of John J. & Annie McLearn, of Maitland,  
Nova Scotia, died April 8, 1855, aged 20 yrs. & 21 days.

She was respected in life,  
And lamented in death.

---

In Memory of Emma F. Edgerly, daughter of L. C. and M. A.  
Edgerly, who died Feb. 11, 1845, aged 7 months.

Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not,  
for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven.

---

[Monument for the three families below.]

Joshua Littlefield, died Dec. 12, 1832, aged 39 yrs.

Martha, his wife, died July 30, 1854, aged 68 yrs.

Joshua, Jr., their son, died Sept. 17, 1829, aged 18 mos.

Martha A. Littlefield, died August 19, 1851, aged 17 mos. 19  
ds., daughter of R. and A. M. Littlefield.

---

Martha Ella, daughter of J. P. and Mary Hastings, died Feb. 11,  
1854, aged 2 yrs. 23 ds.





Children of L. C. and M. A. Edgerly.

Emma F., died Feb. 11, 1845, aged 7 mos.

Jerome B., died Oct. 10, 1852, aged 3 mos. 11 ds.

Martha Anna, died Aug. 19, 1851, aged 17 mos. & 19 ds.

Lord, she was thine and not my own,—

Thou hast not done me wrong;

I thank thee for the precious loan

Afforded me so long.

. Little Roxy.

---

Geraldine E., daughter of George K. & Eliza R. Fullick, died  
Sept. 9, 1853, aged 2 yrs. & 3 mos.

Sweet child! God called thee home.

---

Frances C. Sherman, wife of James K. Harley, died at Norwalk,  
Conn., May 6, 1853, aged 26 yrs.

Also her infant, Leonora, aged 6 mos.

---

Adeline Frances, daughter of Clark & Hannah Bennett, died  
Aug. 18, 1852, aged 5 yrs. & 9 mos.

Bright, joyous, but fleeting.

---

In Memory of William W. Watson, born March 16, 1835, died  
Sept. 13, 1852, aged 17 yrs. 6 mos.

---

Nathaniel Mitchell, died Sept. 15, 1851, aged 46 yrs.

Let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end  
be like his.

---

To the Memory of Albert Henry, only child of Albert & Nancy  
J. Kenneson, died Jan. 26, 1846, aged 9 mos. & 6 days.

Here thy toys, neglected lying,

There thine empty cradle bed;

Here thy little dress, O Henry,

Can it be that thou art dead?





He's dead! yet death can scarcely chill  
His smiling beauties, though he lay  
With cold, extended limbs, for still  
His face looked fairer than the day.

---

Nancy Jane, wife of Albert Kenneson, died July 9, 1856, aged  
32 yrs. 1 mo.

She has gone to Heaven before us,  
But she turns and waves her hand,  
Pointing to the glories o'er us  
In that happy spirit land.  
"Not dead, but sleepeth."

---

Jonathan C. Clark, died May 26, 1841, aged 36 years.  
"Not lost, but gone before."

---

Irene Adalaid, daughter of Leonard and Irene G. Arnold, died  
June 21, 1855, aged 4 yrs. and 7 mos.  
"Of such is the Kingdom of Heaven."

---

John Leland, Jr., died of Small Pox Jan. 8, 1840, aged 46 years.  
Go home, dear friends,  
Dry up your tears,  
I must lie here  
Till Christ appears.

---

Francis Green, died Mar. 22, 1848,  $\text{Æ}$  41.

See noble manhood laid in dust,  
The loved one sleeps among the dead;  
In Christ 'mid death he put his trust,  
To him we trust his soul has fled.

---

Joseph Swett, died Sept. 4, 1849, aged 40 years.

My husband's grave, that hallowed spot,  
By me it ne'er shall be forgot;  
The tombstone that doth mark the place,  
And shall it be by time defaced.





Sacred to the memory of Moses Young, Jr., who died Dec. 14, 1844, aged 35 years.

In the silent grave we leave him,  
Till the Resurrection morn,  
Then, O Lord, thy word shall raise him,  
And restore his lovely form.

---

Anna, wife of John Leland, died Aug. 26, 1846, aged 78 years.

To die is your gain, my Mother.

---

John Leland, died April 11, 1851, aged 90 years.

At rest, my Father.

---

Emeline, daughter of Osgood and Mary Dane, died April 10, 1846, aged 25 years.

We loved her on earth,—  
May we meet her in heaven.

[It may be well to add here that since 1857 many removals have been made from this to neighboring cemeteries.—Ed.]

---

## REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON NECROLOGY.

[Continued from page 24.]

Isaac Brooks Kendall was a well-known resident of Winter Hill, for the house in which he lived (338 Broadway) was built by his father in the fifties of the last century. Mr. Kendall was descended on his father's side from Francis Kendall, the first of the name in America, who, born in England, settled in Woburn in 1640, and became a large land and mill owner, as well as for eighteen years Selectman. The grandparents of Mr. Kendall were Isaac (died July, 1833) and Lucy (Sables) Kendall, of Woburn. They were the parents of Isaac, Jr., born in Woburn April 23, 1806, died in Somerville June 27, 1894. Isaac, Jr., married at Charlestown, May 1, 1833, Nancy, daughter of Seth Bradford, of Medford, where she was born March 8, 1805. She





had been brought up by Mrs. Kendall Bailey, of Charlestown, and had as a stepmother a sister of her husband's mother. Mrs. Nancy (Bradford) Kendall was a lineal descendant of Governor William Bradford, of Plymouth Colony. She died at her home on Winter Hill July 10, 1888.

Isaac Brooks Kendall, the second child of his parents, and the only one to survive infancy, was born in Charlestown June 4, 1835. He married (1874) Alice R. Fitz, of Somerville, only child of the late George H. and Rebecca S. (Moulton) Fitz. Her mother is a resident of this city. The three children of this marriage are: Dr. Arthur I. Kendall, bacteriologist, of New York City; Rebecca A. (Mrs. George A. Gray) and Richard F. Kendall, of Somerville.

In early life Mr. Kendall united with the Mount Hermon Lodge of Medford (A. F. and A. M.), was later transferred to John Abbot Lodge of Somerville, and still later became a charter member of Soley Lodge. He belonged to the Orient Council of Massachusetts, to the Boston Commandery, and to the Knights Templar. He was also a member of the Royal Arcanum, besides the Somerville Historical Society. For many years he had been treasurer of the old Charlestown Training Field Association. He had built up from his young manhood a large insurance business, with office in Charlestown. In business he was a man of character and integrity. In social life he showed geniality, kindness, and the other qualities belonging to a good neighbor. He was a member of the Winter Hill Universalist Church.

In preparing this report, the committee is indebted for information to the Somerville Journal, Mrs. F. D. Lapham, Miss Anna P. Vinal, Frank M. Hawes, W. B. Holmes, Miss Lizzie G. Knapp, and Mrs. Lilla E. Arnold.

Respectfully submitted,

D. L. Maulsby,

Elizabeth A. Waters,

Committee on Necrology.







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

January, 1909

Vol. VII

No. 4







## CONTENTS.

---

LAND ON BARBERRY LANE	Aaron Sargent	73
LAND ON BARBERRY LANE—ADDITIONAL HISTORICAL INFORMATION	J. Roger Wentworth	77
THE BRIGHAM FAMILY	(Continued)	86
BRIGHAM FARM ON 'B' ROCKS'	William E. Brigham	87

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

22 LAUREL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 22 Laurel Street. Exchange list in charge of Mr. William L. Booth,  
60 Heath Street, to whom all communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

---

### PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* MRS. SARA A. S. CARTER

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. VII.

JANUARY, 1909

No. 4.

## LAND ON BARBERRY LANE.

By Aaron Sargent.

The land which is the theme of this story was owned by Patrick T. Jackson, of Boston, seventy years since. He was a wealthy and prominent business man, one of the projectors of the Boston & Lowell Railroad, and was named in the act of its incorporation in the year 1830.

In 1835, Jackson sold the property to William True and Jacob Sleeper. It was described by metes and bounds, and is the only full description of the whole of the premises on record. The boundaries given are, condensed, beginning at a corner of the Craigie Road, so called, leading to Medford, and of a range-way between this parcel of land and the land of Fosdick; thence running southwesterly on and by said rangeway to a lane; thence on said lane northwesterly to land of John Tufts; thence northeasterly on land of said Tufts; thence southeasterly (by the Boston & Lowell Railroad); thence easterly; thence southeasterly on and by said Craigie's Road, and thence easterly to the first-named bounds; containing 13 acres, 3 qrs., and 21.82 rods.

In 1836, Sleeper conveyed his undivided half part to Amos and Abbott Lawrence, brothers, well and favorably known in Boston a half century and more ago. Subsequently the Lawrences re-conveyed to Sleeper. True conveyed his interest to Ezra Mudge, and he conveyed to Sleeper, who thereby became sole owner of the nearly fourteen acres. Sixty years ago Jacob Sleeper was in the wholesale clothing business in Boston, with Andrew Carney, whose name is perpetuated by the Carney Hospital. The firm was Carney & Sleeper, and their place of business was in Ann Street, now North Street, and they supplied the United States government with clothing for the army or navy, or perhaps both. It comes within my recollection to say





that both were considered as honorable and upright men of business; but this was no novelty at that time.

In 1844, Sleeper made an agreement with Orr N. Towne, representing the then new Unitarian society, to convey to it a parcel of land, called on Prospect Hill, and the erection of a church was commenced. The next year the agreement was carried into effect and the land was conveyed to the First Congregational society in Somerville. It was described as being on Prospect Hill, "on the street which passes the new church, running from Spring Hill, Central Street, to Medford Street," and was said to contain half an acre. The city bought this land in 1893.

In 1845, Jacob Sleeper and others, abutters, released from their respective estates to the town of Somerville strips of land for the widening of a rangeway, "formerly known as Barberry Lane, running from Medford Street, near the house of Edwin Munroe, Jr., and passing Mr. Thorpe's house, and the new Unitarian church, to the Ireland rangeway."

In 1851, Sleeper sold to the town land described as being on the corner of Church Street, for a high school house. The second story of the building erected was used as a high school till 1872. The lower story, in an unfinished condition, was used several years for town business, and for purposes of amusement. The lot of land contained about a half of an acre.

In the same year (1851), Sleeper sold to Isaac F. Shepard land adjoining the church land, containing about an acre. Shepard mortgaged back to Sleeper, then sold the equity to Thomas J. Lee, who subsequently quit-claimed to Sleeper, and he thereby again became the owner.

In 1859, Sleeper sold Shepard another lot of land. It adjoined the then high school house land. In 1860, George W. Coleman, as assignee of Shepard, sold this lot to Chester Guild, who in 1868 sold to Benjamin Hadley, and he in the same year sold to Elizabeth S. Fenno. In 1870, Fenno sold to John R. Poor, and he sold to the town of Somerville. The lot contained about a half an acre. Several prominent men in town had been interested in having the whole of Mr. Sleeper's original





purchase belong, eventually, to Somerville. My recollection of this Fenno land transaction is that John R. Poor and Robert A. Vinal, acting in concert, concluded to buy the land, if they could, trusting to the town's taking it off their hands; and all this was accomplished. There were some persons in town at the time who did not hesitate to assert that the two purchasers made a sum of money on the sale to the town, but the statement was absolutely false. They made nothing, and a more unselfish act by unselfish men was never performed, than the act of John P. Poor and Robert A. Vinal, by which Somerville came into possession of the Fenno land.

On the third of May, 1869, in town meeting, on motion of Clark Bennett, it was voted that the selectmen be instructed and authorized to purchase a piece of land on Highland Avenue, which, in their judgment, shall be suitable for a town hall with town offices, and for an engine house; and on the 29th of the same month, the selectmen having received three several propositions to sell to the town the land contemplated by its vote, accepted, the finance committee acquiescing, the one for a parcel on the corner of Highland Avenue and Walnut Street, having a frontage of 450 feet on Highland Avenue, and extending back on a line parallel with Walnut Street, to Medford Street, containing about three and a half acres.

In 1870, Sleeper sold to George W. Coleman and the late William H. Brine all the remaining land of his original purchase, and in a few days these two sold the premises to the town of Somerville. There is quite a story connected with the transfers of this last piece of property. A short time before the sale and purchase of this remaining parcel, Mr. Brine, who lived near by, conceived the idea that some one might deem it an object to buy the land in anticipation of its being wanted by the town. He thought of Mr. Coleman and suggested it to him. It seemed feasible to Mr. Coleman, and he wanted Mr. Brine to join him in the purchase; "but," said Mr. Brine, "I cannot, for I have no money." "I will furnish that," said Mr. Coleman; and so the land was bought. The consideration in the deed was \$25,000, but this may not have been the exact sum. Then came





a move to have an article inserted in the warrant for the next town meeting, to see if the town would authorize the purchase from Messrs. Coleman and Brine. Mr. Brine was naturally active in the matter, and may have been one of the prime movers in the whole transaction, for his interest in it as a business affair was of the utmost importance to him.

An active part was taken by John R. Poor, not only in the preliminary proceedings, but also in the transactions which led to the completion of the purchase, and much credit is due to him. In furtherance of this scheme of purchase, an article was inserted in the warrant for a town meeting to be held on the 11th of June, 1870, when, on a motion made by myself, though the fact had long ago been forgotten, and was only brought to mind, recently, by an examination of the records, it was voted "that a committee of five be appointed by the chairman, who shall be, and they are, hereby authorized to purchase a lot of land situated on Highland Avenue, School and Medford Streets, and the Boston & Lowell Railroad, and adjoining land already owned by the town, and that the sum of thirty-four thousand dollars be appropriated therefor; said land to be used for any purpose for which it may be required by the town." Then on a motion, naturally made by the same person, as he was a member of the finance committee of the town, it was voted that the treasurer be authorized, with the approval of the finance committee, to borrow \$34,000.

The committee appointed by the chairman or moderator to make the purchase consisted of John R. Poor, chairman, Reuben E. Demmon, Charles H. Guild, Christopher E. Rymes, and Oren S. Knapp,—all representative men in Somerville. The land,—about eight and one-half acres,—was purchased for \$33,683.70, and the whole transaction was perfectly legitimate, straightforward, and honorable on the part of all concerned,—grantors and grantee. This last sale and purchase comprised all the land of the original Sleeper purchase of 1835, not at that time owned by the town; except the Fenno lot, which was bought a few months later, and the land of the First Congregational society, which was not bought till 1893,





This, then, is the story of Land on Barberry Lane. Its area now, as seventy years ago, is intact. Its original boundaries still remain, and the highways and the railroad that held it then in their rigid grasp, hold it now. The names of these highways, it is true, have been changed, but that is all. Barberry Lane is now Highland Avenue; a rangeway (erroneously called land of John Tufts in the deed) is School Street; the aristocratic Boston & Lowell Railroad, with its original par value of \$500 per share for its stock, is now substantially the Boston & Maine Railroad; Craigie Road leading to Medford is Medford Street, and a rangeway separating the land from land of Fosdick is now Walnut Street.

Of the nine men who were active in the purchase of the large tract of land in 1870, only one is now living, the member of the finance committee already mentioned.

Future generations will pass over and stand upon our Central Hill, and not a person will know, perhaps, what thought, and time, and painstaking were required that Somerville might become the possessor of that sightly and historic spot.

---

### LAND ON BARBERRY LANE.

#### Additional Historical Information Concerning the Central Hill Park Property, Going Back into Early Colonial Times.

By L. Roger Wentworth, Esq.

I will supplement Mr. Sargent's very interesting article by a history of the Barberry Lane property from Patrick T. Jackson's ownership back to the time when it was part of the stinted common. Of the history of the stinted common, I think Mr. Elliot has fully written.

There was a partition of a portion of the common made in 1681, and the proprietors thereof drew lots for their shares. Captain Timothy Wheeler drew lot No. 40. He was entitled to





eight cow commons, and, therefore, twelve acres were set off to him. This was a parcel of forty rods frontage on Barberry Lane, and forty-eight rods frontage on School Street. Its opposite sides were equal.

By deed dated July 9, 1683, Captain Wheeler for "£55 lawful money of the colony of Massachusetts paid by William Stetson, John Cutler, and Aaron Ludkin, Deacons and Trustees for the Church of Charlestown," conveyed the whole twelve acres to said deacons and trustees.

This £55 was a gift from Captain Richard Sprague and his wife, Mary. This was the Richard Sprague who was called "Leffttenant," and with whom, February 15, 1662, the proprietors of the stinted common made an agreement whereby, for the use of twenty cow commons for twenty-one years, he agreed to erect and maintain a fence between the common and Mr. Winthrop's (the Ten Hills) farm. He died in 1668, and this agreement was one of his assets. He was captain of the "pink" convent, and a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. He must have been a prominent man in Charlestown, for his name appears many times in the records. His total estate was inventoried at £2,337; no small estate for those times. Included in it was a warehouse and wharf, and interest in three vessels, the "Dolphin," the "Society," and another of which Michael Long was master. He also owned, besides large tracts of land, two and one-half years of the time of Stephen Gere, a bondman, I suppose. He gave to Harvard College thirty ewe sheep and thirty lambs, and to the Church of Charlestown his remaining interest in the twenty cow commons above mentioned.

His wife, Mary, died 1674, and she gave to the church a shop adjoining the meeting-house. She had, in 1671, loaned this shop to the church for its benefit. This land (our locus) remained in the ownership of this church till 1833, when John Doane, Jr., sole deacon of the First church in Charlestown, and Isaac Warren and John Soley, "a committee for the purpose," by deed dated May 18, 1833, for \$1,800 conveyed the whole twelve acres to Patrick T. Jackson, who was acting in the inter-





est of the Boston & Lowell Railroad. Its history from this time Mr. Sargent has given.

I do not recollect that any land was conveyed to Mr. Jackson by the "Ireland family," except a parcel of land called the "stone-pit," where Granite Street now is; which contained the only granite in Somerville, I am told, and from which probably was obtained material for the granite sleepers on which the rails of the Lowell railroad were originally laid.

The land which we have so far been considering extended halfway from School Street to Walnut Street. That part of the Central Hill Park from Walnut Street half-way to School Street at one time, as will hereafter appear, did belong to Abraham Ireland, the great-grandfather of George W. Ireland, but that is as near as the ownership of it ever got to the latter.

Of this land a parcel bounding westerly on the church lot above described eighteen rods, southerly on Barberry Lane, and easterly on Walnut Street eighteen rods, containing four and one-half acres, was set in the 1681 division already mentioned, to "Isack" Johnson, he having drawn lot No. 29. In 1714, his widow, Mary, for £25 conveyed the same to their son, William, and the land had now increased in area to five acres. In 1715, William Johnson conveyed these five acres for £45 "in good and lawful bills of publick credit" to John Frizzell, who in 1717 conveyed the same to Abraham Ireland.

Just northerly of these four and one-half acres a small lot of only one and one-half acres, one cow common, was made. Sarah Allen, the widow of John Allen, drew lot 28, and this lot was set off to her. It had a frontage of six rods on Walnut Street. Mrs. Allen for £7 conveyed the lot to Samuel Dowse, by deed dated January 26, 1683. Dowse conveyed it for £6 by deed dated February 10, 1691, to Rev. Charles Morton, who came over with Penhallow, and was in 1656 pastor of the First church (see Budington's history of the First church).

These two parcels, extending up Walnut Street, from Barberry Lane (Highland Avenue) twenty-four rods, I think would cover all the city's present land. But as the subsequent title to





them is the same as that of the land northerly of them I give that also.

John Mousal drew lot No. 27 in this partition, and under it twenty-four acres were set off to him next northerly of the Allen lot. It extended ninety-six rods northerly along Walnut Street from the Allen lot. In 1687, Mousal conveyed fifteen acres of the southerly part of this parcel to said Mr. Morton. Mr. Morton owned a large tract of land on the easterly side of Walnut Street, and for reasons on which we can speculate, and on which I hope he didn't, he mortgaged the whole tract for £200 to Edward Thomas, by mortgage dated November 18, 1697. I think it no wonder that farmers and people unacquainted with business usually have such a horror of mortgages. It seemed to them what actually appears in many instances of mortgages in those times, that a mortgage was really a mort-gage, a dead pledge; the property was gone forever. Very frequently, so far as the record shows, no foreclosure was had and no conveyance made of the equity, and yet the mortgagee would treat the property as if he were the owner, and the subsequent title come down under his unforcedclosed mortgage.

So far as I have been able to discover, that was the way this mortgage operated. Mr. Morton died in 1698. In 1709, Edward Thomas assigned this mortgage to John Indicutt. Mr. Indicutt was a cooper. He died in 1711, and was buried in King's Chapel burying ground. In 1712, his widow, Mary, and Edward Thomas made a deed of the premises to John Frizzell, for £212. John Frizzell for £260 by deed dated December 25, 1717, conveyed the same to Abraham Ireland. This deed also conveyed the five-acre Johnson lot, which we have already stated was conveyed to Ireland by Frizzell. The deed says it conveys twenty-two acres, an increase of an acre over the original allotments, and original conveyance from Mousal. Thus it appears how fast this country was then growing. Mr. Ireland was a large land-owner. He owned on the easterly side of Walnut Street also. He died in 1753, and was buried in the Cambridge burying ground, at Harvard Square. No administration was taken out on his estate, and the only papers I have





been able to find in the probate office at Cambridge are a receipt, dated October 30, 1773, signed by three of the children, Abraham, Jonathan, and Abigail, and by the husbands of four other children (women didn't have many rights in those days), saying that they had received from Thomas and John "our full portion and share of the estate, real and personal, of our Honored Father Abraham Ireland and do consent and agree with them, said John and Thomas, that the real estate of our said father Abraham shall be settled on them as they shall agree."

If they had called in a lawyer to settle that estate there would have been a big package of petitions, bonds, inventories, and accounts in the probate court, and pages of deeds in the registry. But this simple paper was all there was to it. Even John and Thomas did nothing further. In these old settlements one sometimes does not find so much as this. A man will die, leaving a large family and widow. The widow, or sometimes one child, will proceed to dispose of the whole estate. No doubt they had an understanding, and those with whom they dealt knew of it, and felt secure in it. Such seems to have been the fact.

Such seems to have been the fact in our case, too, for on September 4, 1765, eight years before that receipt had been given, John Ireland for £100 mortgaged twelve acres to David Phipps, which he says is "my half of twenty-four acres set out to me of my father's estate, the other half being improved by Thomas Ireland." Note that the twenty-two acres of the Frizzell land has now increased to twenty-four. He bounds this land southerly on a rangeway (Barberry Lane); westerly on the Church lot and land of Samuel and Joshua Rand; northerly on Thomas Ireland; and easterly on Thomas Ireland. This easterly land of Thomas's we shall deal with later herein. We shall find it was a five-acre parcel and was the extreme corner of Barberry Lane and Walnut Street. We shall find, also, that the mortgaged premises bounded on Walnut Street, although one would not learn it from this description.

John Ireland died in 1788 insolvent. He owed £29, and had only £22 of apparent assets, and they hunted for assets, too, for





they appraised his bed cord. After the first inventory was filed, which, by the way, showed no real estate, some sharp creditor thought that he had some land in Douglas, and had a new set of appraisers appointed to appraise this land. They reported that it had been sold for taxes.

There is no deed on record, so far as I have found, by John Ireland, conveying his equity in the land which he mortgaged to Mr. Phipps, and, as I have said, his inventory showed no real estate. What I have said above regarding foreclosures applies here, for in 1794 Francis Dana, who was then chief justice of our supreme judicial court, as executor of the will of Edmund Trowbridge (an eminent lawyer), obtained a judgment against David Phipps. The latter had been high sheriff of Middlesex County up to 1774, when he found the climate of some other British possession more salubrious than this and left. In other words, he was a Tory, and after he left, his property was confiscated. What was the cause of this particular trouble in the court, where the chief justice sued the sheriff in behalf of a lawyer, it would be interesting to know. Probably the court records tell. I have not examined them. However, an execution was issued on this judgment, and this land appraised at £110 was levied on as land of David Phipps. By deed dated March 19, 1795, Mr. Dana conveyed this land to Nathaniel Austin for £130.

Mr. Austin by deed dated September 6, 1801, conveyed the land to Joseph Adams for \$666.67, and called it an eleven-acre lot, and bounded it southerly on a rangeway (Barberry Lane); westerly on land belonging to the Church in Charlestown, and on land, late of Joshua and Samuel Rand, but now of Joseph Tufts and Colonel Wood; northerly on land of Thomas Ireland, deceased; and easterly on another rangeway (Walnut Street), and southerly and easterly again on land of Thomas Ireland, till it comes to the rangeway just mentioned. Thus it became a part of the estate of Joseph Adams, on another part of which estate Mr. Sargent now lives. I think Mr. Sargent married a descendant of this Mr. Adams.

Joseph Adams died in 1824, leaving a will which was dated in 1823. In that will he gives to his sons, Joseph and Samuel,





and to his grandchildren, William Frost, Edmund Frost, and Lucy Frost, that "lot of land and the buildings on it where my son Joseph lives, containing about eleven acres, and also the Austin lot adjoining thereto, and also that part of the Austin lot which lieth southwesterly of Craigie's Road, so called; the whole of the Austin lot containing about eleven acres which is to be divided into three equal parts; one-third to Joseph, one-third to Samuel, and one-third to William Frost, Edmund Frost, and Lucy Frost, to the last three in equal parts."

The inventory filed in his estate shows 7 acres, 2 quarters, and 36 poles of the Austin lot on the northerly side of Craigie's Road, and 3 acres, 2 quarters, and 4 poles on the southerly side thereof; over eleven acres after the road had been cut through it.

A partition of his estate was had in 1825, and both parts of the Austin lot were set off to the Frosts. This set-off is the first document which gives any definite bounds of the land, and it gives only a part of them. It shows that Amos Hazeltine had acquired title to the corner of Walnut Street and Barberry Lane, as his name appears there in place of Thomas Ireland's.

By deed dated July 12, 1825, for \$697.69 William and Edmund convey their two-thirds in both parcels of the Austin lot to Melzar Torrey. They bound the first parcel: Northeasterly on Nathan Adams, 32 rods, 7 links; southeasterly on a rangeway (Walnut Street) 23 rods; southwesterly on Amos Hazeltine (no distance given); southeasterly on Amos Hazeltine, 26 rods, 8 links; southwesterly on Craigie's Road, 22 rods, and northwesterly on Barnard Tufts and Samuel Adams, 43 rods, 5 links, containing 7 acres, 2 quarters, and 38 poles.

The second parcel they bound: Northeasterly on Craigie's Road, 22 rods; southeasterly on Amos Hazeltine, 24 rods, 2 links; southwesterly on a lane (Barberry), 21 rods, 6 links; and northwesterly on the church lot, 32 rods, 2 links. These bounds enable us to construct the lots with the Austin and the Hazeltine lots.

By deed dated September 22, 1828, Lucy conveyed her one-third in both parts of the Austin lot for \$343.84 to Mr. Torrey.

For some cause Samuel Skelton obtained a judgment





against Mr. Torrey for about \$1,900, and under an execution issued upon it, the land which Mr. Skelton got, as above stated, was on April 10, 1830, set off to satisfy \$720 and no more of the execution. Mr. Torrey should have foreseen that this land would be needed for the Lowell railroad, and have redeemed it. But he did not to his loss, and to Mr. Skelton's profit, for by deed dated May 4, 1833, Mr. Skelton conveyed it for \$2,750 to Patrick T. Jackson.

We have now traced the title to Patrick T. Jackson of the whole frontage from School Street of the city's land to a point about fifteen rods from Walnut Street. We shall now have to retrace our steps to the time of Abraham Ireland's decease. The receipt given by the other heirs to John and Thomas authorized them to settle the division of the estate between them. They did so without any deeds. We have seen that John made a mortgage of what he called half of twenty-four acres to David Phipps. In describing the lot he bounded it easterly by Thomas Ireland.

We have seen by later deeds that this land bounded easterly on Walnut Street, as well as on Thomas Ireland. That is confirmed by what Thomas did. Sometimes what people do is of more real importance than what they say. An act very often clearly interprets what is faultily expressed in words. Thomas proceeds to mortgage his land. By deed dated July 7, 1774, for £140 he mortgaged ten acres of land in two lots; one of them, our locus, a five-acre lot, was bounded easterly on a rangeway (Walnut Street); northerly on John Ireland; westerly on John Ireland, and southerly on a rangeway (Barberry Lane). This mortgage ran to Thomas Flucker. Flucker had one of those delicate constitutions which could not endure the atmosphere of '74 and '75, and for all I know he and David Phipps went together. They went for the same reason. But Flucker, wiser than Phipps, assigned this mortgage by deed of December 12, 1774, to James Pitts, of Boston, before confiscation.

Here seems to be another foreclosure of the kind already mentioned. Thomas Ireland makes no deed of the premises. He died 1776 or 1777. In 1812 John Pitts and others, who, I





suppose are heirs of James Pitts, but whom I have not so verified, for \$800 conveyed the premises described in the Flucker mortgage to Nehemiah Wyman. Mr. Wyman died, and Joseph Tufts, Esq., was appointed administrator upon his estate. By deed of August 14, 1820, for \$227 the administrator conveyed to Edward Cutter a parcel of 2 acres, 1 quarter, and 36 poles, bounded northeasterly on Joseph Adams; easterly on Craigie's Road; southeasterly on a rangeway, and southwesterly on a back lane. The last two bounds are Walnut Street and Barberry Lane, respectively. Edward Cutter, by deed dated March 13, 1823, conveyed to Amos Hazeltine. Mr. Tufts, as administrator, as aforesaid by deed dated August 31, 1820, conveyed to Nehemiah Wyman (son) three and one-fourth acres bounded westerly on Craigie's Road; northwesterly and northeasterly on Joseph Adams; and southeasterly on a rangeway (Walnut Street) for \$250.25. Mr. Wyman by deed of September 4, 1820, for \$299 conveyed to Mr. Hazeltine. By deed recorded 313,541, the date of which I do not chance to have, Mr. Hazeltine conveyed both the parcels which we have traced to him to Patrick T. Jackson. Now we have brought up to Mr. Jackson title to all the land fronting on Barberry Lane (Highland Avenue) which the city now owns. Mr. Sargent has given the subsequent history of it. Many more interesting facts relating to it and its owners can be discovered. The court records and town records of old Charlestown should be searched. What little information I have obtained has been from the records in the registry of deeds and the probate court, and from Wyman.

The Jonathan who signed the receipt above recited was the grandfather of George W. Ireland.

The deed from Thomas to Frizzell in 1712 says that the fifteen-acre Mousall lot was then bounded northerly by a stone wall. That must have been about ninety rods up Walnut Street from Highland Avenue. So permanent a monument may have continued to exist to a point of time within the memory of someone now living. There is an interesting study in values of real estate, as disclosed by the considerations mentioned in these deeds.





## THE BRIGHAM FAMILY.

[Continued from Vol. III., No. 3.]

At a meeting of the Somerville Historical Society in the spring of 1904, I read a paper entitled "Thomas Brigham, the Puritan—an Original Settler," which was published in the issue of Historic Leaves for October, 1904. The statements therein confidently made were based on the alleged result of researches said by Morse to have been made at the instance of the late Peter Bent Brigham. This I followed Mr. Morse in accepting in good faith.

At the meeting to which I have referred, some suggestions by that sterling investigator, Charles D. Elliot, caused me to doubt the accuracy of the Morse account; and the result of my own researches, presented herewith, proves beyond question that the Brigham Family for generations has been weeping at the wrong shrine. As a matter of historical fact, since ascertained with substantial proof, Thomas Brigham, the emigrant, lived and died, in comfortable if not affluent circumstances, on what of late years has been known as the "Greenleaf place," in the rear of and adjoining Radcliffe College, and recently purchased by that institution for educational purposes. There is no doubt in my mind that Thomas Brigham lies buried in the old Cambridge Cemetery, although his grave, like the graves of some others of his time, cannot be identified. In view of the foregoing circumstances, I feel that the indebtedness of the Brigham Family, indirectly to the Somerville Historical Society and directly to Messrs. Elliot and Thomas M. Hutchinson, is very great.

W. E. B.





## "BRIGHAM FARME ON YE ROCKS."

William E. Brigham in "The History of the Brigham Family."

In 1648 there was laid out by the town of Cambridge to Thomas' Brigham "72 acres on ye Rocks on Charlestown line." In view of the important error of Rev. Abner Morse, the first Brigham genealogist, in locating upon this plot the homestead in which Thomas died in 1653, the place has borne a distinction in Brigham family history which is unwarranted by its actual position as a Brigham possession. Morse, mistaking the well-known ledges of Clarendon Hill for "ye Cambridge Rocks," declares that the last habitation of Thomas was in Somerville. Having done this, he easily draws a graphic picture of the Brigham Farm as it might have appeared in the last days of its owner; and he even goes so far as to offer the baseless conjecture that Thomas was buried in Medford.

The "Cambridge Rocks" were, as Morse says, a well-known ancient landmark, but they were not where Morse places them. They begin in Cambridge on the Watertown line, at a point which is now the corner of Pleasant Street and Concord Avenue, Belmont. They skirt the western boundary of Pleasant Street to the corner of Massachusetts Avenue, Arlington, where the public library now stands. This site was originally the corner of the old Watertown road. Thence they cross Massachusetts Avenue, and, following the line of the present Water Street, extend to Fowle's Mill Pond, and thence northwesterly along the mill pond and brook, and northerly across the brook to the Charlestown Line. (This brook, Sucker Brook, was originally Alewife Meadow Brook, and should not be confounded with the present Alewife Brook, flowing out of Fresh Pond, originally the Menotomy [a] River. "The Rocks" continued along the Charlestown Line to a point near the present Lexington and Arlington Line. The territory to the west—Lexington since 1713—was originally known as Cambridge Farms.

It was colloquial to refer to the grants in this immediate vicinity as the "small farms"; hence the item in the inventory





of the property of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Brigham, "a small farme at Charlestown line, £10." The ancient use of the term "farm" did not imply that the land was under cultivation.

It will thus be seen that all the present Arlington Heights, also the well-known Turkey Hill (which is *half an inch* lower), was included in what was anciently known as the Cambridge Rocks.

Of the seventy-two-acre grant to Thomas<sup>1</sup> Brigham, it may be said, in modern terms, that it is now in a northwest part of Arlington.<sup>1</sup> While originally bounded on the north by Charlestown Line, a change in the line at the incorporation of Winchester (originally Woburn) in 1850 left a triangular piece in the northwest corner lying in Winchester. Turkey Hill is near the centre of the grant. Forest Street runs across the property, less than a mile from Massachusetts Avenue, where one leaves the electric car.

The forty-eight-acre grant of Nicholas Wyeth, which adjoined that of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Brigham on the northwest, later passed into possession of Henry Dunster, first president of Harvard College, and was held by his descendants many years. In a bill of sale of the Dunster piece given by John Steadman, county treasurer, to Thomas Danforth, in 1674, the lot is described as bounded "n. (n. e.) by Woburn line . . . e. (s. e.) by a small farm layed out to Thomas Brigham." The Brigham grant also adjoined, on the Charlestown Line, a 300-acre farm of Increase Nowell, and also the 480 acres of "Squa Sachem," which the colony reserved to her when settlement was made with the Indians for the territory comprising Charlestown and Cambridge. The familiar Indian monument on the Peter C. Brooks place in West Medford was erected by Mr. Brooks in memory of the son of Squa Sachem, Sagamore John.

Thomas<sup>1</sup> Brigham died December 8, 1653, leaving this seventy-two-acre grant, with all his other property, to his widow and five children. In 1656 the General Court gave the overseers of his will the right to sell all his real estate. It would appear that this "Brigham Farm," as many ancient deeds refer to it, was bought for £16 by Hon. Thomas Danforth, an ex-





ecutor of the will, although no deed of the property is recorded. In 1695 the farm on the Rocks figures in the suit brought by the children of Thomas Brigham to recover, apparently, all the property which the overseers of their father's will had sold. In the formal ceremony of claiming the "Brigham Farm," as quaintly attested by the witnesses in the chapter on "Thomas Brigham the Emigrant," it will be noted that the "ffarme" is described as "upon the Rocks within the bounds of Cambridge."

Settlement was reached apparently in 1703, when on February 26 Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, and John<sup>2</sup> Brigham quitclaimed "that tract or p<sup>c</sup>cell of land commonly called or known by y<sup>e</sup> name of Brighams farme: Scituate, lying and being on y<sup>e</sup> Rocks neer Oburn line within the Township of Cambridge . . . containing by Estimation Seventy Two acres be the same more or less . . .," to Francis Foxcroft, Esq., Samuel Sparhawk, and Daniel Champney, joint executors of the will of Hon. Thomas Danforth. This deed was given "in consideration of the Sum of Sixteen Pounds pd to y<sup>e</sup> Children of Thomas Brigham late of Cambridge Dece'd by Thomas Danforth Esq. and Thomas Fox called Overseers of y<sup>e</sup> Estate of s<sup>d</sup> Thomas Brigham Dece'd: and Thirty pounds in money to us in hand etc." From this document, and others affecting the other properties, it might be inferred that the suits grew out of the dissatisfaction of the children of Thomas, now of age, with the disposition of their property while they were yet minors.

In 1706 the property was bought by Thomas<sup>3</sup> Prentice for £68. It was then bounded "N. E. by Charlestown line, N. W. by Nathaniel Patten Senior and John Carter of Oburn, W. by Walter<sup>3</sup> Russell E. and S. E. by the land of Jason Russell." Thomas<sup>3</sup> Prentice was a brickmaker, and resided on what is now the west side of Garden Street, opposite the Botanical Garden. He died December 7, 1709; and the inventory shows: "72 acres, Brigham's Farm, £68." In the distribution of his property, the Brigham Farm went to his son, Rev. Thomas<sup>4</sup> Prentice (b. 1702, H. C. 1726, d. 1782), who made his first sale, of nine acres, in 1724, as if to aid him through Harvard, to Andrew Mallet, whose relative, John Mallet, built the Old Powder





House in Somerville. A second purchaser, of twenty acres, was Deacon John Bradish, a celebrated real estate trader of his day. He always styled himself, even in his deeds, "glazier of Harvard College," and he held this unique position for forty years. By 1753 Rev. Thomas Prentice had disposed of more than seventy acres of the original grant for £443. Much of the property remained within the Prentice family.

In 1773 John<sup>5</sup> Hutchinson, whose descendants at the present time own all but about ten acres of the original grant, made his first purchase from the Brigham tract, paying Henry Prentice, an uncle of the Rev. Thomas, £50, 13s. 4d. for nine and one-half acres "on \*Turkey Hill"—the first mention of this name in the deeds. John Hutchinson owned and occupied the Nowell-Broughton-Gardner farm of about seventy acres adjoining on the Charlestown side of the line, and at his death in 1783 had acquired, also, some forty acres of the Brigham place. In 1817 his son Thomas<sup>6</sup>, to whom the farm later descended, bought twenty-two and one-half acres more, twenty of which were "Brigham land," of Daniel Reed, of Charlestown, making all but about eight acres, on the southwest side, of the original grant. At the death of Thomas<sup>6</sup> in 1863, the property was divided among his six children, and most of it is still held by their heirs. No building ever has been erected on the land originally owned by Thomas Brigham. It is now partly tilled. The Hutchinson homestead, on the original Charlestown side, on the old Nowell farm, and replacing the buildings erected in 1743-'45, and burned a few years ago, stands on the corner of Ridge Street and Hutchinson Road (Fruit Street), Winchester. It is occupied by Mrs. Mary A., widow of Thomas<sup>7</sup> O. Hutchinson, a daughter, Miss Mary A., and a son, Thomas<sup>8</sup> M. Hutchinson, the well-known antiquarian, to whose generosity and exhaustive researches, covering many years, the writer is indebted for many of these authenticated facts relative to the "Brigham Farme on Ye Rocks."

---

\*In olden times this was a favorite sighting point for vessels making Boston Harbor, as it was heavily wooded and Arlington Heights was not.





# INDEX

- Abbott, Jesse B., 12.  
 Adams, Allena A., 67.  
 Adams, Benjamin F., 67.  
 Adams, Frances, 67.  
 Adams, Frances B., 39.  
 Adams, Henry, 31, 39.  
 Adams, Joseph, 28, 82, 83, 85.  
 Adams, Nathan, 83.  
 Adams, Samuel, 82, 83.  
 Albany, 11.  
 Albatross, Gunboat, 52, 53, 60.  
 Alewife Brook, 25, 87.  
 Alexandria, 53, 57.  
 Algiers, La., 52.  
 Allen, Alfred, 36, 37, 39.  
 Allen, Hannah J., 33.  
 Allen, Henry C., 31.  
 Allen, James M., 4, 12.  
 Allen, John, 79.  
 Allen, Sarah, 79.  
 Andersonville, Ga., 16, 17.  
 Ann Street, Boston, 73.  
 Andrews, General, 60.  
 Appomattox Court House, 11.  
 "Arizona," The, 60.  
 Arlington Heights, 88, 90.  
 Arlington, Mass., 25, 87.  
 Arlington, Va., 11.  
 Arnold, Irene Adalaid, 70.  
 Arnold, Irene G. (Clark), 23, 70.  
 Arnold, Leonard, 23, 70.  
 Arnold, Lilla E., 72.  
 Arnold, L. Frank, 21, 23.  
 Arnold, Mary Ella, 22.  
 Arnold, William J., 12.  
 Ashland, 12.  
 Atchafalaya River, 52.  
 Atlantic, The, 4.  
 Augur, General, 58, 59, 60.  
 Austin, Daniel, 82.  
 Avery Salt Works, 56.  
 Ayer's Division, 3.  
 Ayer, General, 2.  
 Bacon, Rev. Henry, 40.  
 Bailey, Clarinda, 42, 43.  
 Baily, Mrs. Kendall, 72.  
 Baker, William A., 12.  
 Banks, General N. P., 51, 52, 53, 55, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61.  
 Baptist Church, East Cambridge, 39.  
 Barberry Lane, Land on, 73-85.  
 Baton Rouge, 51, 53.  
 "Battle of Weldon Railroad," 2.  
 Bayou, Boeuf, 53, 56.  
 Bayou, Sara, 58.  
 Bayou, Teche, 53, 54.  
 Bean, George W., 12.  
 Belding, Charles H., 12.  
 Bell, 39.  
 Bellfield, 7.  
 Benedict Institute, Columbia, S. C., 31.  
 Bennett, Adeline Frances, 69.  
 Bennett, Clark, 40, 69, 75.  
 Bennett, Hannah, 69.  
 Bennett, Lydia, 48.  
 Bennett, Oscar F., 48.  
 Benz, August, 12.  
 Berwick Bay, 53, 54.  
 Berwick City, 54, 55.  
 Beverly, Mass., 3.  
 Bisland, Battle of, 55.  
 Black's Station, 11.  
 Blanchard, Catherine, 31, 32.  
 Blanchard, Nathan, 29.  
 "Block House, The," 25.  
 Boardman, Andrew, Esq., 63.  
 Bodge, George A., 12.  
 Bolton, John T., 13.  
 Boston, Mass., 5.  
 Boston Commandery, 72.  
 Boston Harbor, 6, 90.  
 Boston and Lowell Railroad, 73.  
 Botanical Garden, 89.  
 Bowdoin College, 34.  
 Bowdoinham, Me., 31.  
 Bowman, Mrs. Selwyn Z., 32.  
 Bow Street, 31.  
 Boynton Plank Road, 9.  
 Boynton, William F., 13, 19.  
 Bradford Academy, 32.  
 Bradford, Nancy, 71, 72.  
 Bradford, Governor William, 72.  
 Bradish, John, 90.  
 Bradshaw, Sergeant, 3.  
 Brashear City, 52, 54, 57.  
 Brastow School, 24.  
 Brattleboro, Vt., 34.  
 Bridgewater, Mass., 31.  
 Brigham Family, The, 86.  
 "Brigham Farm on Ye Rocks," 87-90.  
 Brigham, John, 89.  
 Brigham, Peter Bent, 86.  
 Brigham, Samuel, 89.  
 Brigham, Thomas, 87, 88, 89, 90.  
 Brine, William H., 75, 76.  
 Brotchie, James, 12.  
 Brown University, 66.  
 Bucknam, Davis P., 13.  
 Budington's History of the First Church, 79.  
 Burnham, Sarah M., 31, 35, 36, 37, 38, 41.  
 Burnham, Sarah M., Works of, 38.  
 Butler, General Benjamin F., 51.  
 Byrnes, James, 13.  
 "Cambridge Farms," 87.  
 Cambridge, Mass., 1, 32.  
 Cambridgeport, 31.  
 Cambridge Road, 28.  
 "Cambridge Rocks," The Boundaries of, 87.  
 Canfield, John B., 4, 13.  
 Carney, Andrew, 73.  
 Carr, William M., 13.  
 Carter, John, 89.  
 Champney, Daniel, 89.  
 Charleston, S. C., 47.  
 Charlestown Common, 63.  
 Charlestown "End," 32.  
 Charlestown State's Prison, 33.  
 Charlestown Training Field Association, 72.  
 Chase, Alfred B., 67.  
 Chase, Aquila, 21.  
 Chase, Charles Henry, 22.  
 Chase, Daniel E., 21.  
 Chase, Daniel E., Jr., 22.  
 Chase, Hon. Dudley, 24.  
 Chase, Hannah A., 67.  
 Chase, Martha D., 67.  
 Chase, Phidelia Jane, 67.  
 Chase, Salmon P., 22.  
 Chase, Washington Irving, 22.  
 Cheever, Ezekiel, Esq., 63, 65.  
 Cheney, Mary A., 24.  
 Chick, Hannah, 48.





- Chick, Horace, 48.  
 Chick, Susan Maria, 48.  
 Clarendon Hill, 87.  
 City Point Hospital, 4.  
 Civil War, Events of the, Preced-  
 ing Siege of Port Hudson, 49, 50.  
 Clark, George S., 47.  
 Clark, Gustavus A., 13.  
 Clark, Jonathan C., 70.  
 Clark, Joseph, 21.  
 Clark, S. Adams, 21.  
 Cogswell, Francis, 37, 38.  
 Colburn, Joshua O., 30.  
 Colby, Lewis, 31.  
 Cole, Ambrose, 43.  
 Cole, Chandler G., 4, 13.  
 Coleman, George W., 74, 75, 76.  
 Coles, Ambrose W., 3, 13.  
 Collett, Herbert, 13.  
 Common's Well, 7.  
 Company B, Roxbury, 10.  
 Company E, Somerville, 4.  
 Company E, Thirty-ninth Massa-  
 chusetts Infantry, in the Civil  
 War.—IV., 1-20.  
 Company F, Taunton, 9.  
 Company K, Woburn, 10.  
 Conner, Thomas, 13.  
 Coombs, Michael, 30, 31.  
 Cooper, Captain J. J., 9.  
 Cooper Shop, 12.  
 Copp, Mr., 31.  
 Cotton, Colonel, 62.  
 Coulter, Colonel R., 6.  
 Craigie Road, The, 73, 77, 83.  
 Craigie Street, Somerville, 31.  
 Crawford, General, 2.  
 Crimean War, 16.  
 Crosby, Elkanah, 10, 13.  
 Cross Roads, 7.  
 Crowley, Daniel, 13.  
 Cutler, John, 78.  
 Cutter, Ebenezer F., 43.  
 Cutter, Edward, 43, 45, 85.  
 Cutter, Elizabeth, 45.  
 Cutter, Fitch, 37, 43.  
 Cutter, George, 14.  
 Cutter, Martha, 45.  
 Cutter, Samuel, 43, 45.  
  
 Dabney's Mills, 8.  
 Dana, Francis, 82.  
 Dane, Emeline, 71.  
 Dane, Mary, 71.  
 Dane, Osgood, 71.  
 Danforth, Thomas, 88, 89.  
 Dartmouth College, 27.  
 Davis, Amos F., 14.  
 Davis Schoolhouse, 24.  
 Day, Ann S., 47.  
 Day, George H., 47.  
 Day, Mary Adalade, 47.  
 Demmon, Reuben E., 76.  
 Dinwiddie Court House, 8.  
 Doane, John, Jr., 78.  
 Dodge, Albert H., 14.  
 Dodge, Mary, 36.  
 Dodge, William H., 14.  
 "Dolphin," The, 78.  
 Dow, General, 60.  
 Dowse, Samuel, 79.  
 Dunster, Henry, 88.  
 Dusseault, John H., 1, 4, 14.  
  
 Dyer, Ezekiel D., 30, 31.  
 Dyer, Jonathan C., 14.  
  
 Eastern Primary School, Cam-  
 bridge, 38.  
 East Somerville, 29.  
 Edgerly, Emma F., 68, 69.  
 Edgerly, Jerome B., 69.  
 Edgerly, L. C., 68, 69.  
 Edgerly, M. A., 68, 69.  
 Edlefson, Charles E., 14.  
 Eighty-ninth, The, 6.  
 Eleventh Penn., 6.  
 Elliot, Charles D., 49, 65, 77, 86.  
 Elm Street, Somerville, 32.  
 Emerson, Samuel, 14.  
 Emory, General, 59.  
 "Essex," The, 60.  
 "Estrella," The, 60.  
 Everett, Mass., 31.  
  
 Fairchild, Willard C., 14.  
 Farmileo, William, 68.  
 Farmville, 11.  
 Farragut, 52, 53.  
 Farrar, Bathsheba Burt, 34.  
 Farrar, Calvin, 31, 34.  
 Farrar, Daniel, 34.  
 Farrar, George A., 14.  
 Farrar, Luther, 34.  
 Farrar, Samuel, 34.  
 Fay, Walter, 14.  
 Felch, Lieutenant, 5.  
 Felker, Samuel O., 14.  
 Fellows, Charles C., 14.  
 Fellows, John, 44.  
 Female Seminary, Charlestown, 40.  
 Fenno, Elizabeth S., 74.  
 Fenley, Charles, 46.  
 Fenley, Mary, 46.  
 Fifth Corps, 5.  
 First Baptist Society, Somerville,  
 66.  
 First Congregational Society in  
 Somerville, The, 74.  
 First Universalist Church, 21.  
 Fisk, Betsey S., 67.  
 Fisk, James A., 66.  
 Fisk, John, 43.  
 Fisk, J. W., 66.  
 Fisk, Mark, 67.  
 Fisk, Mary, 66.  
 Fitcham, Charles E., 15.  
 Fitz, Alice R., 72.  
 Fitz, George H., 72.  
 Fitz, Rebecca S. (Moulton), 72.  
 Five Forks, 10.  
 Flanders, Miss, 30.  
 Flucker, Thomas, 84.  
 Forster, —, 39.  
 Fort Conahey, 6.  
 Fort Duchesne, 6.  
 Fort MacMahon, 2.  
 Fort Jackson, 50.  
 Fortress Monroe, 4.  
 Fort Sedgwick, 2.  
 Fort Stedman, 9.  
 Fort St. Philip, 50.  
 Fort Wadsworth, 6.  
 Fowle's Mill Pond, 87.  
 Fox, Thomas, 89.  
 Foxcroft, Francis, Esq., 89.





- Franklin Primary, 40.  
 Franklin School, 39.  
 Fredericksburg, 11.  
 Free Street Church, Portland, Me., 31.  
 Fresh Pond, 87.  
 Frizzell, John, 79, 80, 85.  
 Frost, Edmund, 83.  
 Frost, Lucy, 83.  
 Frost, Captain Samuel, 23.  
 Frost, Samuel Tufts, 42.  
 Frost, William, 83.  
 Frothingham, James K., 28.  
 Fuller, John E., 15.  
 Fullick, Eliza R., 69.  
 Fullick, George K., 69.  
 Fullick, Geraldine, 69.  
 Gardner, General, 60, 61.  
 Gardner Row District, 32, 36.  
 Gardner Row School, 35.  
 Gaw, James, 68.  
 Gay, Eugene, 67.  
 Gay, Francis G., 67.  
 Gay, Hannah T., 67.  
 "Genesee," The, 60.  
 Gere, Stephen, 78.  
 Gerrish, Colonel, 64.  
 Gherardi, Donato, 68.  
 Gilcrease, Elijah H., 15.  
 Giles, Joseph J., 15.  
 Glines, Frederick H., 4, 15.  
 "Globe Tavern," 2, 6.  
 Goffstown, N. H., 39.  
 Goodridge, Caroline A., 68.  
 Goodridge, Lowell, 68.  
 Goodridge, Otis H., 68.  
 Gordon, George A., 27.  
 Gordon, Lydia (Ames), 27.  
 Gordon, John, 67.  
 Gordon, Julia P., 67.  
 Gordon, Samuel, 27.  
 Gordon, Sylvia Ellen, 67.  
 Gordon, Yorick S., 27.  
 Gorham, David, 4, 15.  
 Graham, William L., 15.  
 Grand Army Post, Somerville, 10.  
 Grand Lake, 54.  
 Granite Street "Stone-pit," 79.  
 Grant, Caroline M., 66.  
 Grant, Edward L., 15.  
 Grant, Edwin, 66.  
 Grant, General, 53, 57, 58, 59, 61.  
 Grant, Mary Ella, 66.  
 Gravelly Run, 9.  
 Gray, Dexter, 4, 15.  
 Gray, P. T., 27.  
 Gray, Rebecca A., 72.  
 Green, Francis, 70.  
 "Greenleaf Place," The, 86.  
 Grierson, General, 59.  
 Griffin, General, 2.  
 Grimes, Emmeline May, 22.  
 Grover, General, 54, 55, 59.  
 Guild, Charles H., 76.  
 Guild, Chester, 74.  
 Gurley House, 8, 9.  
 Hadley, Benjamin, 43, 74.  
 Hadley, Eugene B., 8, 15.  
 Hafford, John, 15.  
 Hagan, Patrick, 16.  
 Hale, Edward M., 15.  
 Halifax Road, 7.  
 Hall, Andrew, 62, 63, 64.  
 Hall, Moses, 27.  
 Halle, Germany, 66.  
 Halleck, General, 52.  
 Hancock, N. H., 27.  
 Hanley, John H., 15.  
 Hatcher's Run, 8.  
 Hawkins, Guy C., 31, 32, 33, 36, 37.  
 Hawkins, Nathaniel, 42.  
 Hawkins, Sarah, 31, 35.  
 Hawes, Frank M., 25, 72.  
 Harley, Frances C. Sherman, 69.  
 Harley, James K., 69.  
 Harley, Leonora, 69.  
 Harlow, George R., 4, 15.  
 Harrington, Elbridge, 46.  
 Harvard College, 31, 88.  
 "Hartford," The, 52, 60.  
 Hastings, J. P., 68.  
 Hastings, Martha Ella, 68.  
 Hastings, Mary, 68.  
 Hatch, George H., 4, 16.  
 Hatcher's Run, 6.  
 Hayes, Eliza, 48.  
 Hayes, Ezra Herbert, 48.  
 Hayes, Joseph, 48.  
 Hazeltine, Amos, 83, 85.  
 Heal, Julia A., 23.  
 Heath, Colonel, 62.  
 Henry Price Lodge of Charlestown, 23.  
 Herbon, William M., 4, 15.  
 Hickanoek Creek, 10.  
 Highland Avenue, 77.  
 Highland Chapter, Order of the Eastern Star, 23.  
 Hill, ———, 39.  
 Hills, George A., 16.  
 Hill's Rebel Corps, 3.  
 History of Cambridge, Paige, 28.  
 "History and Uses of Lime Stones and Marbles," Sarah M. Burnham, 38.  
 Holmes, W. B., 72.  
 Horgan, Patrick, 4, 16.  
 Horton, John E., 4, 16.  
 Howard, Hannah, 48.  
 Howe, Henry E., 16.  
 Howe, Phineas, 66.  
 Hunt, Reuben, 43.  
 Hutchinson, John, 90.  
 Hutchinson, Mary A., 90.  
 Hutchinson, T., 62, 65.  
 Hutchinson, Thomas, 90.  
 Hutchinson, Thomas M., 86.  
 Hutchinson, Thomas O., 90.  
 Hoxie, Mary A., 22.  
 Hyde, Richard J., 16.  
 Hyde, Thomas L., 16.  
 Indicut, John, 80.  
 Indicut, Mary, 80.  
 Ipswich, Mass., 29.  
 Ireland, Abigail, 81.  
 Ireland, Abraham, 79, 80, 81, 84.  
 Ireland, George W., 79, 85.  
 Ireland, Jonathan, 81, 85.  
 Ireland, Thomas, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85.  
 Irish Bend, 55.  
 Island No. 10, 50.  
 Isle Petit Anse, 56.  
 Jackson, 58.  
 Jackson, Patrick T., 73, 78, 84.  
 James River, 4, 12.





- Jenks, Joseph W., 30.  
 Jerrett's Station, 7.  
 Jerusalem Plank Road, 6, 7.  
 John Abbot Lodge, 23, 72.  
 Johnson, "Isack," 79.  
 Johnson, Jotham, 43.  
 Johnson, Mary, 79.  
 Johnson, William, 79.  
 Jones, Charles G., 4, 16.  
 Kelly, Thomas, 16.  
 Kendall, Arthur I., 72.  
 Kendall, Francis, 71, 72.  
 Kendall, Isaac, 71.  
 Kendall, Isaac Brooks, 21, 71.  
 Kendall, Isaac, Jr., 71.  
 Kendall, Lucy (Sables), 71.  
 Kendall, Richard F., 72.  
 Kendrick, David, 4, 16.  
 Kennedy, John, 4, 16.  
 Kenneson, Albert, 69, 70.  
 Kenneson, Albert Henry, 69.  
 Kenneson, Nancy J., 69, 70.  
 Kenneston, Elliot, 16.  
 Kent, Jonathan, 44.  
 Kent, Rhoda, 44.  
 Kent, Samuel, 42, 44.  
 Kent, William, 44.  
 Kidder, Sarah Tufts, 28.  
 King's Chapel Burying Ground, 80.  
 Kinsley, Frederick R., 16.  
 Kinsley, Captain F. R., 3, 4.  
 Kinsley, Major F. R., 11.  
 Kinsley, Willard C., 9, 10, 17.  
 Knapp, Lizzie G., 21, 72.  
 Knapp, Lucy M. (Clark), 21.  
 Knapp, Marion, 21.  
 Knapp, Oren S., 21, 76.  
 Knights Templar, 72.  
 Lapham, Mrs. F. D., 72.  
 Lawrence, Abbott, 73.  
 Lawrence, Amos, 73.  
 Lee, Thomas J., 74.  
 Leland, Anna, 71.  
 Leland, John, 71.  
 Leland, John, Jr., 70.  
 Lexington, Mass., 24, 87.  
 Lexington Institute, 32.  
 Libby, Martha E., 37, 39.  
 Lincoln, Abraham, 9, 11.  
 Lincoln, Martha, 29.  
 Lincoln, Mass., 34.  
 Littlefield, A. M., 68.  
 Littlefield, Catherine W., 66.  
 Littlefield, James M., 66.  
 Littlefield, Joshua, 68.  
 Littlefield, Joshua, Jr., 68.  
 Littlefield, Martha A., 68.  
 Littlefield, Mary Ethelinda, 66.  
 Littlefield, R., 68.  
 Liverpool, Eng., 47.  
 Locke, Ann W., 33, 34.  
 Locke, John F., 4, 17.  
 Locke, Lucy Brooks, 21.  
 Long, Michael, 78.  
 Lovett, Washington, 17.  
 Lower Winter Hill Primary, 36.  
 Lower Winter Hill School, 30.  
 Ludkin, Aaron, 78.  
 Magoun, 39.  
 Maitland, Nova Scotia, 68.  
 Major, Daniel, 43.  
 Mallet, Andrew, 89.  
 Mallet, John, 89.  
 March, Oliver, 35.  
 Mauleby, D. L., 72.  
 McCarthy, John, 17.  
 McClernand, General, 51, 57.  
 McClune, James, 46.  
 McGurdy, Alexander, 17.  
 McJunkin, Samuel, 17.  
 McLean Asylum, 24.  
 McLearn, Annie, 68.  
 McLearn, Elizabeth, 68.  
 McLearn, John J., 68.  
 McLellan Hospital, 5.  
 McNall, George, 17.  
 McQuade, John, 17.  
 Mead, Sarah A., 32.  
 Menotomy River, 87.  
 Merritt, John S., 17.  
 Methodist Church, 31.  
 Milk Row School to 1849, 25-41.  
 Milk Street Primary, 26.  
 Mills, Edwin, 17.  
 Miller, Colonel, 62.  
 Mitchell, Edward S., 46.  
 Mitchell, Luther, 65.  
 Mitchell, Luther, 2nd, 46.  
 Mitchell, Mary Ann, 46.  
 Mitchell, Mary L., 46.  
 Mitchell, Nathaniel, 44, 46, 69.  
 Monongahela, Flagship, 60.  
 Moore, Governor, 57.  
 Moran, James, 9, 17.  
 Morse, Rev. Abner, 87.  
 Morton, Rev. Charles, 79, 80.  
 Moulton, Ellen, 24.  
 Moulton, William, 17, 19.  
 Mount Hermon Lodge, Medford, 72.  
 Mousal, John, 80.  
 Mt. Auburn, 33.  
 Mudge, Ezra, 73.  
 Munroe, Edwin, 34.  
 Munroe, Edwin, Jr., 74.  
 Munroe, James, 47.  
 Myers, George, 17.  
 Mystic River, 28.  
 National Fast, 1.  
 Neck of Land, 63.  
 Necrology, Report of Committee on, 21-24, 71, 72.  
 Nelson, Captain George S., 4.  
 Newell, James H., 18.  
 New England Relief Association, 12.  
 New Iberia, 56.  
 New Orleans, 52, 59.  
 New Orleans, Opelousas, and Great Western Railway, 52.  
 Newton, Mass., 66.  
 Newton Theological School, 31.  
 New York, 5, 9, 12.  
 Ninth Corps, 1.  
 999th Artillery Association, Charles-town, 23.  
 Nineteenth Army Corps Staff of Engineers, 61.  
 Nineteenth Pennsylvania, 6.  
 Norris, John, 48.  
 Norris, Priscilla, 48.  
 Northey, George A., 18.  
 Nottoway River, 6, 7.  
 "North Star," The, 51.  
 North Street, Boston, 73.  
 Norwalk, Conn., 69.  
 Nowell-Broughton-Gardner Farm, 90.





- Nowell, Increase, 88.
- Oburn, Mass., 89.
- Odiorne, William, 18.
- Old Cambridge Cemetery, 86.
- Old Cemetery Inscriptions, 42-48, 65-71.
- Old Powder House, 25, 89.
- Old Powder House, Records Relating to the, 62-65.
- Oliver, Francis J., 18.
- Oliver, Mr., 62.
- Oliver, Judson W., 8, 18.
- One Hundred and Fourth New York, 1, 6.
- O'Neil, Henry, 18.
- Opelousas, La., 56.
- Orcutt, Levi, Jr., 48.
- Order of the Eastern Star, 22.
- Orient Council of Massachusetts, 72.
- O'Sullivan, John, 18.
- Paige,——, 28.
- Paine, Brigadier-General Charles J., 60.
- Paine, Jeremiah T., 18.
- Parker, James, 20.
- Parker, Leonard Moody, 29, 35.
- Parker, Sarah Rebecca, 29.
- Parkhurst, Melville C., 18.
- Parkhurst, Lieutenant Melville C., 10.
- Palmer, William D., 18.
- Passaic, N. J., 15.
- Partridge, Captain, 64.
- Patten, Nathaniel, Senor, 89.
- Penhallow,——, 79.
- Pennock, Anna Louisa, 24.
- Pennock, Ellen M., 24.
- Pennock, Nathan Loveman, 21, 24.
- Pennock, Peter, 24.
- Pennock, Phebe (Fellows), 24.
- Pennock, Salmon Cotton, 24.
- Perry, Gideon W., 18.
- Peru, Ill., 13.
- Petersburg, 2, 7, 11.
- Philadelphia, 5, 12.
- Phipps, David, 81, 82, 84.
- Phipps, Mrs., 31.
- Pierce, Adaline, 48.
- Pierce, Eva Adaline, 48.
- Pierce, Joel, 36.
- Pierce, Josiah, 48.
- Pierson, Captain C. L., 3.
- Pinkham, Horace W., 18.
- Pitts, James, 84.
- Pittsburg Landing, 51.
- Plains Store, 58.
- "Pleasant Memories of Foreign Travel," 38.
- Pollard, Asa, 22.
- Poole, Lilla E., 24.
- Poor, John R., 74, 75, 76.
- Poplar Spring Church, 6.
- Port Hudson, 49-61.
- Pound Lot, Winter Hill Road, 29.
- Powers, Robert, 18.
- "Precious Stones in Nature, Art, and Literature," 38.
- Prentice, Henry, 90.
- Prentice, Thomas, 89.
- Prentice, Rev. Thomas, 89, 90.
- Primary No. 20, 26.
- Prospect Hill, 74.
- Prospect Hill District, 35.
- Prospect Hill Primary, 36, 40.
- Prospect Hill School, 23, 35.
- Putnam Grammar School, Cambridge, 38.
- Radcliffe College, 86.
- Randolph, Vt., 24.
- Rand, Hannah, 45.
- Rand, Joshua, 82.
- Rand, Samuel, 82.
- Rand, Samuel, 82.
- Rand, Thomas, 44, 45.
- Rand, Widow Anna, 45.
- Rapidan River, 4.
- Rappahannock, 11.
- Read, Captain, 64.
- Readville, 12.
- Record Commissioners of Boston, Report of, 27.
- Red River, 53, 57, 58.
- Reed, Daniel, 90.
- Remington, Charlotte, 28.
- Richmond, Va., 2, 11, 60.
- Riley, Colonel, 56.
- Roberts, John S., 4, 18.
- Robinson, Mrs. Albert C., 22.
- Robinson, Major-General John C., 2, 9.
- Rollins, Sumner P., 18.
- Royal Arcanum, 72.
- Royal, Mr., 62.
- Runey, John, 32.
- Russell, Daniel, 27, 28.
- Russell District, 35, 36.
- Russell, James, 63.
- Russell, Jason, 89.
- Russell, Levi, 37.
- Russell, Martha (Tufts), 29.
- Russell, Mr., 62.
- Russell, Philemon R., 29.
- Russell, Walter, 89.
- Rymes, Christopher E., 76.
- "Sachem," The, 60.
- Sagamore John, 88.
- Salisbury, N. C., 4, 12, 15.
- Sanborn, Adaline L., 39, 40, 41.
- Sanborn, David A., 37, 40.
- Sanborn, Hannah Adams (Stone), 40.
- Sargent, Aaron, 73, 82, 85.
- Sawyer, Charles W., 21, 22.
- Sawyer, Edward K., 23.
- School Holidays, List of, 53.
- Second Baptist Church of Cambridge, 39.
- Shaw, Henry, 19.
- Shaw, John B., 19.
- Shed, Samuel, 42.
- Shepard, Isaac F., 74.
- Sheridan, Major-General, 10.
- Sherman, Mr., 31.
- Sherman, John N., 32, 33, 35.
- Sherman, General T. W., 57, 59, 60.
- Shirley, Governor, 62.
- Shirley, Mass., 29.
- Shirley, W., 63, 65.
- Simsport, 58.
- "Six Mile House," 2.
- Skehan, John, 19.
- Skelton, Samuel, 83, 84.
- Sleeper, Jacob, 73, 74, 75.
- Smith, Addison, 19.
- "Society," The, 78.
- Society of Cincinnati, 23.
- Soley Lodge, 72.
- Soley, John, 78.
- Soldiers' Retreat, 5.
- Somerville Avenue, 25.
- "Somerville Cemetery," 42.

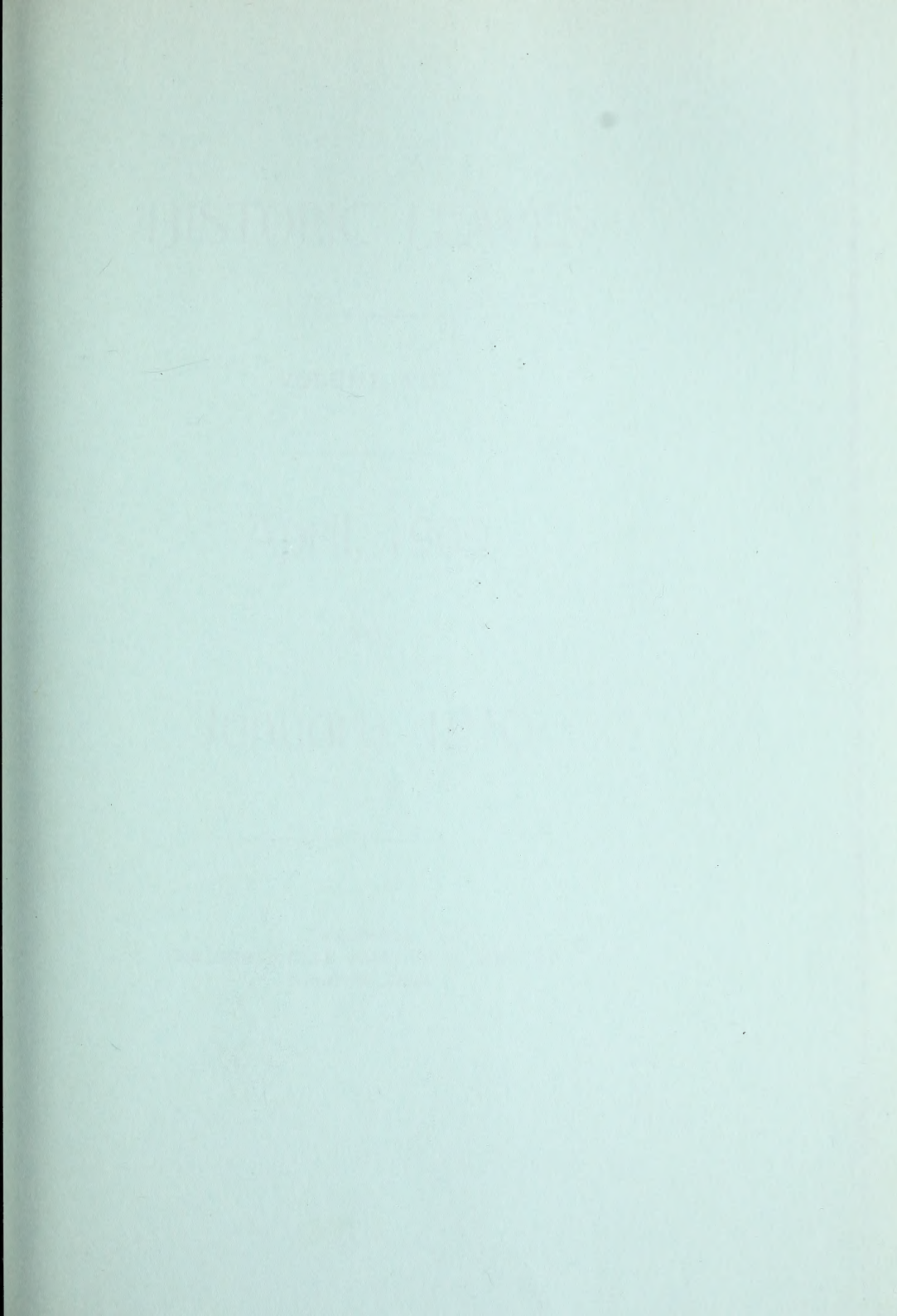




- Somerville Historical Society, 21, 22, 72.  
 "Somerville Improvement Society," 42.  
 Somerville, Mass., 4, 9.  
 South Berwick, 31.  
 South Carolina, 31.  
 South Side Railroad, 10.  
 Sparhawk, Samuel, 89.  
 Spottsylvania, 2, 14.  
 Sprague, Mary, 78.  
 Sprague, Richard, 78.  
 Springfield, Mass., 16.  
 Squa Sachem, 88.  
 Stanton, Edwin M., 9.  
 State Normal School, First, 32.  
 Stedman, John, 88.  
 Stetson, Rev. Caleb, 32.  
 Stetson, William, 78.  
 Stevens, Leslie, 19.  
 Stevens, Rachel Y., 35.  
 Stickney, Hiram C., 19.  
 Stickney, Ira, 30.  
 Stone, John, 42.  
 Story, Sarah, 68.  
 Story, Sarah L. A., 68.  
 Story, Solomon, 68.  
 Strafford, Vt., 24.  
 "Struggles of the Nations," 38.  
 Zucker Brook, 87.  
 Sussex Court House, 6, 7.  
 Sweetser, John, 32.  
 Swett, Joseph, 70.  
 Tailor, John, 43.  
 Tailor, Oliver, 43.  
 Tapley, John, 43.  
 Taunton, Mass., 9.  
 Taylor, General Richard, 52, 54.  
 Taylor, Zachary, 52.  
 Teasdale, George, 67.  
 Teasdale, Mary, 67.  
 Teasdale, William H., 67.  
 Ten Hills Farm, 78.  
 Thirty-ninth Massachusetts, 6, 8, 9, 10.  
 Thomas, Edward, 80.  
 Thomas, Private, 3.  
 Thomas, William H., 19.  
 Thompson, C., 33.  
 Thompson, Frank W., 4, 19.  
 Thorpe, Catharine, 47.  
 Thorpe, Edwin H., 47.  
 Thorpe, Harriet S., 47.  
 Thorpe, Ira, 47.  
 Thorpe, Mr., 74.  
 Torrey, Mary P., 46.  
 Torrey, Melzar, 83, 84.  
 Towne, Orr N., 74.  
 Training Field Grammar School, 22.  
 Tremlett, Colonel Henry M., 12.  
 Tremlett, Lieutenant-Colonel, 6, 9.  
 Trowbridge, Edmund, 82.  
 Trull, Ezra, 22.  
 True, William, 73.  
 Tufts, Albert, 48, 65.  
 Tufts, Barnard, 83.  
 Tufts, Benjamin, 41.  
 Tufts, Bowen Adams, 32.  
 Tufts, Charlotte C., 45.  
 Tufts, Captain Francis, 33.  
 Tufts, George F., 46.  
 Tufts, Isaac, 28.  
 Tufts, John, 33, 43, 73.  
 Tufts, Joseph, 82, 85.  
 Tufts, Lydia N., 45.  
 Tufts, Martha, 33.  
 Tufts, Samuel, 42, 43.  
 Tufts, Sarah Ann, 65.  
 Tufts, Sarah Mead, 32.  
 Tufts, Susan, 45.  
 Tufts, Susan W., 45.  
 Tufts, Thomas, 32.  
 Tufts, Timothy, 30, 31, 32, 42, 43, 45.  
 Tufts, Timothy W., 45.  
 Turkey Hill, 88, 90.  
 Turner, Rev. Edward, 28.  
 Twombly, James, 36.  
 Tyler, Elizabeth, 24.  
 Underwood, James, 36.  
 Underwood, Mrs., 35.  
 Union Square, 35.  
 Upper Winter Hill Primary, 36.  
 Utica, Transport, 12.  
 Van de Sande, George, 19.  
 Vermillionville, 56.  
 Veteran Fireman's Association, Somerville, 22.  
 Veteran Reserve Corps, 12, 14.  
 Vicksburg, 53, 58, 61.  
 Virginia, 49.  
 Vinal, Anna P., 72.  
 Vinal, Quincy A., 32.  
 Vinal, Robert A., 32, 75.  
 "Ward, Artemas," 34.  
 Ward, Eliza D., 30.  
 Warner, N. H., 21.  
 Warren, Isaac, 78.  
 Warren, Major-General, 9.  
 Washington, D. C., 11.  
 Washington, George, 23.  
 Waterford, Me., 34.  
 Waters, Elizabeth A., 72.  
 Watertown, Mass., 87.  
 Watson, William W., 69.  
 Watts, Samuel, 65.  
 Wayne, Charlotte, 30.  
 Wayne, Eliza, 30.  
 Weitzel, General, 53, 59, 60.  
 Weldon Railroad, 5, 6, 7, 14.  
 Welles, Mr., 62.  
 Wentworth, L. Roger, 77.  
 West Cambridge, 44.  
 Western House, 5.  
 Wheeler, Timothy, 77, 78.  
 Whipple, Ann E., 30, 34, 35.  
 White's Station, 11.  
 Whitmore, Joseph W., 19.  
 Whitnev, Moses, 43.  
 Wild, Charles D., 66.  
 Wild, George W., 66.  
 Wild, Rebecca, 66.  
 Willard, J., 65.  
 Willcutt, William C., 19.  
 Winchester, Mass., 88.  
 Winter Hill Road, 26.  
 Winter Hill Universalist Church, 72.  
 Winthrop, John, 78.  
 Woburn Academy, 21.  
 Woburn, Mass., 88.  
 Wonohaquaham Tribe of Red Men, 22.  
 Wood, Colonel, 82.  
 Woodbury, Harriette Reed, 37.  
 Wyeth, Nicholas, 88.  
 Wyman's History, 27.  
 Wyman, Nehemiah, 85.  
 "Yellow Tavern," 2, 3.  
 Young, Lucy Ann, 46.  
 Young, Moses, 46, 71.  
 Young's Plantation, 53.  
 Young, Sarah F., 46.











# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOLUME VIII.

---

April, 1909

TO

January, 1910

---

Published by  
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Somerville, Mass.







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1909

Vol. VIII

No. 1







## CONTENTS.

JOHN STONE AND HIS DESCENDANTS IN SOMERVILLE

*Sara A. S. Carpenter*

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON NECROLOGY

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

22 LAUREL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, *in advance.*

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 22 Laurel Street. Exchange list in charge of Mr. William B. Holmes,  
60 Heath Street, to whom all communications  
regarding exchanges should be addressed.

---

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* MRS. SARA A. S. CARPENTER

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





[Continued on p. 11]

...of Whit town and Cambridge, where they with  
abundance for two generations, as both were abundant

MARTIA (STONE) SANBORN

HANNAH ADAMS (STONE) SANBORN

LYDIA (STONE) VINAL





# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. VIII.

APRIL, 1909

No. I.

## JOHN STONE AND HIS DESCENDANTS IN SOMERVILLE.

[Continued from Vol. III., No. 4.]

By Sara A. S. Carpenter.

Before continuing with the narrative of "Gregory Stone and Some of His Descendants," which ended in Historic Leaves, Vol. III., No. 4, it may be well to add to the notes of the ancestry of Gregory Stone there given further information as to the line of his immediate predecessors, which has been published by the Stone Family Association within two years. A thorough search of the parish records of Great Bromley, Essex county, Eng., has led to the following conclusions on the part of the investigators: The Symond Stone whose will was probated February 10, 1510, had a son David, who was the great-grandfather of Gregory Stone; the intervening relatives were a Symond and a David. The parish of Ardley adjoined that of Great Bromley, and the Stones named in the Court Rolls of Ardley are without doubt of the same family as that from which Gregory and Simon Stone descended. The latter were emigrants to this country in 1635-'36, and left their mark on the early history of Watertown and Cambridge, where they settled. Their descendants for two generations, at least, were prominent in public affairs. With the increase of population and the advent of new families, any given name sinks into obscurity. So it was in the case of the Stone family for one or two generations, and then it emerged, not, indeed, to shine with such prominence as was the case with Gregory Stone, of whom all his descendants are proud, but at least to make some mark on the records of time which shall forever be an honor to the family.

It is intended in this paper to give as fully as it is possible, from the scanty records and traditions, some account of John





Stone and his descendants, the first of the name to live on Somerville soil. As Dr. Holmes recommends beginning with a man's grandfather if you wish to reform him, so I will begin with John Stone's grandfather, who was the next in line from Samuel, who was the grandson of Gregory, and with whom the first paper, above referred to, closed.

Jonathan Stone, the son of Samuel Stone, was born in Concord February 8, 1687. He married Cheree Adams, of Concord, November 17, 1712. Cheree Adams was the daughter of Margaret Eames, the little girl who was kidnapped by the Indians, carried to Canada, but fortunately rescued. Very little information about this member of the Stone family outside of the probate papers can be found, beyond the mention of the baptisms of his children in the church records of Lexington, and the fact that he "owned the covenant," a form of joining the church, necessary in the case of the baptism of children, and voluntarily performed by the parents on that occasion.

Some time previous to 1727 he moved to Watertown, with his wife and family of five children. In 1727 or 1728 Chary Stone, with several others, was received into "full communion" with the First Church of Christ in Watertown by the pastor, Rev. Seth Storer. At Watertown two more children were born, as the parish record of births, deaths, and marriages shows. Immediately following these two entries, all three having apparently been set down at the same time, is the record of the death of Jonathan, scarcely a month after the birth of the youngest child. He was buried in the old cemetery at Watertown, and his gravestone gives his age as forty years. The probate papers are of great interest, as they are so full in the details. The bounds of the homestead lot, estimated at 100 acres, it would seem, might be traced by one who had access to old maps. One of the bounds is given as bordering on land belonging to Rev. Mr. Storer. In addition, there was pasture land in Waltham, twenty-one acres, right of land in Townsend, 300 acres, also in Concord Bridge, and "the little orchard near Ebenr Chenny's," one and three-fourths acres.





The inventory contains even more than the usual vagaries in spelling. It itemizes a light Coullered Broad Cloth Coat, a Dark Collered Coat, a Jaccott, and another Jacott; pair of Spatter Cfhes, a Bedsted with Cord and Blue Curtains, a negro boy, utensils for house-hold use, and for husbandry. The whole is valued at between three and four thousand pounds, old tenor. To the widow was set off a third part of the dwelling, in the southerly end of the house, with certain parts of the barn, "with privilege of the floorway for carting and thrashing," also "a third part of the cellar, with privilege of passing and repassing through the ketchin to sd Cellar, to fetch wood and water as she shall have occasion." As Jonathan Stone died in 1729, and his widow married Thomas Wellington, of Cambridge, February 1, 1735, and the estate was not settled until 1746, on the coming of age of the oldest son, it is difficult to see what use she could have had for these privileges.

In September, 1739, the church of the second precinct of Cambridge, that is, Menotomy, now Arlington, was organized; and letters of dismissal from other churches were received, among them that of Thomas and Chary Wellington. Mr. Wellington was a member of the prudential committee of the second precinct in 1737, so it would seem that the couple moved there soon after their marriage. Mr. Wellington died in 1759, and in 1763 his widow married Captain James Lane, of Bedford. Her gravestone is in the Bedford Cemetery.

When the oldest son came of age (1746), as before stated, Chary Wellington, who had been guardian of the children and administrator of the estate, rendered her account. Two-thirds of the remaining part of the house and land in Watertown, and all the wood and timber standing on the pasture in Waltham was set off to the oldest son, Jonathan. All the right of land in Townsend was allotted to the other two sons. What the four daughters received does not appear. That all the children signed a paper declaring themselves contented with the doings of the commissioners goes to show that they had agreed to the partition. Three of them were married then, and their hus-





The inventory contains even more than the usual vagaries in spelling. It itemizes a light Coullered Broad Cloth Coat, a Dark Collered Coat, a Jaccott, and another Jacott; pair of Spatter Cfhes, a Bedsted with Cord and Blue Curtains, a negro boy, utensils for house-hold use, and for husbandry. The whole is valued at between three and four thousand pounds, old tenor. To the widow was set off a third part of the dwelling, in the southerly end of the house, with certain parts of the barn, "with privilege of the floorway for carting and thrashing," also "a third part of the cellar, with privilege of passing and repassing through the ketchin to sd Cellar, to fetch wood and water as she shall have occasion." As Jonathan Stone died in 1729, and his widow married Thomas Wellington, of Cambridge, February 1, 1735, and the estate was not settled until 1746, on the coming of age of the oldest son, it is difficult to see what use she could have had for these privileges.

In September, 1739, the church of the second precinct of Cambridge, that is, Menotomy, now Arlington, was organized; and letters of dismissal from other churches were received, among them that of Thomas and Chary Wellington. Mr. Wellington was a member of the prudential committee of the second precinct in 1737, so it would seem that the couple moved there soon after their marriage. Mr. Wellington died in 1759, and in 1763 his widow married Captain James Lane, of Bedford. Her gravestone is in the Bedford Cemetery.

When the oldest son came of age (1746), as before stated, Chary Wellington, who had been guardian of the children and administrator of the estate, rendered her account. Two-thirds of the remaining part of the house and land in Watertown, and all the wood and timber standing on the pasture in Waltham was set off to the oldest son, Jonathan. All the right of land in Townsend was allotted to the other two sons. What the four daughters received does not appear. That all the children signed a paper declaring themselves contented with the doings of the commissioners goes to show that they had agreed to the partition. Three of them were married then, and their hus-





bands were the said commissioners; so it would seem to have been wholly a family affair.

The settlement of the estate involved a three-days' trip to Townsend on horseback, and the expense is duly charged in the account of the administrator.

The next year Jonathan married Martha Cutler, or Cutter, of West Cambridge, May 21, 1747. Martha Cutter was a descendant, in the fourth generation, from Richard Cutter, a youth who came from England in the ship *Defence* at the same time as Gregory Stone. The couple probably lived in Watertown in the homestead, and possibly in Medford for some years, as Wyman mentions his name as of Medford. They were admitted from the church in Watertown to that in Shrewsbury in 1769, though they may have lived in Shrewsbury for some years previously. He died in Shrewsbury October 3, 1805, in his eighty-first year, and his widow passed away two years later. They left a family of twelve children. The oldest, Jonathan, was killed during the retreat out of New York, 1776. Two others, Seth and John, lived in Charlestown, and their descendants used to visit cousins in Shrewsbury.

The items of the inventory, filed April 1, 1806, are valued in dollars and cents. Here, again, the spelling of the names of articles is too amusing to be passed by. A walking caine is valued at \$.25; six pair pillow Casefs at \$2.05; 1 Caise Drawers, \$1.00; 8 Citching Chiers at \$1.33. All the effects, especially articles of wearing apparel, are valued at a very low figure.

Wyman, in his "Charlestown Estates," in the list of Stones gives three names of persons who may be claimed by members of the present family as relatives. The first name mentioned is that of Samuel Stone, son of Jonathan and Chary Adams Stone, and brother of the Jonathan Stone whose record has just been reviewed. He came from Watertown to this place in 1750, and afterward moved to Ashby.

Seth and John Stone, sons of Jonathan Stone of Watertown, next claim our attention. They were both born in Shrewsbury, although one authority mentions Menotomy, the





first, December 26, 1752, the second, March 7, 1755. Both served for a short time in the Revolutionary Army, in different companies.

Seth Stone was a corporal in Captain Benjamin Lock's Company, Lieutenant-Colonel William Bond's (late Thomas Gardner's) Thirty-seventh Regiment. His age is given as twenty-three years, his stature as five feet, ten inches. The company return is dated Camp Prospect Hill, October 6, 1775. There is company receipt for wages for October, 1775, dated Prospect Hill, and an order for money in lieu of bounty coat dated Prospect Hill, December 22, 1775.

John Stone, of Cambridge, a private in Captain Benjamin Edgell's Company, Colonel John Jacob's Regiment, enlisted July 6, 1778; service, five months, twenty-seven days, including travel home (sixty miles); enlistment to expire January 1, 1779. His name is also mentioned on the muster rolls of the same company and regiment dated at Freetown, September 13 and October 18, 1778.

In 1782 Seth Stone bought ten acres of land of Isaac Mallett, next the Powder House; two years later this land was deeded to Peter Tufts. The births of three children of Seth and Mary Stone are recorded in Medford, where they owned a pew in the church; the pew was sold by the widow in 1796. The claim that Seth Stone at any time resided in Somerville, then a part of Charlestown, is based on land transactions in which he is mentioned as of Charlestown in the years 1782 and 1785; previously he was of Cambridge and Medford; in some of the deeds he is designated as "gentleman."

Of the three children of Seth and Mary Stone, one daughter, Susanna, married and lived in Somerville. She was born May 10, 1783; she married April 27, 1807, Benjamin Tufts (son of John Tufts, son of Peter and Ann Adams Tufts). They lived for a time on Broadway, on the site now numbered 280. Later they lived in the old Hawkins house, which stood on Washington Street, near the railroad bridge, and there Benjamin Tufts died. His widow moved to the old Cutter house on the corner





of Broadway and Cross street. To support her family she became a tailoress. She lived there till her death in November, 1852.

Her daughter, Elizabeth Perry Tufts, one of seven children, was born February 20, 1818. She was one of the teachers of the first Sunday School in Somerville, and her daughter claims that she had as much to do with the starting of it as Miss Whitredge, whose name now bears all the honor. She was one of the first to join the church when it was organized under the title of the First Congregational Society in Somerville. She was married by its first pastor, Rev. John Sargent, to James M. Curn May 30, 1847. This couple had three daughters, all of whom have lived in Somerville in recent years. One of them still lives here.

John Stone was married April 13, 1780, to Mary Tufts, daughter of Nathaniel and Mary Pierce Tufts (son of Nathaniel, son of Captain Peter, son of Peter). One source of information says he and his wife joined the church at Menotomy August 27, 1780, that they were dismissed from that church to the First Church of Cambridge December 30, 1803. So it would seem that they lived in Menotomy for a time. According to Wyman, they came to Charlestown from Cambridge with their family in 1782. He bought at various times, in large or small lots, land on the southerly side of Prospect Hill. The combined area of these lots formed a tract which extended from Vinal Avenue to and including the Prospect Hill Schoolhouse lot, as it is still called; and from the line of the Thorpe land on Walnut Street, some 100 or more feet north of Boston Street, and for about half the length of Columbus Avenue, along the northerly bounds of the lots on that avenue, to Bow and Washington Streets. Later, through his wife, Mary, who inherited from her father, the area was extended to School Street, as far north as Summer Street.

The situation of the house he lived in when he first came to this locality is a matter of uncertainty. An early purchase (1783) was a lot of land above Columbus Avenue, where pos-





sibly there was a house. It was not until 1793 and 1795 that he bought land on Bow Street, where was located the "home lot" mentioned in the partition of his real estate after his death, bounded southerly by "Milk Row, so called," which at that time took the course now laid out as Bow Street. At a later date he possibly lived in the old house, formerly in Union Square, which was moved before Pythian Block was built. This house was moved to Medford Street, and perhaps to this day the front door bears the original knocker.

In the records of his land transactions there are three different words used to describe or designate his station or occupation. The first is "cooper," the second "husbandman," the third "yeoman." Possibly these indicate the different steps of his advancement and prosperity. Probably he took some part in the affairs of the town, especially those connected with his immediate neighborhood; if he did so, it is buried in the manuscript records of Charlestown. That he was looked up to in his own family is shown by the fact that all the children called him "Sir Stone." Whether or not this is a contraction of "grand-sire" is a conundrum we cannot now answer.

He was associated with Timothy Tufts, Nathaniel Hawkins, Samuel Kent, Samuel Shed, and others in the purchase from Samuel Tufts of a lot of land for a cemetery in 1804. This was the well-known rectangular lot on Somerville Avenue at the foot of School Street, on one corner of which stood the school known as the Milk Row School.

There is an old Bible containing "the records of Mr. John Stone and Mrs. Mary Ston's children and the time of their births." They were blessed with thirteen, two of whom died in infancy.

John Stone was born October 27, 1780.

Mary Stone was born November 14, 1781.

Betty Stone was born August 4, 1783.

Lucy Stone was born August 8, 1784.

Nathaniel Stone, born December 2, 1788.

Jonathan Stone, born June 7, 1790.





Daniel Stone, born November, 1792; deceased May 11, 1793.

Hannah Stone, born January 18, 1794.

Martha Stone, born November 9, 1795.

Lydia Stone, born September 10, 1797.

Daniel Stone, born April 19, 1800.

Lydia Stone, born January 26, 1802.

Thomas Jefferson Stone, born March, 1804.

The title and the first four names were written at one sitting apparently, probably with a quill pen. Additions have been made by a later hand, or hands, judging by the two different inks used to complete the record, which is nearly correct. The proper dates, or, more correctly speaking, the dates of baptism have been found in the records of the First Parish, Cambridge. Comparison of dates shows that the children were baptized in from four to fifteen days after birth. It may be further noted that Mary Stone was baptized "Polly Tufts," that Hannah was given Adams for a middle name, and John the name of Cutter. John Stone owned a pew in the First Parish Church, and in all probability attended church there. It seems safe to surmise that the children went to the Milk Row School, a description of which Mr. Hawes has given us in his papers on the schools of Charlestown.

Most of the children on their marriage settled, it might be said, within a stone's throw of the old homestead. One lived in East Cambridge for a time, and two or more in Boston.

John Cutter Stone, the oldest son, owned land on the southerly side of Union Square, as far down as Prospect Street. That he married and settled near is shown by the record of the baptism, "by her own desire," of his wife, Eliza Stone, on the presentation of a child, John Tufts, for baptism December 5, 1802; another child, David, was baptized in 1804.

Jonathan owned land below Prospect Street, bounded by Miller's River. He was a house-wright, according to Wyman. It is said that he met his death by drowning in Miller's River. He was a sleep-walker, and while being anxiously followed one





night was suddenly awakened by his brother's outcry when the latter found him up to his neck in the river. His father had just built a tomb in the old cemetery at Harvard Square, and the young man's body was the first to be put into it. An interesting item in the life of this unfortunate young man is that the record of his birth written in the book at Cambridge is in the handwriting of old Dr. Holmes, then the minister of the church, the father of Dr. Holmes, the humorist.

Three daughters made their homes near the family roof-tree. Betsy was the first of the daughters to leave the home nest. She married Benjamin Grover November 13, 1803. In 1804 there is recorded the renewal of the covenant for the baptism of children by this couple, and their residence is given as New Bridge. Later, in 1807, the baptism of another child is recorded, and they are put down as of Cambridgeport. It is evidently the same place under a new name, which still clings to it. The old custom of naming the children after the parents was followed in this case, Benjamin and Elizabeth. They moved to Concord, N. H., and the present generation knows them by name only, and nothing of their descendants.

A receipt in full for the share of John Stone's estate falling to the Grover children appears in the petition of his real estate in 1823, and is signed by an uncle, showing that Elizabeth died before her children came of age.

Mary, whose baptismal name was Polly Tufts, followed her sister Betsy in the matrimonial quickstep executed by this family with a wedding every year for four successive years. She married Philip Bonner, of Boston, in 1804. Their marriage only is recorded in the Cambridge Parish records, as they lived in Boston for a number of years, on Spear Place, off Pleasant Street. Mary Stone is put down as of Charlestown (Cambridge Parish). They sang in the choir of the Old South Church, and later at the Hollis Street Church. They came to Charlestown, and lived in a house which stood under the large elm tree in the Prospect Hill School yard. After a time it was moved a little further up the hill. Later a larger house was built still further





up the hill, and here Mary Bonner died, at the age of eighty-three. The old house was moved to the neighborhood of Wyatt's Field a few years ago. Mary Bonner had beautiful hair and dark eyes. At her death she had no gray hair. Her teeth were sound; it is said, all double.

There were nine children in this family, David, Mary, Emily, John, William, Eliza, George, and twins, Jonathan and George Washington. The three latter children died young, and Mary was burned to death at the age of thirteen. Emily married Augustus Hitchings, and they lived on Bonner Avenue. An only son of this couple was killed in a coasting accident at the foot of Bonner Avenue, coming in contact with the horse cars. Eliza married Thomas Goodhue. They lived for many years in the little house on the corner of Bonner Avenue, and for a few years, their last days, in a new house further up the hill. A daughter still lives with her family in the little house.

William Bonner married Mary Ann Noble, and with their family of four or five children lived for many years in Somerville; all have now died or moved away, and have no descendants.

David Bonner married Sarah Scoville. A daughter of this couple lives at the Home for the Aged, and her memory has been ready with events of the past for this story and for many others which have been presented here from time to time. She was a scholar in the Milk Row School; she worked in the Middlesex Bleachery in the days when nearly all the hands were native born. She was twice married, but has no children of her own to comfort her in her declining years. The three who came died as children, but she treasures the memory of their sweet voices, and speaks with pride of one of them who could hum with his father every tune the latter knew, at the age of eleven months. Of all the descendants of Mary Stone Bonner, this lady, who was her granddaughter, most resembles her in appearance.

In the year 1805 another sister, Lucy, left home. She was married by Rev. Dr. Morse on November 3 to David Bolles,





of Richmond, N. H. Of the five children of this couple, two died in infancy, and one, at least, lived in Somerville in after years. This one, Lucy Stone Bolles, was married to James Freeman Wood January 7, 1841, by Rev. William Hague. They lived in Boston on Federal Street for twenty years, then moved to Somerville, where Mr. Wood died October 10, 1864, at the age of fifty-four years. The widow lived on Bow Street for many years. The last years of her life were passed in the home of her son, James A. Wood, of Cambridge. Her daughter, Miss Sarah Bolles Wood, was for thirty years a clerk at the Registry of Deeds. She was of a sweet and retiring disposition, much interested in church work. James A. Wood married Caroline A. Blaisdell April 19, 1870. Two of their four children live with them at Cambridge.

Nathaniel Tufts Stone married May 25, 1817, Sarah Rand, daughter of Thomas Rand, who lived under the old elm tree on Somerville Avenue, near the foot of Central Street. They lived for a time in the old house which was moved before Pythian Block was built, before mentioned. Nathaniel died in 1822 of consumption. A child was born the following year, and named for his father. Of the three born previously, the eldest, Charles Henry, lived with an uncle and aunt in Cambridge, and was drowned in the Charles River at the age of fourteen. One died in infancy. A lady now in the nineties remembers the old house which she used to pass on her way to school, and she has a picture in her memory of Nathaniel Tufts Stone sitting in his hallway. It seemed to her that the house was not an old one, being painted, not weather-beaten. She tells this anecdote of Mr. Stone: that one day, in April, he had some business in Cambridge, or the port, and drove over in a sleigh, there being considerable snow on the ground. It was a very warm, spring-like day, and when he came out, after finishing his business, the snow had all melted away.

Martha Stone married Robert Sanborn, and they lived for many years on Bow Street. The house stood some little distance from the corner of Walnut Street. It had a flower garden





in front, with a grape arbor over the walk to the front door, little used, as it seemed to the writer, who was much more accustomed to going in at the side door, when sent on errands to the mistress of this house. A red barn adjoined the house, with its great doors always open, revealing a hay wagon and hay mow, and, most fascinating of all, a row of cows and oxen. They were always munching their cuds, with watchful eye turned on passers-by, particularly the one on the end next the street. Of the four children born to this couple, two were well known as proprietors of a grocery store in Union Square in the sixties, George A. and Albert L. Sanborn. A daughter, Martha Maria, married Richard H. Sturtevant. Another daughter, Mary Jane, died while attending the high school.

Hannah Adams Stone is said by her granddaughter to have taken care of her father in his last years, and of those of her younger brothers and sisters who were at home, after the death of their mother in 1816. Lydia, it is said, lived with her sister, Mary Bonner. There were two children of the next generation belonging to Lucy, who married Mr. Bolles, in the family, also. Hannah worked in Geddis' twine factory previous to her marriage to David A. Sanborn, a brother of Robert Sanborn, on September 30, 1821. He was a farmer, and also engaged in the manufacture of bricks.

The writer has a vivid mental picture of these two aunts, who were called by their given names, Aunt Hannah and Aunt Martha, in the family, and not by their surnames, as was the case with Aunt Bonner and Aunt Vinal. There was a great contrast between them, in disposition, as well as in physical appearance. Aunt Martha was tall, dark, and of a serious demeanor. Aunt Hannah was short, fleshy, blue-eyed, and cheery, in spite of a lameness which lasted from early married life to the end of her days. There was a great contrast between the brothers Sanborn, also, though not so pronounced. Robert was short and roly-poly, always jolly and joking, while his brother was a large, tall man, of a keen, though dry, wit. David Sanborn was interested in the formation of the First Univer-





salist Church, and at the first meeting held his granddaughter on his knee. This couple celebrated their golden wedding by a family dinner party; the only guest outside the family was Rev. Mr. Russ, of the First Universalist Church, who made an address.

Daniel Stone lived and died a bachelor. He was a very fine horseman, with an erect, military carriage. He was prominent in the Lancers. He was in the grain business with Robert Vinal for a number of years. He always wore a high silk hat. He was guardian for the Grover children on the death of his father, and received their share of the estate in trust.

Thomas Jefferson Stone married Mary Rice, and they lived in Boston. They had two sons. One died at Nahant of typhoid fever, the other went West and disappeared. Both these brothers, Daniel and Thomas, though promising in youth, had a dreary old age, but found homes with relatives or friends.

Lydia, the youngest daughter, who had lived and grown up in the home of her sister Mary, met there a young man who came to the house on business with Mr. Bonner,—Robert Vinal, of Scituate. They were married May 21, 1820, and their first home was in Boston. In 1824 they moved to Somerville and, according to one authority, built a large, square house on Bow Street, near the corner of what is now Warren Avenue. Another authority says the house was inherited by Mrs. Vinal, that it was new, and had never been occupied. It may have been built by John Stone just previous to his death. It was a handsome and notable place for many years. There was an air of refinement and gentility about it which made it very attractive. Mr. Vinal took a prominent part in the formation of the First Congregational Society in Somerville, and was well known as Deacon Vinal here. Mrs. Vinal was very charming and easy in company, entering a room with a graceful courtesy. She always had a pleasing and agreeable manner; this is the testimony of one who remembered her well. She was frequently sent for in case of sickness. There were eleven children in this family, and all arrived at maturity: Robert Aldersey, Lydia M., Mary Eliza-





beth, Quincy A., Lucy A., Martha A., Alfred E., Edward E., Margaret F., John W., Emmeline A.

John Stone died in 1819, and on the partition of his real estate a good slice fell to each married son or daughter. Mary, the oldest, had a piece running up the hill from Washington street, on which she had already located, the present Bonner Avenue perpetuating the name. Hannah had a piece next westerly, Nathaniel had the next strip, where Stone Avenue runs through now, Lydia Vinal next, to or somewhat beyond Warren avenue, Martha Sanborn next, up to Walnut street, and Lydia again west of Walnut Street. The lots of land were somewhat unequal in size and value, and the balance was made by means of money, which Lydia paid, she having a much larger share of land. Sanborn Avenue will carry down that name, and Vinal Avenue, Aldersey Street, and Quincy Street will recall members of the Vinal family.

Since so many men of two generations connected with this story had a part in it, perhaps a digression here may be pardoned, to refer to an institution which attained great prominence for a number of years in the early days of Somerville as a town. In 1838 the Charlestown authorities assigned a "tub" hand engine, Mystic No. 6, to duty in "Charlestown's big back yard." In August the selectmen appointed the foremen and engineers, and among them we find the names of David A. Sanborn, William Bonner, Daniel Stone, Robert Vinal, and Robert Sanborn. The salary of the firemen, all volunteers, was \$1.50 per annum, paid by abatement of the poll-tax. In 1840 Robert A. Vinal was clerk and treasurer. In 1849 a "Hanneman tub" was purchased by the town, and the department was organized with Nathan Tufts as its first chief engineer. He was followed by Abram Welch, Robert A. Vinal, and John Runey.

"A small bell was hung in the cupola of the engine house. For years, even after the Somerville company was organized, an alarm of fire could be rung only by means of this bell. For years, also, according to a law then in force, every man in town was required to hang two buckets, usually of leather and





painted, in his front hall, and when an alarm of fire was sounded it was his duty to seize those buckets, hurry to the fire, and range in line with others to assist in passing water from well or cistern to the men who worked the engine."

In 1846 the "boys' company," so called because composed of young men from sixteen to twenty years old, was organized. According to some of its members, David A. Sanborn was assistant foreman. Other members were Quincy A. Vinal, Robert A. Vinal, Albert L. Sanborn, and Daniel Sanborn.

In November, 1849, the town appropriated money for the purchase of a "good and sufficient fire engine." It was styled Somerville, Number 1. The selectmen appointed a board of fire engineers, and more than fifty men at once enrolled in the company. Soon it was one of the leading and most popular organizations in the town, and as such was closely identified with the social life here. There was a patriotic spirit in it, too, for the first flagstaff in town was put up by the firemen in 1853, in Union Square. They also contributed liberally toward the first building erected by the Methodists, on Webster Avenue. In 1865 the hose company was organized, and David A. Sanborn and Jairus Mann were sent by the town to New York to select a hand hose carriage.

Proceeding now to the second generation from John Stone, we see a group of cousins, young men and maidens, who met in the social life of the time. Some had spent their schooldays at the old Milk Row School; the younger ones may have attended a school at Central Square. A few had been given further privileges in the educational line. One of the sports which many, if not most, of the young men of the time enjoyed was gunning. The marshes of Chelsea were convenient and favorite places for this pastime; possibly Walnut Hill, where Tufts College is now, also. When guns got out of order it fell to the mechanic of the crowd, familiarly called "Jonty," to repair the same. Balls, with dancing often prolonged till daylight, were another recreation. The young women had their sewing circle, and doubtless developed ability in buying cloth and cutting and making garments.





One of the "young men" has furnished reminiscences which may be of interest. When asked in regard to the woods round about Somerville, he said that "the wood had all been cut off in Revolutionary times. There was no forest round here; the nearest approach to it was on Prospect Street, where the gas-holder stands, just this side of Cambridge Street. We used to cut birches for stable brooms. Where the Bell Schoolhouse is was a pasture; a little lane ran up to it just above the Methodist Church. We let down a pair of bars, and ran across to the corner of the Johnson land. There were plenty of rose bushes and wild gooseberries.

"We played with powder some, and came pretty near having an accident. Powder was for sale, all the stores were licensed, 'licensed to keep and sell gun-powder.' The Orcutt boys came up with their box of powder one day. They were making fusees, and there was an explosion. The boys scattered. Horace and George Runey came over very often. One Fourth of July they came and wanted us to go to Boston to see the fireworks. Father did not want us to go, and set us to hoeing a little field of cabbages that morning. So when they appeared I was as busy as I could be, and could not go. We could hear the Orcutt boys firing a salute. We sent the Runey boys up there, telling them we would come when we were ready. So they started off as merrily as could be, but it was not an hour before a crowd of people came into the yard bringing George Runey. Some one had maliciously put a charge of shot in the cannon, and one had penetrated George's eye. One of the Orcutt boys was hurt, and George Runey lost his eye.

"The Orcutt boys used to go gunning in the evening for muskrats on the creek. There was a little power mill on the creek, and it was a great place for eels; we often caught a barrellful in one night. We used to get bullfrogs in the brook that ran through from Walnut Street to Washington Street. We depended on the brook in dry times.

"I went to school in Central Square. They had beautiful penmanship then. Mr. Pierce, Miss Wheeler, and Miss Dodge





were the teachers. We boys were regularly engaged to sweep out the schoolhouse. It was made very easy, two or three boys one week, and so on.

"The best playground round the Square was a ten-acre lot near the Hawkins House. A building used to stand on it. Later Uncle Robert hauled one home from near there, with twenty-four yoke of oxen."

Robert Aldersey Vinal, son of Robert and Lydia (Stone) Vinal, born in Boston March 16, 1821, entered the grain business with his father; then formed a partnership with Edwin Munroe, and later with his brother, Quincy A. He was interested in the development of the town, and served as selectman, town treasurer, and member of the water board. He, with his brother Quincy, was a charter member of the Boston Corn Exchange, now the Boston Chamber of Commerce. He was active in the First Congregational Society in Somerville, was its treasurer for a number of years, and superintendent of the Sunday School. He married Almira L. Pierce, of Revere, and after living a few years in that town, built a house on Walnut Street in Somerville in 1849. He was of a particularly social nature, always genial, decided in opinions, active and pushing when a new enterprise in which he was interested was at the front. Three of his six children now occupy the home on Walnut Street.

Quincy Adams Vinal was born in Charlestown September 23, 1826, in the vicinity of Union Square. After a successful career in the grain business with his father and brother, and in the grain commission business, he filled many positions of trust in public and private life. He was a trustee of the estate of Charles Tufts, who founded Tufts College, an assessor, representative in the legislature, a member of the common council, and on the board of aldermen. He was a member of the committee to lay out Broadway Park, and spent much time in supervising the work. He was interested in the founding of the Public Library; was the first president of the Somerville National Bank, and a director and president of the Cambridge Gas





Company. He was active in the First Congregational Society of Somerville, and was for many years a deacon. He married Augusta L. Pierce, of Revere, and they lived to celebrate their golden wedding anniversary.

A sister and two brothers also lived in Somerville, Alfred E., John W., and Lydia, who married John Runey.

David A. Sanborn, son of David A. and Hannah Adams (Stone) Sanborn, was born April 21, 1828, the youngest of four children, but the only one who continued to live in Somerville after arriving at maturity. He became a contractor and builder, and was a man of enterprise and public spirit, taking his share in offices of responsibility and trust. He was on the board of assessors, an overseer of the poor, chief engineer of the fire department for seven years, president of the Veteran Firemen's Association, and treasurer of the Firemen's Relief Fund. He was an active member of the First Universalist Church. He married Ann Sarah Magoun, and they rounded out fifty years of married life at their home on Prospect Street. Two children survive their parents.

Nathaniel Tufts Stone, son of Nathaniel Tufts and Sarah (Rand) Stone, was born January 19, 1823, and lived all his life, except the first three years, on the Rand homestead, at the foot of Central Street. He was one of the young men who helped to set the bonfire on Spring Hill, to celebrate the event of the setting off of Somerville from Charlestown. In the first Somerville directory he was called "yeoman." He carried on farming, and had an innate love for the life, and for the livestock incidental to the business. He planted an orchard, and some of the trees are still bearing fruit on the Unitarian Parsonage grounds. He was one of the last to drive a load of native hay, made on his own land, through the streets of Somerville, for his own use. Much of his hay, that grown on meadow ground, was very long, and went to the American Tube Works for use in some part of their manufacturing. He married Evelina Cutter, of West Cambridge.

Jonathan Stone, son of Nathaniel Tufts and Sarah (Rand)





Stone, was born December 28, 1819, in the old house at Union Square, twice before referred to in this paper. After school-days, he worked for a time in the Middlesex Bleachery, making boxes; then went to Cambridgeport to learn the carriage-making trade of Mr. Davenport, afterward one of the firm of Davenport & Bridges. Here, or when he worked for Edmund Chapman, of Cambridge, he became acquainted with Silas Holland, for whom Holland Street was named, and with Frank Chapman, for whom he afterwards worked. The young men kept up a friendly rivalry at their work, trying to see who would be the first to show a carriage body put together in the rough after a day of brisk work. In 1850 he established a home, and started business for himself at Union Square, making chaise bodies and carriage and wagon bows, and also buggy bodies for Thomas Goddard. When the Somerville Light Infantry was formed he was chosen armorer. Of a retiring disposition, he took little part in public affairs, being content with turning out first-class work in his chosen vocation. The day's work was livened by the whistling of merry tunes. He had a warbling whistle which rivalled the bobolink's note. He was a constant attendant at the meetings of the First Congregational Society in Somerville. He was a trustee of the Somerville Savings Bank from the beginning until his death, in 1896. He married Emma M. Cutter, of West Cambridge. After living for twenty years at Union Square, he moved to Central Street, and built on the spot occupied by his former home a brick building which bears the family name.





## REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON NECROLOGY.

To the Somerville Historical Society: The Committee on Necrology hereby submits its report for 1908-'09. The members who have died during the year are Charles D. Elliot, Quincy E. Dickerman, Lemuel H. Snow, Mrs. John F. Ayer, and Charles Williams, Jr. The detailed report follows.

Yours respectfully,

D. L. MAULSBY,

AARON SARGENT,

ELIZABETH A. WATERS.

Our esteemed citizen, Charles Williams, Jr., passed away April 14, 1908. He was born in Chelmsford, Mass., March 2, 1830, but very early in his life his parents took up their residence in Claremont, N. H., where most of his school days were spent, and where his father was prominent in town affairs, being sent to the legislature, and interested in all matters pertaining to the betterment of the town. He also made great efforts for the success of the Universalist Church, of which he was a staunch member.

The family, however, removed to Somerville in 1846, and occupied the house then standing on the present site of the Pope School on Washington Street. The house was removed later to Boston Street, and is still occupied by members of one of our old families. Mr. Williams, Sr., removed to the house which he built on Cross Street, and members of the family are still residing there. Charles Williams, Sr., was born in Milton, Mass. His wife, Rebecca Frost, was born in Charlestown, Mass.

It will be seen that Charles Williams, Jr., was sixteen years old when the family became permanent residents of this city, and he had the educational advantages only which the town of Claremont, N. H., and this city afforded at that time. But he very early showed his preferences and turn of mind for a mechanical career, especially in the department of electricity, which





led him later into the manufacture of telegraph and telephone instruments, and which by patient and untiring efforts crowned his life with success. For it was in his office and factory that Professor Bell, the famous telephone inventor, was able to express and explain his ideas, and finally to perfect, with the aid of Mr. Williams' technical knowledge of instruments, that machine, the telephone, which has revolutionized the whole business and social departments of the world by the quick transmission of speech. Mr. Williams had the distinguished reputation of having manufactured every telephone instrument in the world until 1885. In the year of his retirement from active participation in business, the manufacture of telephones was transferred to the Western Electric Company of Chicago, where his interests continued to within a year of his death.

Mr. Williams married in 1864 Caroline Adelaide Cole, third daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Erastus E. Cole, residents of this city from the year 1846. Mr. Williams followed in the faith of his father, in the Cross Street Universalist Church. His father, associated with Edwin Munroe, Erastus E. Cole, and others, was one of the founders and builders of the First Church, and when it was completed Mr. Williams, Sr., became the first superintendent of the Sunday School, remaining its head for many years. Upon his retirement, he was succeeded as superintendent by his son, Charles Williams, Jr. Mr. Williams always retained his interest in the church, and was willing to contribute to its support. He left a widow and two children. The children of the union were: Lester Holmes Williams, now resident of Medford; Herbert Farmer Coe Williams, who died in 1879 at five years of age; and Mrs. Mary Williams Kidder, a resident of Winchester.

Mr. Williams was of very quiet disposition, extremely fond of books and reading, and with an ambition for traveling the wide world over, in which he took great pleasure, having visited all places of interest in his own country, and a number in foreign lands, until about ten years ago, when, overtaken by disease, he rested in his beautiful home, happy in the society of his books,





and in his deep affection for wife, children, and all members of his family.

---

(Prepared by Miss Elizabeth L. Waters.)

Vashti Eunice Ayer was born in Norwich, Conn., June 29, 1845, daughter of Nahum R. Hapgood, of Shrewsbury, and Emily (Chase) Hapgood, of Sutton. She was educated in the public schools of Worcester, and graduated from the Worcester High School in 1864. She taught in the schools of Worcester, Newton, and Somerville (in Somerville at the Prescott School). She was assistant to the superintendent of schools of Somerville from 1893 to 1897. She was married to John F. Ayer October 14, 1897. From 1898 to 1904 she served the Somerville Historical Society as corresponding secretary. She died at Wakefield April 13, 1908.

Gordon A. Southworth, superintendent of schools, said of her:—

“Possessed of rich natural endowments, refined and cultivated in her tastes, a lover of the best in literature, nature, and art, cheerful, kind, generous, and loving, Mrs. Ayer impressed all who knew her with the strength and beauty of her character. For many years unusual burdens fell to her lot, which she bore with exemplary patience and fortitude. Long a teacher in Worcester, Somerville, and Newton, she left the impress of her character upon the minds and hearts of hundreds, by whom she will be long remembered.

“Called to a position of responsibility in the administrative department of the Somerville public schools, she displayed executive and business ability of a high order, winning by her geniality and tact the confidence and regard of all.”

---

Lemuel Harlow Snow was born in Eastham July 5, 1823, and died May 6, 1908, in Somerville. He had come to Somerville sixty years before with his father, who was a well-known carpenter in the town. Mr. Snow was for many years a street car conductor on the old Cambridge Street Railway.





Before Somerville became a city, he was for a few years a patrolman, and from 1875 to 1878 performed similar duties after the incorporation of the city. From 1878 to 1886 he was engaged in carpentry with a brother. In the latter year he was chosen truant officer, and fulfilled these duties faithfully and generously until his death. During the twenty-two years of his service he proved himself very efficient. His interest in the delinquent child was more than official, and tended to the correction and improvement of boys and girls who might otherwise have become criminals. Besides his membership in the Somerville Historical Society, Mr. Snow belonged to John Abbot Lodge, A. F. and A. M., Oasis Lodge, I. O. O. F., and Wono-haquaham Tribe of Red Men. He was also a member of the Massachusetts Truant Officers' Association. He left a widow.

(Acknowledgments to the Somerville Journal.)

---

Quincy E. Dickerman was born in Stoughton July 15, 1828. He was educated in the Stoughton schools and the Bridgewater Normal School. Before graduation he had charge of a winter school in the town of Dartmouth. Later he taught at Chilmark on Martha's Vineyard, at Fairhaven, and at Sharon. Then he went to Phillips Andover Academy to fit for college. But he spent only a short time there, for the school committee of Stoughton called him to teach in his home town. Here he continued at work until he came to Boston in 1856. Besides his duties as principal of the grammar school, he was elected a member of the school board of Stoughton, and later was secretary, and then chairman of the school committee. In December, 1856, Mr. Dickerman was appointed "usher" in the Mayhew School, Boston, of which Samuel Swan was then master. Four years later the title "usher" was changed to sub-master, and in this position Mr. Dickerman continued until the abandonment of the Mayhew School in 1876, when he was transferred to the Brimmer School. In November, 1880, he was elected master of the Brimmer School, and held this position until 1906, when he resigned, after thirty years' service in the school.





Mr. Dickerman was a successful disciplinarian, although strongly opposed to corporal punishment. He made a specialty of reading and declamation. He was also personally interested in physical science, including chemistry, geology, and mineralogy. He was successful in interesting his pupils in these subjects, and also in developing among them good habits and manly character.

Mr. Dickerman became a member of the Somerville school board in 1880, and served twenty-six consecutive years; he seldom missed a meeting. No other member has served so long. He showed himself progressive,—desirous that the Somerville schools should have the best methods and the best teachers that the city could afford. He introduced the anti-cigarette order, which was adopted by the board in the year 1901. He was a warm advocate of manual training. Before his retirement the board passed resolutions highly complimentary of his services.

Mr. Dickerman married, November 25, 1862, Rebecca M. Perkins, daughter of Joseph P. and Sarah P. Perkins, of Charlestown. His wife had taught as the first assistant in the Warren School, Charlestown. In 1869 Mr. and Mrs. Dickerman moved to Somerville, and in 1872 built the house corner of Central Street and Highland Avenue, which they occupied until the death of Mrs. Dickerman in January, 1906. Mr. Dickerman died January 25, 1909.

He was a member of Soley Lodge, A. F. and A. M., a past high priest of Somerville Royal Arch Chapter, a trustee of the Somerville Hospital from its organization, a member of the Winter Hill Congregational Church, the Appalachian Club, and the Somerville Historical Society.

Two children survive him, Frank E. Dickerman, of Somerville, and Mrs. Grace H., wife of Henry S. Hayward, of Mankato, Minn.

Two interesting oil paintings of Mr. Dickerman are in existence, one by Wallace Bryant, now in the house of his son, 47 Craigie Street, and the other a full-length portrait by Alfred Smith, in the Brimmer School, Boston.

(Acknowledgments to the Somerville Journal.)







# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1909

VOL. VIII

No. 2







## CONTENTS

THE AUTHOR OF "MARY HAD A LITTLE LAMB" .....	Mary A. Haley	25
REMINISCENCES OF SOUTHERN PRISON LIFE .....	George W. Barn	32
THE WALNUT HILL SCHOOL .....	Frank M. Hawes	4

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

22 LAUREL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, *in advance*

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 22 Laurel Street. Exchange list in charge of Mr. William H. Stone,  
60 Heath Street, to whom all communications  
regarding exchanges should be addressed.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* MRS. SARAH A. S. CARPENTER

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. VIII.

JULY, 1909

No. 2.

## THE AUTHOR OF "MARY HAD A LITTLE LAMB."

By Miss Mary A. Haley.

[Read Before the Somerville Historical Society December 8,  
1908.]

Columbus Tyler was born in Townsend, Vt., in 1805. He had no special education save the training of the farm, the home, the meeting-house, and the common school. At the age of twenty-one he came to Boston, and in a few months secured the position of attendant at the McLean Asylum in Somerville, Mass., and in a few years he had passed through all the grades of its services. He remained there thirty-six years. He was associated with such distinguished men as Dr. Wyman, Dr. Luther V. Bell, and Dr. Booth, and was on most friendly terms with those who succeeded him.

In 1835 he married Miss Mary E. Sawyer, of Sterling, Mass. In 1862 he gave up his position at the asylum, and built a handsome residence near the corner of Central and Summer Streets. This house is now occupied by the Unitarian minister and his wife. In the house are two full-length portraits of Mr. and Mrs. Tyler.

His taste and skill in laying out his grounds were remarkable. He knew the habits and history of all the trees on his grounds, and something of the parasites that fed upon them.

He was a representative to the State Legislature for two years, and the oldest vice-president in point of service in the Five Cents Savings Bank at Charlestown, Mass.

Many private trusts were confided to him, and although he had no children, his wards were numerous.

He was a man of pure habits and resolute purpose. "The dominant note in his character was justice, and the harmonies of his life were set in that key."

His "last will and testament" caused much comment. He





bequeathed his home and grounds to the Unitarian Society as a residence for the clergyman of the Unitarian parish. Social meetings connected with the church were to be held there. Children with their attendants were to have free access to the grounds. He established a flower mission, providing a sum of money to be used each year by a committee of ladies in furnishing flowers for the sick and the afflicted. He also left a sum of money to be put in the bank for every boy and girl, at a certain age, who shall regularly attend church and Sunday School. About four girls have benefited by this bequest.

Mr. Tyler died September 14, 1881.

### MRS. MARY E. TYLER.

Somerville is rich in historic associations. We have the Old Powder House, where the ammunition was stored previous to the Revolutionary War, and Prospect Hill, where the first flag was raised in 1776.

Great men have walked our country lanes, Washington and Burgoyne, of olden times; Enneking, the artist, John G. Saxe, the poet, and Edward Everett, the preacher, have lived in later days within our borders. Even the Pundita Ramabai from the Far East has paid a flying visit to our city. No poet, artist, preacher, or historian is so well known among English-speaking people as the subject of this paper, the "Mary who had the little lamb."

It was by no conscious activity on her part that she became famous. She was one of those rare creatures who have greatness thrust upon them. Yet she bore her honors meekly.

Mary E. Sawyer was born in 1806 in the town of Sterling, Mass. It was through this town that King Philip marched, burning the houses and killing and taking captive the white people. She graduated from the schools of her native town, and then for a while taught school in Fitchburg. Her love for her little charges made her very popular, but her health failed, and she was obliged to seek a change of occupation.

In 1827 she secured a position in the McLean Asylum,





where she remained thirty-five years, the greater part of the time as matron. In her long career of usefulness she ministered with skill and affection to the sick and unfortunate. In 1835, while in this institution, she married Columbus Tyler, who was steward there at the time.

Mrs. Tyler and her husband were among the first founders of the Unitarian Church in this town. For many years she superintended the infant class in the Sunday School, and also interested herself in the larger work of the denomination.

When Mr. Tyler resigned from the asylum he built a spacious house on Central Street, and there Mrs. Tyler dispensed a gracious hospitality. She was interested in most of the city organizations, particularly the Woman's Christian Temperance Union and the Woman's Relief Corps.

On the north side of their house was a wild wood garden. In it she had every variety of fern and delicate wood flower. In her summer journeyings, when she saw a rare plant, she secured a specimen for her garden. Those most difficult of cultivation responded to her care. She gladly welcomed her little friends in the neighborhood to assist her in her work, and their assistance was not always helpful. On one occasion she left two little boys of five and six years to amuse themselves with shovel and wheelbarrow while she took a nap. When she came out she found the ferns entirely cleaned from one bed and thrown on the rubbish pile. Her only rebuke was a gentle: "My little dears, you have done a great deal of mischief, but you did not mean it." These two boys were Rollin T. Lincoln and Edward B. Raymond, who are now married and have children of their own.

Her friends were often the recipients of a beautiful bouquet, arranged with the skill of an artist, and the birthdays of the boys and girls in the neighborhood were always remembered with flowers. The lonely and bereaved welcomed her sympathetic visits. Always thinking of others, and never of herself, she lived a life of beneficence and charity, and died lamented by all who had the pleasure of her acquaintance. She died December 11, 1889, and was buried in Mt. Auburn.





The following account of the lamb is from the pen of a cousin, William Brewster Sawyer, and was published in the Boston Transcript:—

"MARY HAD A LITTLE LAMB."

THE FAMOUS HISTORY FROM THE LIPS OF THE ORIGINAL MARY.

"There are floating about in the great ocean of literature stray chips of song or story, which from their wit or wisdom, or from some unaccountable reason, become popularized and cherished more carefully than whole navies of world-renowned authors. Their parentage unknown, they come as literary foundlings to our doors, and, once admitted, command their own place in our affections. Among such is the poem, 'Mary Had a Little Lamb.' There is hardly a child in the broad land who has not become familiar with the verses, nor a college student but has sung them to a dozen different tunes. It has been parodied, paraphrased, and translated into the dead languages. And yet scarce any one knows who is its author, or whether it is fictitious or founded on fact. It is perhaps in the truth of the story that the secret of its popularity lies. For it is the true account of an incident that happened years ago, not fifty miles from the Cradle of Liberty. The writer, on a recent visit, craved from her own lips the true story of the affair, and will reproduce it as nearly as possible.

"'It was when I was nine years old,' she said, 'and we lived upon the farm. I used to go out to the barn every morning with father to see the cows and sheep. They all knew me, and the cows, old Broad and Short-horn and Brindle, would low a good morning when I came to their stables. One cold day we found that during the night twin lambs had been born. You know that sheep will often disown one of twins, and this morning one poor little lamb was pushed out of the pen into the yard. It was almost starved and almost frozen, and father told me I might have it if I could make it live. So I took it into the house, wrapped it in a blanket, and fed it peppermint and milk





all day. When night came I could not bear to leave it, for fear it would die, so mother made me up a little bed on the settle, and I nursed the poor thing all night, feeding it with a spoon, and by morning it could stand. After this we brought it up by hand, until it grew to love me very much, and would stay with me wherever I went unless it was tied. I used before going to school in the morning to see that the lamb was all right and securely fastened for the day. Well, one morning, when my brother Nat and I were all ready, the lamb could not be found, and supposing that it had gone out to pasture with the cows, we started on. I used to be a great singer, and the lamb would follow the sound of my voice. This morning, after we had gone some distance, I began to sing, and the lamb, hearing me, followed on and overtook us before we got to the schoolhouse. As it happened, we were early, so I went in very quietly, took the lamb into my seat, where it went to sleep, and I covered it up with my shawl. When the teacher came and the rest of the scholars, they did not notice anything amiss, and all was quiet until my spelling class was called. I had hardly taken my place before the pattering of little feet was heard coming down the aisle, and the lamb stood beside me ready for its word. Of course the children all laughed, and the teacher laughed, too, and the poor creature had to be turned out of doors. But it kept coming back, and at last had to be tied in the woodshed till night. Now that day there was a young man in school, John Roulston by name, who was on a visit to one of the boys, and came in as spectator. He was a Boston boy, and son of the riding school master, and was fitting for Harvard College. He was very much pleased over what he saw in our school, and a few days after gave us the first three verses of the song. How or when it got into print I don't know.

"Thus she ran on, telling of the care she bestowed on her pet until it grew to be a sheep, and she would curl its long wool over a stick; and it bore lambs until there was a flock of five all her own; and finally how it was killed by an angry cow. Then she brought out a pair of her little girl stockings, knitted of yarn





spun from the lamb's wool, the heels of which had been raveled out and given away piecemeal as mementoes.

"John Roulston died before entering college. What the world lost in him, who wove into verse that immortalized them both the story of Mary and the lamb, no one may say.

"William B. Sawyer."

The teacher was Miss Harriet Kimball, who afterwards became the wife of a Mr. Loring, and their son was the proprietor of the well-known circulating library in Boston.

John Roulston was the nephew of Rev. Samuel Capen, who was then settled in Sterling. The day after the lamb's visit to school young Roulston rode over to the schoolhouse and handed Mary the first three stanzas of the poem:—

"Mary had a little lamb,  
Its fleece was white as snow,  
And everywhere that Mary went  
The lamb was sure to go.

"It followed her to school one day,  
Which was against the rule;  
It made the children laugh and play  
To see a lamb at school.

"And so the teacher turned it out,  
But still it lingered near,  
And waited patiently about  
Till Mary did appear."

Of its snow-white wool she knitted some stockings, and in 1886, when the patriotic women of Boston wished to raise money for the preservation of the Old South Meeting-House, they asked Mrs. Tyler to assist by giving a pair of these stockings. She complied with their request. The stockings were raveled, and bits of the yarn fastened on cards on which she had written her name. These sold for a hundred dollars. A second pair was raveled, and another large sum was raised.

John Roulston gave Mary the poem in 1815. She and her





friends naturally inferred that he was the author of it. No question as to the authorship was raised till in 1829 Mrs. Sarah Josepa (Buell) Hale, afterwards editor of Godey's Monthly, published a volume of poems for children, and included in them were six stanzas, entitled "Mary Had a Little Lamb." The additional verses are:—

"And then it ran to her, and laid  
Its head upon her arm,  
As if to say, 'I'm not afraid,  
You'll keep me from all harm.'

" 'What makes the lamb love Mary so?'  
The eager children cry;  
'Oh, Mary loves the lamb, you know,'  
The teacher did reply.

'And you each gentle animal  
In confidence may bind,  
And make them follow at your will,  
If you are only kind.' "

If this was an incident in Mrs. Hale's life, as some of her friends assert, why doesn't the poem begin with "Sarah had a little lamb"? It has been printed "Lucy had a little lamb."

Mrs. Tyler's friends and Mrs. Hale's unflinchingly maintain their position. Mrs. Tyler's cousin, who lives in the same house in which she was born and married, deposed before a notary public that he attended school in the same schoolhouse, and that the facts referring to the incident of the lamb and the poem are true.

Both parties are honorable people, and the reasonable solution is that the verses are so simple that they almost make themselves, and when Mrs. Hale heard them in her childhood they became a part of her mental furniture, and for a time were forgotten. In later years memory unconsciously reproduced them as original forms, and she added the other three stanzas, believing that the entire poem was her own.





## REMINISCENCES OF SOUTHERN PRISON LIFE.

By George W. Bean.

[The following story was written for the Memorial, a paper edited by Miss Mary E. Elliot, and published May 30, 1878, under the auspices of Willard C. Kinsley (Independent) Relief Corps, of this city. It is a story of the experiences in rebel prisons of George Washington Bean, for many years a member of the Somerville police force. It is presented herewith to the Historical Society for re-publication in Historic Leaves, as a contribution to the Civil War history of Somerville.—Charles D. Elliot.]

Somerville sent three full companies of infantry to the war,—one three-months' company in 1861, one three-years' company in 1862, and one nine-months' company in 1862. I enlisted for three years in Company E, Captain F. R. Kinsley, attached to the Thirty-ninth Regiment, which left Boston August 12, 1862, for Washington, and did arduous service in the defences of that city for a year, when it crossed into Virginia, and joined the Army of the Potomac.

On October 11, 1863 (the date of General Meade's grand retreat from the Rapidan River), Judson W. Oliver, F. J. Oliver, W. Lovett, H. Howe, J. W. Whittemore, F. J. Hyde, and myself, all of Company E, six others of the regiment, and one from the Ninetieth Pennsylvania of our brigade, who had been on picket on that river, were surrounded by 20,000 of Stewart's cavalry and taken prisoners, with about 500 others. We were sent to Culpeper, and confined that night in an old meeting-house.

Next morning we went on cars to Gardenville, arriving at night, being lodged in a four-story brick tobacco factory called Bartlett's, or Libby No. 3. We were in this place about a month; while there H. Howe went to the hospital sick, and soon after died.

We were next sent to Pemberton's factory near this, or Libby No. 2, being just opposite Libby No. 1. In the latter prison none but commissioned officers were allowed. There





were three floors in these buildings, and prisoners constantly arriving. Two hundred and fifty men packed on each floor, with a strong guard, not being allowed near the windows; but at times the men would venture to look out, and sometimes saw old Jeff Davis ride by in his barouche.

Our usual rations for twenty-four hours were half a loaf of corn bread, a mouthful of beef or thin yellow pork, or a half-pint of thin rice soup. No light, no fire; Union songs were not allowed to be sung, but the boys would sometimes howl them. We were allowed for a short time to write eight lines at a time, of a domestic character, unsealed, to our friends at home. I received but one letter.

Our government sent a large supply of rations and clothing, but we could get but little of it, and many of the boys were obliged to sell their clothing and shoes to the rebels to obtain food; but they would not have done so had they known what the future had in store for them. On the morning of January 1, 1864, the rebel sergeant and aides came in, as usual, to call the roll. Before going out, he said: "See here, Yanks, I wish you all a Happy New Year, and many a one here." Jud Oliver thought that a very consoling remark, and only wished the rebel's stomach groaned as his did. A few days after we were taken out of this place, at two o'clock in the morning, and sent down to Belle Isle, two miles distant, a small, low island in James River, opposite Richmond. There was snow on the ground, and many of the men were barefoot and in their shirt sleeves, suffering much cold. It was so cold for several days that the river, which had quite a current, froze over, during which we had no shelter but our blankets. For wood the rebels gave us green logs; we had no axes to cut it, and it would not burn. The only way we could survive was to walk the island nights and sleep in the daytime; and I know of our men here imploring the guard to shoot them, to end their misery, and many were shot by going too near the lines. One night twenty-four died, or were shot in the trench. We were on the island nearly two months, and what little food we got was mostly un-





cooked, chiefly corn meal, ground with the cob, hog beans, and hard, dry corn bread.

The men's stomachs soon rebelled at this food, and sickness and death followed. One day, while there, a small cur dog ran through the guard lines into our camp; he was instantly pursued by scores of men, caught and despatched, cooked, and the next morning his remains were sold for hot chicken soup at a high price. Many who had money eagerly bought and devoured it. And I saw a poor fellow walk up and eat some raw hog beans which a man had vomited up, after overloading his stomach with them. About this time poor Jud Oliver was taken very sick, being feverish and delirious and unable to walk. I assisted him to the boat, and bade him good-by, as I supposed for the last time on earth, and he was taken to the Richmond Hospital. About a month afterwards a special parade of 10,000 sick and wounded prisoners on both sides was agreed upon, and Jud was lucky enough to be one of them, and it seems as if he bore a charmed life, from the fact that he went to the parade camp, went home on a furlough, joined his regiment, in the first battle was taken prisoner again, but was soon released, rejoined the regiment again, came home at the close of the war, has been a member of the Somerville police force several years, and almost any pleasant night he can be seen meandering along his beat in the vicinity of the Elm House, Professors' Row, and Alewife Brook. About March 1 Belle Isle was overcrowded, and 500 of us were sent on box cars 500 miles to Andersonville. It took five days and nights to go there; one man died in our car the second day, but was not removed until we arrived. It was one mile from the railroad into the stockade, which was to be our future camp ground.

I can assure you, readers, that I feel very loath to undertake to describe this place, and the many horrid, thrice horrid scenes we witnessed there during our six-months' stay. When we left Belle Isle the rebels told us we were going to be paroled; they always told us that story when a move was to be made. Imagine our feelings, then, when, at two o'clock on that dark





morning, we were driven into that pen! When daylight came we found that we were in a clearing of about fourteen acres, in the midst of a dense pine forest.

One lot of 500 men had preceded us, making 1,000 now here. The trees had been felled and trimmed into posts twenty feet long, driven into the earth about four feet apart, and connected by narrow boards to a height of about sixteen feet. On top, and about 100 feet apart, were roughly-constructed sentry boxes for guards, approachable from the outside only. On the inside of this stockade, about fifteen feet from it, running entirely around the yard, low posts were placed at intervals, having a narrow board nailed at the top from one to the other; this was called the "dead-line," as any one who touched that lumber was shot dead in his tracks; and I saw a poor fellow shot through the hip who had not touched, but stood near it. He died before morning, and it came near costing me my life, for, much incensed, I called the murderer a name that I will not repeat, and he, hearing me, aimed his gun at me, but I jumped behind a stump and lay there till evening; I changed my hotel before morning. We had plenty of wood, it being the limbs and tops of trees.

As we had no barracks, the only shelter the men had was their blankets. As the nights were cold, large bonfires were kept burning, by which we tried to keep warm; but most of us had been robbed of our blankets, and suffered a great deal from the cold. I saw many thousand men enter this prison robbed of their blouses, coats, haversacks, boots, shoes, caps, etc., by their captors.

Some of Sherman's men cut their bootlegs off and slit the uppers to make them worthless to the chivalric rebels into whose hands they fell. Near the end of the sixth month of my stay, the prison having been enlarged to twenty-four acres, containing 39,000 prisoners, 10,978 had died. The rations were brought in wagons driven by negroes. General Wirtz had command, without doubt the meanest looking specimen of a human villain one ever looked upon. The boys called him a





Dutchman, but I believe history calls him a Swede; he was dark, about five feet nine inches high, weighed about 125 pounds, spare, very stooping gait, a quick, short stepper; his dress was very nobby, generally citizen's of various hues; he wore a lady's fine gold chain about his neck, with several turns across his glow-worm-colored vest. When we arrived Wirtz detailed a number of our men to go outside and build log cabins for his quarters and other purposes; these men had to take the oath of honor not to go more than one mile from the stockade. Going out at sunrise, they came in at sunset; for their hard day's labor they received an extra ration.

Wirtz and the officers of the guard came in every morning to count us for rations, and to see if any had escaped through the night, the men standing in line in two ranks. The whole were divided into detachments of from twenty-five to 250 each. Our sergeant had charge of the rations for each squad, and if any men were missing, they were held responsible, and the rations of the whole camp would be stopped until some man divulged when, where, and how he or they got out. Many times we got no rations for three days, but finally the secret was starved out of some man who knew. They generally escaped by the tunnel process, as follows: A party would put three blankets together, get as near the dead line as practical, erect a booth or tent, and pretend to dig a well inside of about six feet in diameter, the soil here being sandy, without a stone. Having dug to the depth of twelve or fifteen feet, they would start a hole, as high up as they could reach from the bottom (about five or six feet from the surface), a trifle larger than a man's body, and with their hands paw the sand from the tunnel hole into the well when the tunnel was beyond the stockade; the men would then wait for a dark, stormy night, and then "git." I had a hand in one of these tunnels with some sailors, Austin Littlefield, of East Somerville, being one of them. We had worked it for weeks, when the day preceding the night we had selected to go out, a traitor informed on us, and Wirtz, with a strong guard, came in and crushed it. The next day the traitor was discov-





ered, and he was taken by the rebels from the hands of our men more dead than alive. He never came inside again.

Several of these tunnels caved in upon the men when in them, and numbers were killed; although many got out this way, few escaped to our lines. Wirtz kept a large pack of bloodhounds, which tracked our boys ere they could get far. When caught, they were kept outside in what was called the chain gang. Their wrists would all be chained together, and each dragged a ball and chain; when one went they all went, and all took step together; few survived the treatment long.

Andersonville was composed of two long, sloping hills; at the very foot of these, and in the centre of the camp, was a brook. When we entered, scraggy trees and poisonous vines completely filled the brook, and it could be called nothing but a bog; but in time, as the woods grew scarce, the men dug out these trees, vines, and even the small roots, several feet under ground, and after much work made a canal of it, about twenty feet wide, and in dry time about six inches deep. The brigade of rebels who guarded us were in camp just outside the stockade, on a hill sloping down to this brook. They washed all their clothes and bathed in it, and we were obliged to drink the dirty water; it produced a great deal of sickness and death. The men protested to Wirtz, but in vain; and it was a common remark of the rebels to us that, the more they could kill in this and other ways, the less they would have to feed and fight. Often at roll-call many of the men were so sick and weak that they could not stand, and would sit on the ground, and often have I seen that beast Wirtz walk up and kick them like dogs. Wirtz always wore a belt; in it he carried two large revolvers. Once when I was sick and had eaten nothing for several days, one morning at roll-call, it being very warm, I was unable to stand, and sat in the rank. Wirtz came up near me, and, drawing a revolver from his belt, said: "If that Yank don't stand up in the rank, I'll put fire to him." The men on each side of me quickly raised me up and held me until Wirtz passed out. As time passed on, the rations grew small. The more prisoners, the worse the





fare; the meals were cooked outside. At one time they pretended to make a mush, or duff, in large tanks containing hot water. The unsifted meal ground with the cob would be thrown into these by the barrel. When taken out and issued to us, unsalted, a little of the outside would be cooked, but inside was raw. Once in a while a little rice or a few black beans, cooked just as they were picked, pods, strings, and dirt, but often raw, were given us. For a while our rations were but a pint of cornmeal, they saying it was all they had to give us, that we were eating them out of house and home, and for many days I drew my rations in my hands and ate it dry, being very thankful to get that.

The last of August 500 of us were sent on cars to Savannah, into another stockade. In a few days 10,000 men had arrived. We were here about six weeks; rain fell most of the time, and once for three days the camp was flooded to our knees.

We could not lie down, and, with many others, I got the fever and ague. For six weeks I suffered terribly. I was then sent to Blackshire Station, near the Florida line, where we stayed two weeks. From there we were sent to Fort Darling to be paroled. On the way I escaped from the train, and, being very tired, lay down under a tree for the night. At sunrise we saw the train pass out of sight; we started down the river, hoping to get to our gunboats, but at sundown three squads of rebel pickets suddenly appeared around us, and took us to the Oglethorpe Guard House in Savannah.

They kept us here three days, and in that time twenty-nine more of our boys were brought in. Many others were shot in the attempt to escape, and we were all put into a car and sent to Charleston (S. C.) jail. Next day they marched us through the city, and we had the opportunity of seeing the havoc that shot and shell from our harbor forts had made. From here we were sent on cars to Florence, S. C., and put into another stockade; this was on December 1, 1864.

There were 10,000 men here, and I found among them many Massachusetts boys, some of them my old schoolmates; but





there was a sad contrast in their appearance here and when I last saw them.

They told me I had come to an awful place, but when I told them my story they were silent. But there was great suffering and death here; it was a second Andersonville, in proportion to numbers; the rations grew smaller every day. We were next taken to Wilmington, N. C. We camped outside the city, for our navy was shelling the place at the time, and our generals would not agree on armistice for the parole of prisoners. We were sent back to Goldsboro riding on open cars. At this time I was barefoot, and there being a heavy frost, my feet were frost-bitten.

The rebels appointed six of our men nurses, to care for the sick, and I was one of them; it then being near a parole, they wished to save every man possible. In attending to the wants of so many sick, I neglected myself, and contracted a severe cold, which a few days after settled into a fever; but I managed to keep up until we went on board our transports. Wilmington was taken, our troops took possession of the city, and marched ten miles from it into the interior towards Goldsboro; then an armistice for parole of prisoners was agreed upon, and they went into camp. We were sent again on the cars to them, the train halted in the woods, and there for the first time for many months we beheld the glorious old banner of the free, moving defiantly. To us it was a glorious sight, and many of the men wept like children. General Schofield received us, and made an address, in which he said: "I expected to behold a hard-looking body of men, but I did not expect to look upon a mass of living skeletons." He then turned his head away and wept for a moment, then, turning to the men, he gave each good advice about eating, etc. Had some of them heeded it, they would probably have saved their lives.

Most of the troops here were colored, and they gave us a warm greeting. They had erected large arches of evergreen, through which we passed, and a band of music stationed at each arch played the national airs. After passing





through the camp ground, we halted on a beautiful lawn for the night. The troops had here provided for us a bountiful collation of hot coffee, hard tack, and fresh beef.

Of course the men were ravenous, and, their stomachs being very weak, it proved to be a fatal meal to many of them. The next morning we walked to Wilmington, and in the evening went on board a transport steamer, bound for Annapolis, Md. We were three days in going, in a severe storm, and I had a raging fever. Arriving at the wharf, I was carried on a stretcher to the Naval School Hospital, and for three days I did not open my eyes. The surgeon told me that the only medicine he could give me for several days was a little cordial on a sponge pressed to my teeth; he gave up all hope of my recovery, but a kind Providence ruled otherwise. Having good care, I recovered.

When I was able to walk they showed me a box they had expected to put me in. I was here about a month. As soon as the sick were able to be moved, they were sent to hospitals in other cities, this being the nearest landing to rebeldom. I was next sent to Camden Street Hospital in Baltimore, and here I suffered terribly with my frozen feet.

I was here nearly a month, and most of that time I could not bear even the weight of a sheet on them. The surgeon tried every cure he could think of, but I got no relief, until finally I tried the cold water cure. It was a great risk, but in a short time it cured them.

There were about 500 men in this hospital. As soon as I was able to walk, I received a twenty-days' furlough to go home.

When I arrived in Somerville my father did not know me. I had been mourned for dead, having been reported so at the State House three times. My furlough having expired, I reported back to the hospital. Feeling pretty well, I was anxious to join my regiment, but the surgeon would not let me go. Being anxious to do something, I was appointed chief of the culinary department. On May 18, 1865, I was discharged from the hospital, and, with my back pay, my discharge papers, and a new





suit of blue, I bade them all good-by, took the cars for Washington, D. C., the boat for Alexandria, and climbed over Arlington Heights, where I found my old regiment. But they were few compared with when I last saw them.

I remained until the joyful news of peace was proclaimed; then I returned home.

---

## THE WALNUT HILL SCHOOL.

By Frank M. Hawes.

[Read Before the Somerville Historical Society February 9, 1909.]

From a perusal of the names of persons selected year by year to look after the interests of the outlying schools of Charlestown, it will be safe to conclude that a school district, extending well up to Arlington Centre from the Powder House, was in existence by 1730, or as early as the more famous one, long known as the Milk Row School, whose history has appeared in *Historic Leaves*.

From 1790, and for a number of years thereafter, this school, which we have designated by its location the Alewife Brook School, was known as School No. 3. Previous to 1786 there was no public school building. We are justified in making this statement from several references on the town records to private rooms that were hired for school purposes.

In the warrant, February 28, 1785, for the coming town meeting is the following: "To know the minds of the town, what they will do with regard to two petitions presented by the people at the upper end of the town requesting that one or more schoolhouses may be built there." March 7 it was voted to build two schoolhouses in that section (No. 4 being in the Gardner neighborhood), and May 1, 1786, the bills for the same, £40 each, were paid. The next November William Whittemore and





Philemon Russell were empowered to lay a floor, make seats, and lay a hearth at the school which we are now considering, but which was designated in that one instance "the Russells' School." Very appropriate would it have been if this name, thus unofficially reported, had been retained. Had such been the case, we might to-day be proud in having one school, at least, with a name perpetuating memories of an earlier time. As it is, none of our school buildings has a name which antedates the incorporation of Somerville in 1842.

May 10, 1802, we read that the schoolhouse near Alewife Bridge is to be repaired at an expense not exceeding \$100. At that time, or later, we conclude that this building, less than twenty years old, had been considerably damaged by fire, for the trustees are given discretion to repair or build anew. May 3, 1803 (1805?), the reported expense for rebuilding, in addition to \$100 previously voted, was \$400.

Some time after 1801, but before 1812—the school records for that period are lost—this school was known as No. 4. The change was necessitated by the creation of a new district at the Neck. For the year last mentioned No. 4 had an attendance of thirty-four scholars, a number which did not vary materially from that time to the very end of its existence, although in 1814 we read of a membership of fifty-eight, at which time we have the first recorded name of a teacher there, that of Jacob Pierce, or "Master Pierce," as he was called. The next winter we find him teaching this same school, when he received \$123.75 for his services. The two brothers, Philemon R., Jr., and Levi Russell, were pupils of Master Pierce, a very good teacher, but tradition says that he used to fortify himself for his daily duties in the schoolroom by carrying a little "black strap" in his boot-leg! He was a fine penman, and made all his pupils "good writers."

April 3, 1818, the trustees examined School No. 4, when about forty scholars were present out of a total of fifty-two. J. Underwood was the teacher. This was without doubt James Underwood, afterwards one of the trustees, who died in office March 4, 1840.





March 18, 1819, the school received its customary visit, when J. Haywood, then in charge, is pronounced an excellent teacher, and his school gives a fine exhibition. The male teachers next named were Simeon Booker, for the winter of 1819-'20, and Mr. Colburn, for 1820-'21. Nothing has been learned of these gentlemen; the latter may have been Joshua O. Colburn, who taught the Milk Row School a few seasons later. At his examination, March 22, 1821, twenty-two girls and fifteen boys were present out of an enrollment of fifty-four. "The school was addressed by Rev. (Edward) Turner, and closed with prayer."

From time to time the records give us the names of the trustees in charge of this district. For the years 1822-'23 the school near "elewife bridge" was superintended by Samuel (P.) Teel. The next year James Russell was in charge. An oil portrait of this gentleman may be seen at Arlington in the home of a descendant. For 1826-'27 Nathaniel H. Henchman was the local trustee. This gentleman, who lived in what was later known as the Porter residence, and later still as the Morrison-Durgin place, died while in office that year.

The first lady teacher in this district whose name has come down to us was Miss Sarah Perry, who taught during the spring, summer, and autumn of 1825. The late Mrs. Lucretia Russell Carr, granddaughter of the above-named James Russell, vividly remembered Miss Perry, who was her first teacher. Her words were: "She boarded with my grandmother and I liked her." Mrs. Carr was then but three years old.

Other female teachers of this period were Hersina Knight, 1826, and Miss Ann Brown, 1827, the latter of whom, on being transferred to a school in Old Charlestown, was succeeded July 3 by Elizabeth Gerrish. Later Miss Gerrish taught the lower Winter Hill School. For the summer of 1828 Miss Miranda Whittemore was engaged, a daughter of Jonathan Whittemore, of West Cambridge. His homestead is still standing on Massachusetts Avenue (nearer to Boston than the John P. Squire estate). Miss Whittemore was the first teacher of Mrs. Susanna





Russell Cook, to whom the writer of these pages is greatly indebted for information. She must have been a good teacher, as she was employed for several seasons. Later she became the wife of a Mr. Butterfield, a neighbor's son.\*

We now come to the name of Philemon R. Russell, Jr., who seems to have been first employed as a teacher in his home district for the winter of 1825-'26. For a number of winters after that, although not consecutively, we find him thus engaged. It was he who taught the last winter term, 1841-'42, under Charlestown control, and also the first and second winters after Somerville was established. Mr. Russell was employed more than once to teach at West Cambridge, in the district known as "the Rocks." Philemon Robbins Russell was born January 2, 1795, and died June 6, 1863, at the age of sixty-eight. He received his education in an academy at Lexington. Russell Street of this city was named for him, and it was in that neighborhood that he lived and died. He married Miss Mary Wilkins, of Unity, N. H., and was survived by two daughters, Mary M., the wife of Edwin R. Prescott, and Susan E., the second wife of the late Amos Haynes. The annual report of the trustees for 1838-'39 says of Mr. Russell: "His efforts and skill are worthy of the highest commendation. He insisted upon the thoroughness of all his pupils. His uniform practice is, if a pupil makes a blunder in recitation, he is compelled afterwards to repeat that part of his answer correctly, as a word going around the class must be spelled correctly by each one who has failed, no matter how much time it takes."

After 1829 our school, which is sometimes designated on the records as the West Cambridge Road School, was officially known as District No. 6. During the following winter, 1830-'31, James Swan was appointed to teach in the "Russell District." He completed the term, and the next year at the "Female Writing School, Charlestown," closely followed Reuben Swan, who had resigned February 2, 1832. According to Wyman, who

---

\*Arlington Vital Records: Samuel Butterfield and Miranda Whittemore were married January 31, 1839.





gives this line of Swans, Reuben and James, the latter born in Dorchester in 1809, were the sons of Reuben Swan, Sr., and Ruth Teel, who were married in 1804. Seven of their sons, including the two mentioned, were school teachers. According to my informants, this family at one time lived on North Street, West Somerville, on the old Cook place, which had originally belonged to the Teels (the mother's people).

The winter term for 1831-'32 was taught by S. N. Cooke. Mrs. Carr told me that he was an Englishman, and a fine man. She was twelve years old that winter. During the next year there were two teachers for the winter term. Joseph S. Hastings, of Shrewsbury, who had taught a term in the Gardner District (sometimes called the Woburn Road School), seems not to have been successful. January 28, 1833, he requested to be discharged from his duties, "with reasons," and the trustees granted his petition. Philemon R. Russell, Jr., finished out the term.\*

Miss Whittemore, who had taught acceptably for five successive summers, was succeeded in 1833 by Miss Kezia Russell, daughter of William Adams and Kezia Teel Russell, and an elder sister of the late Mrs. Carr and the late Mrs. Rebecca Russell Stearns. Two years later Miss Kezia was again in charge. Soon after this she married a Mr. Hatch, a farmer of Saugus.

For the winter of 1833-'34 H. K. Curtis, of Stoughton, was the teacher for four months, at a salary of \$30 per month. He had forty-one pupils. He was liked as a teacher, and boarded in the family of Philemon R., Sr.† Other male teachers, besides Philemon R. Russell, for the winter school, after Mr. Cur-

---

\*Shrewsbury Records: Joseph Southgate Hastings, son of Jonas and Lucy, born June 8, 1796; Joseph S. Hastings and Joanna Newton, of Westboro, married at West Cambridge June 14, 1833.

†Hiram Keith Curtis, of Stoughton, graduated from Harvard College in the class of 1833. He was made A. M., and died in 1888 at East Stoughton, now Avon. After graduation he adopted the profession of civil engineer. He entered the office of Loammi Baldwin at Charlestown, and remained there a number of years. About ten years after graduating, while shooting, he met with an accident by which he lost an eye and one hand. This incapacitated him for his work. After that he retired to his old home.





tis and before the separation from Charlestown, were: Henry J. Jewett,\* 1834-'35; Norwood P. Damon, son of Parson Damon, of West Cambridge, and later employed as a teacher in the Prospect Hill School†; Samuel (or Richard) Swan, not related to the other Swan family; Levi Russell, 1836-'37, and again 1840-'41,‡ who was also employed at Prospect Hill, and whose career as a teacher we shall endeavor to notice in some future paper; and George P. Worcester, 1837-'38. By chance we have preserved for us the names of nine pupils who went to Levi Russell during the winter of 1840-'41. We also have very creditable specimens of their penmanship dating from that time. Their names and ages were: Aaron P. Dickson, eleven years; Elisha Frost, seventeen years; John A. Magoun, thirteen years; Emeline Teel, thirteen years; Horatio Teel, fourteen years; Louisa Teel, thirteen years; Thomas E. Teel, sixteen years; Louisa H. Winnik, twelve years; Mary Warren.

For the summer of 1834 Miss Martha McKoun, of Charlestown, was the teacher. Mrs. Cook remembers her well. Wyman's "Charlestown" says that John McKoun, printer, by wife Abigail had a daughter, Martha K., born June 22, 1816. The year 1836 is interesting, as it introduces to us the name of that faithful and very efficient teacher, Miss Sarah M. Burnham,

---

\*Henry James Jewett, born in Portland in April, 1813, brother of Hon. Jedediah Jewett, mayor of Portland, and collector of the port; graduated from Bowdoin in 1833 with honor. He entered on the study of law at the Harvard Law School. He located at Austin, Tex., where he was county attorney and judge of probate. He served on the staff of Governor Houston. In 1870, while on a visit to New York, he died. He was married and left children.

†Damon Genealogy, page 55, etc.: Rev. David Damon (grave at Arlington), born in Wayland September 12, 1787; graduated from Harvard in 1811; studied theology in the Cambridge Divinity School; ordained at Lunenburg in 1815; installed at West Cambridge in 1835; died June 25, 1843, in his fifty-sixth year; made D. D. by Harvard the day before his death; married October 16, 1815, Rebecca Derby, of Lynnfield; she died in Boston in October, 1852 (born in 1787). Son, Norwood, born in Lunenburg October 7, 1816; never married; resided in Boston.

‡The Russells told the writer that George Swan lived at Arlington, and used to drive past every day on the way to school. On records I find George Swan and Eliza Ramsdell, intention, August 24, 1834.





who began her labors in Charlestown at the Russell District (or was it at Gardner Row?). Later she was transferred to Winter Hill for a term, and then to Milk Row, but it was in Cambridge that she made one of the grandest of records. (See *Historic Leaves*, Vol. VII., No. 2.)

Other teachers for the summer, up to the formation of Somerville, were Miss Mary B. Gardner in 1837, Miss Clara D. Whittemore for 1838, '39, and '40, and Miss Elizabeth A. Caverno for 1841. Miss Gardner was the daughter of Miles Gardner, who resided just over the Alewife Brook on the Arlington side. She married a Mr. Pierce, and was last known to be living at an advanced age in Dedham, where she had a daughter who was a teacher in the public schools there.\* "Miss Whittemore," the trustees' report says, "brought the school from a state of confusion to one of discipline," and inspired so much confidence that she was hired by the newly-elected committee of Somerville to resume her position at this school in 1842. At her examination, Friday, October 28, 1842, there were present of the committee Messrs. Hawkins, Allen, Adams, Russell, and Hill. Miss Whittemore came of a West Cambridge family.† Miss Caverno, according to the printed genealogy of her family, was born November 29, 1829, and died November 19, 1855. She was the granddaughter of Jeremiah and Margaret (Brewster) Caverno, and daughter of Arthur and Olive H. (Foss) Caverno. Her people were of Canaan, N. H., or vicinity. While teaching here she boarded at the Gardners', next door to the schoolhouse.

---

\*Arlington Vital Records: Mary Gardner and Oliver Pierce, intention, December 25, 1842; Miles T. Gardner, of Dedham, and Martha E. Cotting, May 24, 1838.

Dedham Records: Oliver Pierce, of Dedham, and Miss Mary Gardner, of West Cambridge, intention, December 25, 1842.

†Perhaps she was this one (Arlington Records): Clarissa Davis Whittemore, daughter of Amos, Jr., born March 6, 1812, Paige's Cambridge; Amos, son of Amos Whittemore, married Rebecca Russell, of Charlestown, April 22, 1814. Clarissa D., their fourth child, baptized May 17, 1812; fifth child was Amos, a merchant and inventor; sixth child was James Russell Whittemore, born in 1818. Mrs. Cook says that Clara D. died of a cancer and unmarried.





Other names of teachers at this school, not found upon the records, but vouched for by my informants, were: Ruth, daughter of Luke Wyman; Jason Bigelow Perry,\* of Rindge, N. H., and brother of Miss Perry already mentioned; a Mr. Munroe; and Miss Georgiana Adams, of Medford.

During the summer of 1838 repairs were made on the school building, under the direction of the local trustees, Alfred Allen and James Underwood, at an expense of \$248.74. From December, 1839, when the first grammar school on Somerville soil was established at Prospect Hill, until the division of the town, the school we have been considering was known as the "ungraded district school in the Russell District."

On the formation of Somerville in 1842, and the separation of school districts, this old school building passed into the possession of Arlington. As no provision could be made at once for a schoolhouse in Somerville, the spring and summer term, as I am informed, was kept in the old quarters, and from our first school report we learn that Miss Clara D. Whittemore received \$72 for six months' services in the Russell District. It may be interesting to know that this venerable and useful structure is still in existence. Some time in the 1840's, about 1845 or 6, my informant (F. E. Fowle) thinks, it was moved farther up into Arlington, and during the past sixty years has done duty as a tenement house. It stands on Franklin Street, fifth house on the right from the main street, and is numbered 35.

---

\*Rindge (N. H.) Town History: John Perry (James and Lydia), baptized in West Cambridge in 1755; married (second wife) Abigail Bigelow, daughter of Jason and Abigail (Witt) Bigelow, of Marlboro. Of their children, Sarah, born June 12, 1793, died unmarried March 19, 1842. The youngest of the family was Jason Bigelow Perry, born September 27, 1801. Colonel J. B. Perry lived on the homestead in Rindge. He showed commendable interest in the welfare of the town, the schools, and all laudable public enterprises. He was an influential and useful citizen, and was much employed in public affairs. He received a commission in the Twelfth Regiment of Militia, and retired with the rank of colonel. He served in the Legislature of 1852 and 1853; was selectman sixteen years; chairman of War Committee during the Rebellion; for thirty years treasurer of the Congregational Society. He married November 11, 1828, Sally Wilson, daughter of Major Supply and Sally (Scripture) Wilson, of New Ipswich. They had nine children. He was living in 1875.

[To be Continued.]







# Historic Leaves

Published Twice a Year

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October and January, 1909-10

Vol. VIII No. 1







## CONTENTS

CHARLES DARWIN ELLIOT	<i>Footbridge</i>
OUR SEAL	<i>J. Albert Holmes</i>
CHARLES DARWIN ELLIOT—FAMILY HISTORY	51
MEMOIR	<i>J. Albert Holmes</i>
MR. ELLIOT'S ARMY RECORD	<i>Gen. L. Hawks</i>
ADDRESS OF WILLIAM H. ARMSTRONG AT MEMORIAL SERVICE OCTOBER 31, 1909	57
ADDRESS OF F. M. HAWES AT MEMORIAL SERVICE OCTOBER 31, 1909	71

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

22 LAUREL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, Postpaid

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 22 Laurel Street. Exchange list in charge of Mr. William H. Foss, 60 Heath Street, to whom all communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* MRS. SARAH S. CARPENTER

SAMUEL C. EARLE, Editor





# HISTORIC LEAVES

## MEMORIAL NUMBER

Vol. VII. — OCT., 1907, and JAN., 1910. Nos. 3 and 4.

### OUR SEAL

By J. A. [Name obscured]

Charles D. Elliot, always interested in the Historical Society, was the author of the Seal Committee's report. He had adopted the design for the Seal of the Society which is first used in this issue of *Historic Leaves*. The Society will be very appreciatively dedicated the first use of it to his memory.

The original design of the Seal was made in April, 1907, by William Henry Uehara, of Somerville, an artist and illustrator, and a descendant of John Uehara, of Weymouth and Malden, 1600-1681.

It consists of a shield outlined in gold, on which appears in gold, also in gold, the branching of the Blessing of the Bay, the raising on Prospect Hill of the first American flag, and the [Name obscured]

colored ribbon of blue [Name obscured] the name, Somerville Historical Society, and the date of organization, 1897.

Regarding the Blessing of the Bay, "Some time in 1681," to quote Mr. Elliot, "the governor (Winthrop) seems to have

CHARLES DARWIN ELLIOT





# HISTORIC LEAVES

## MEMORIAL NUMBER

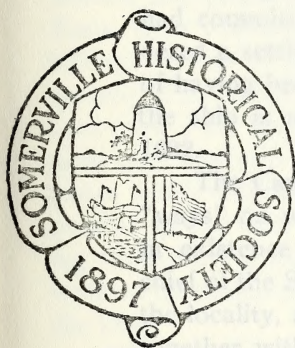
---

VOL. VIII. OCT., 1909, and JAN., 1910. Nos. 3 and 4.

---

### OUR SEAL.

By J. Albert Holmes, for the Committee.



Charles D. Elliot, always interested in the Historical Society, was an active member of its Seal Committee. The Seal as finally adopted appears for the first time in this issue of Historic Leaves, and the Somerville Historical Society affectionately dedicates the first use of it to his memory.

The original drawing of the Seal was made in April, 1909, by William Henry Upham, of Somerville, an artist and illustrator, and a descendant of John Upham, of Weymouth and Malden, 1600-1681.

It consists of a shield outlined in gold, on which appears illustrated, also in gold, the launching of the Blessing of the Bay, the raising on Prospect Hill of the first American flag, and the Old Powder House. The shield is surrounded by a looped ribbon of blue, on which in gold letters is the name, "Somerville Historical Society," and the date of organization, "1897."

Regarding the Blessing of the Bay, "Some time in 1631," to quote Mr. Elliot, "the governor (Winthrop) seems to have





come to Somerville territory and established himself at Ten Hills, where he evidently lived during the summers of many years, Charlestown peninsula, and later Boston, being his winter residence. On July 4, 1631, he built a bark at Mistick, which was launched this day, and called the Blessing of the Bay.

"This was at Ten Hills Farm, in Somerville, just east of the present Wellington Bridge. She was of thirty tons burden, and was the first craft built in Massachusetts large enough to cross the ocean. She was constructed of locust timber, cut on the farm, and was built by subscription at a cost of £145. In 1632 she was converted into a cruiser to suppress piracy on the New England coast. Her energies were to be particularly directed against one David Bull, who, with fifteen Englishmen, had committed acts of piracy among the fishermen and plundered a settlement. She therefore may lay claim to the honor of having been the first American vessel of war." Mention of the ship is made several times in the Colony Records up to 1692.

The Cambridge Chronicle in 1852 stated that the identical "ways" on which the Blessing of the Bay was built were still in existence and in fair preservation. James R. Hopkins, chief of the Somerville Fire Department, who was familiar with the locality, and John S. Hayes, master of the Forster School, together with two firemen, William A. Perry and William A. Burbank, in May, 1892, secured a portion of the "ways" from which the bark was launched. Three vases and two gavels were made of the wood secured, and one of the gavels is now in the possession of the Historical Society.

From the Somerville Journal Souvenir number, March 3, 1892, we take the following:—

"The Powder House, or old mill, at West Somerville is unquestionably the most interesting historical relic in Massachusetts, and it has, indeed, but few rivals in New England. The exact date when it was built is not known. It was originally a grist-mill, and was probably built by John Mallet, who came into possession of the site in 1703-'04. In his will, made





in 1720, the grist-mill is left to his two sons. The mill was undoubtedly built several years previous to 1720, and for some time after that it continued to grind the corn for the farmers for many miles around.

"In 1747 the old mill, with a quarter of an acre of land, was sold to the Province of Massachusetts Bay for £250. After being remodeled it was used for storing the powder of the surrounding towns and of the province.

"The Powder House commemorates one of the earliest hostile acts of the Revolution. On the morning of September 1, 1774, General Gates sent an expedition to seize the powder at the magazine, and 260 soldiers embarked at Long Wharf in Boston and proceeded up Mystic River, landing at Ten Hills Farm, from where they marched to the Powder House. The 250 half-barrels of powder which the magazine contained were speedily transferred to the boats and removed to Castle William (now Fort Independence), in Boston Harbor. A detachment of troops also visited Cambridge, and carried off two field pieces which they found there. The news of the seizure of the powder spread with great rapidity, and on the following morning thousands of armed men from the surrounding towns assembled on Cambridge Common, ready to oppose the forces of the king.

"The Powder House was used for storing powder until the erection of a new magazine at Cambridgeport." In 1836 it came into the possession of Nathan Tufts, in whose family it remained until May 28, 1892, at which time it was presented to the city, together with one and one-half acres of surrounding land, to which three acres more were added by purchase. One of the conditions under which the gift was made was that the Powder House be kept perpetually in repair, and that the land surrounding it be made into a public park and forever maintained as such, to be called the Nathan Tufts Park. The conditions have been fully carried out by the city.

The bronze tablet on the Powder House, setting forth its history, was placed there by the Massachusetts Society of





the Sons of the Revolution on September 1, 1892, 118 years after the seizure of the gunpowder by General Gage. "The Old Powder House is about thirty feet high, with a diameter of fifteen feet at the base. Its walls, which are of bluestone (probably quarried on the hillside), are two feet thick. Within, the old structure formerly had three lofts, supported by heavy beams. Originally it had but one entrance, that on the southwest side."

The following is from Lossing's "Field Book of the Revolution":—

"On the first of January, 1776, the new Continental Army was organized, and on that day the Union flag of thirteen stripes was unfurled for the first time in the American camp, Somerville, Mass. On that day the king's speech was received in Boston, and copies of it were sent to Washington, who, in a letter to Joseph Reed, written January 4, 1776, said: 'The speech I send you. A volume of them were sent out by the Boston gentry, and farcical enough, we gave great joy to them without knowing or intending it, for on that day, the day which gave being to the new army, but before the proclamation came to hand, we had hoisted the Union flag, in compliment to the United Colonies. But behold, it was received in Boston as a token of the deep impression the speech had made upon us, and as a signal of submission. So we hear by a person out of Boston last night. By this time I presume they begin to think it strange that we have not made a formal surrender of our lines.'

"The flag bore the device of the English Union, which is composed of the cross of St. George, to denote England, and St. Andrew's cross, in the form of an X, to denote Scotland. It must be remembered that at this time the American Congress had not declared their independence, and that even yet the Americans proffered their warmest loyalty to British justice, when it should redress their grievances."





## CHARLES DARWIN ELLIOT.

## FAMILY HISTORY.\*

Charles Darwin Elliot, son of Joseph and Zenora (Tucker) Elliot, was born in Foxboro, Mass., June 20, 1837.

Among Mr. Elliot's ancestors were Major Eleazer Lawrence, Lieutenant Eleazer Lawrence, Captain Jonathan Wade, Lieutenant Nicholas White, Samuel Scripture, Marshal-General Edward Mitchelson, Marshal-General John Green, John Nutting, Zachariah Hicks, and Thomas Eliot, all soldiers in the King Philip's or other Colonial wars; also, Ensign John Whitman and Samuel Champney, soldiers in the King Philip's war, and deputies to the general court; also, Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, of Ipswich, Ruling Elder Richard Champney, of Cambridge, and William Pitt, high sheriff of Bristol, Eng.

Thomas Eliot, above mentioned, was admitted a freeman of Swansea, Mass., February 22, 1669, and became a member of the Baptist church under Rev. John Myles; he was one of the proprietors of Taunton North Purchase. Of his ancestry no record has been found. He died in Rehoboth, Mass., May 23, 1700, and his wife Jane, whom he probably married about 1676 or 1677, died in Taunton, Mass., November 9, 1689. They had five children: Abigaile, Thomas, Jr., Joseph, Elizabeth, and Benjamin. Thomas, Sr., was a corporal in Captain William Turner's company in King Philip's war, in 1675 and 1676; his sword, gun, and ammunition are mentioned in the inventory of his estate. Joseph, his son, was born in Taunton March 2, 1684, and died April 21, 1752. He married, July 22, 1710, Hannah White, daughter of John White; she died March 5, 1775, aged ninety-two years. Their children were: Joseph, Jr., John, Hannah, Samuel, Nehemiah, Abigail, and Ebenezer. Nehemiah, son of Joseph, Sr., was born March 8, 1719, and died December 8, 1802; he was at one time treasurer of Norton North Precinct; he married, September 23, 1747, Mercy White, daughter of Lieutenant Nicholas White, of Norton; she was born July

---

\*From the latest History of Middlesex County.





7, 1723, and died May 8, 1780. Their children were: Joseph, Nehemiah, Jr., Jacob, and Mercy.

Joseph, son of Nehemiah, Sr., was born in Norton June 25, 1749; he married, May 7, 1773, Joanna Morse, daughter of Elisha Morse; she was born September 17, 1751, and died December 6, 1837. Joseph Eliot was a minute-man of the Revolution, and marched at the Lexington alarm, April 20, 1775, for Boston; he served through the siege of Boston and, re-enlisting, through the campaign of New York and New Jersey under General Washington, and as corporal in the Saratoga campaign under General Gates; he died of disease while in the service, December 15, 1777. C. D. Elliot had his powder horn, canteen, and bayonet, and his letters to his wife while he was in the army. The children of Joseph and Joanna (Morse) Eliot were: Joel and Hannah. Joel was born August 30, 1775, and died at Foxboro, Mass., July 23, 1864; his wife, Mary Murray (Flagg) Elliot, was born in Cambridge July 14, 1782, and died in Foxboro January 23, 1865; she was daughter of Timothy and Sarah (Hicks) Flagg, and granddaughter of John Hicks, a member of the Boston Tea Party, and one of the Cambridge minute-men "who fell in defence of the liberty of the people, April 19, 1775," in whose memory the city of Cambridge has erected a monument in the old historic burying ground near Harvard Square, where they are buried. A tablet on Massachusetts Avenue marks the spot where John Hicks and three other patriots were killed by the flank guard of the British. Joel Elliot lived for many years in Cambridge, having a store near Harvard Square; he was at one time a member of the Cambridge fire department. In 1816 he moved to Foxboro, Mass., where he became a prosperous farmer; it was he who changed the spelling of the family name from Eliot to its present form. The children of Joel and Mary M. were: Mary Joanna, Joseph, Sarah Elizabeth, Caroline, Charles Edwin, Hannah, Timothy, Joel Augustus, and Nancy Maria.

Joseph, son of Joel and Mary M. (Flagg) Elliot, and father of Charles D. Elliot, was born in Cambridge, near Harvard





Square, January 1, 1807, and died in Somerville, Mass., July 7, 1874. He married, at Mt. Holly, Vt., December 24, 1835, Zenora, daughter of Stephen, Jr., and Sibil (Lawrence) Tucker. He built and settled in Foxboro Centre; he moved thence to Wrentham, from there to Malden, and in 1846 to Somerville, where for fifteen years he was station agent of the Prospect Street, now Union Square, station of the Fitchburg Railroad. He was at one time a member of the Somerville fire department, and in early life of the state militia; in his early days Joseph Elliot was much interested in politics, and was offered the postmastership of Foxboro, which he declined. He was identified with the old Democratic party in its contests with the Whigs, but became a Republican upon the organization of that party, and voted its ticket the remainder of his life. When a young man he became a Universalist; he was a zealous believer, and was one of the first members of the First Universalist Society in Somerville. He had a wide acquaintance with the leaders of the faith, among them Rev. Thomas Whittemore, editor of the *Trumpet*, who was a frequent visitor in his home.

Zenora (Tucker) Elliot, mother of Charles D. Elliot, was born in Mt. Holly, Vt., February 10, 1809, and died while on a visit to that place October 25, 1885, in the same room in which she was married. She was educated at Randolph Academy, Mass. In early life she was a Methodist, but later a Universalist; she was much interested in religious, literary, temperance, and soldiers' relief work. She was a respected member of several organizations. Her father, Stephen Tucker, Jr., was son of Captain Stephen and Abigail (Newell) Tucker. He was born in Charlestown, Mass., February 14, 1764, and died in Mt. Holly, Vt., December 26, 1828. During the burning of Charlestown, June 17, 1775, his mother fled with her children across "the neck" to Medford, constantly threatened with destruction from the British shot and shell which howled past their carriage. Stephen, Jr.'s, father was a sea captain, and was absent on a voyage at the time of the battle





of Bunker Hill. Stephen, Jr., married Sibil Lawrence, December 20, 1790, at Littleton, Mass. About the year 1795 or 1796 he removed to Mt. Holly, Vt., where he was for many years town clerk, selectman, and trial justice. Sibil Lawrence, daughter of Simon and Sibil (Robbins) Lawrence, was born June 10, 1770, and died April 16, 1813; in the Lawrence genealogy her ancestry is traced to John Lawrence, of Watertown, Mass., and thence by some back to Sir Robert Lawrence, of Ashton Hall, England, one of the crusaders, knighted in 1191 for bravery at the siege of Acre by Richard Coeur de Lion. Her grandfather, Lieutenant Eleazer Lawrence, was prominent in the Indian wars, and Simon, her father, was a soldier in the Revolution. The children of Joseph and Zenora Elliot were: Charles Darwin, Alfred Lawrence, and Mary Elvira.

---

## MEMOIR.

By J. Albert Holmes,

Member of the Boston Society of Civil Engineers.

Charles D. Elliot was educated in the schools of Foxboro, Wrentham, Malden, and in the old Milk Row School and the Prospect Hill Grammar School, Somerville, Mass., and in Henry Munroe's private school on Walnut Street, this city, which he left to enter, at the age of twelve years, the Hopkins Classical School, situated at that time on the south side of Main Street, now Massachusetts Avenue, a few rods westerly from Dana Street, Cambridge. This school was in existence from 1840 to 1854, and was supported from a fund left by Edward Hopkins, "for a grammar school in Cambridge." The teacher during Mr. Elliot's attendance was Edmund B. Whitman. Mr. Elliot was a member of the first entering class of the Somerville High School. The front portion of the present Somerville City Hall was built and dedicated April 28, 1852, as a high school. The school from 1852 to 1867 occupied the upper floor, and





afterwards, for a few years, the entire building. It was here during the years 1852 to 1855 that Mr. Elliot studied, first under Principal Robert Bickford, 1852-1854, then for a short period under a Mr. Hitchcock, who was in turn succeeded by Leonard Walker in 1855.

Mr. Elliot's engineering education began in the office of Stearns & Sanborn in June, 1855, and was the result of the interest in his mathematical ability shown by Daniel A. Sanborn, a member of the firm, and a near neighbor of the family. The other member was William B. Stearns, chief engineer, and afterward president of the Fitchburg Railroad. Mr. Sanborn was the founder of the Sanborn Insurance Map Company. The firm afterwards became Stearns & Stevenson, C. L. Stevenson being the new member. Mr. Elliot studied for his profession in this office until July, 1859, and most of that time was devoted to work on locations, bridges, and construction for the Fitchburg Railroad; but a part of his time was given to the city of Charlestown, on sewers and other city work, and to the Cambridge Water Works.

In July, 1859, he was appointed principal assistant under George L. Richardson, C. E., on the street surveys for the town of Somerville, and engaged in this work during 1859-1860. During 1860-1861 he was in partnership with T. Edward Ames, C. E., afterwards Brevet Major Thirty-sixth Massachusetts Volunteers, and some time city engineer of Charlestown. They had offices in Winnisimmet Square, Chelsea, and in Somerville. In 1862 he was in the office of J. G. Chase, C. E., later city engineer of Cambridge, and was most of the time engaged in running levels, establishing benches, and making plans for sewers; also in making preliminary studies and plans for the Charlestown Water Works. During the year he drew for General Henry L. Abbot, of Cambridge, a plan of the siege of Yorktown, Va., from notes by General Abbot. The execution of the plan so pleased the general that he procured for Mr. Elliot an appointment from the War Department as Assistant





Topographical Engineer. (See next paper for Mr. Elliot's war record.)

In January, 1865, Mr. Elliot removed to Cambridge, Mass., and entered the office of William S. Barbour. During the year he was engaged in making railroad surveys from the limestone quarries to the lime kilns at Rockland, Me.

During 1866 and 1867 he was engaged in the manufacture of paper collars and cuffs, for which much of the machinery used was either invented or improved by Mr. Elliot, and all the patterns and designs used were his own. He was possessed of considerable inventive genius. Besides the machinery previously mentioned, he planned and made a working model for a lawn mower. This was previous to the Civil War, and long before this useful machine was known to commerce. Another of his practical ideas which antedated considerably its actual adoption by the War Department, was the use of plate armor for ships. He invented, shortly before the introduction of ironclads, a device for drawing copper bolts from ships so as to preserve the bolts; this device was patented. Still another practical idea of which he talked, as early as 1869 or 1870, was that of perforated pipes to be built into walls and partitions, and to be connected with the hose in case of fire. A patent for some such device has since been granted.

Mr. Elliot removed in the spring of 1867 to Brookline, and in the autumn of the same year to Newton Centre, Mass. In 1868 he was in the office of J. F. Fuller, engineer for the Boston Water Power Company, where he was engaged upon sewers and other engineering work in the Back Bay. He formed a partnership in 1869 with William A. Mason, C. E., of Cambridge, and during 1869-'70 was engaged in general engineering, street and land improvement, and the construction of the famous Beacon Trotting Park in Allston, now occupied by the Boston & Albany Railroad roundhouse and yards.

In April, 1870, he removed from Newton Centre to Cambridgeport, and in December of the same year returned to Somerville, where he opened an office in the newly-constructed





Pythian Block, Union Square. It was at this time, when asked by Ira Hill, the owner of the block, whom he would suggest as an occupant for the only remaining office in the building, that Mr. Elliot proposed that a newspaper be started, and upon this suggestion the Somerville Journal was launched. Previous to and during the winter of 1870-1871 he attended afternoon and evening lectures on chemistry, and engaged in laboratory work in mechanical and mining engineering, at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology.

During 1871-1872 he was chief engineer of the Arlington Water Works, and in 1872 was elected the first city engineer of the newly-incorporated city of Somerville. In 1873 he was engaged in private practice, and employed by Middlesex County in the widening of Somerville Avenue and the re-location of the horse railroad from the side to the centre of the avenue, and the adjustment of the damages incurred by the widening. He was re-appointed city engineer in 1874 and 1875. Among the important engineering works carried on under Mr. Elliot as city engineer were the construction of the newly-widened Somerville Avenue, the construction of the Somerville part of the sewerage system for abolishing the Miller's River nuisance, which involved the construction of an eight-foot sewer in Somerville Avenue and the filling of Miller's River by digging off the top of historic Prospect Hill, and the construction of Broadway Park.

On January 30, 1875, Mr. Elliot moved into a house which he had built for himself at 59 Oxford Street, Somerville. From 1876 to 1880, inclusive, he was engaged in general engineering, and as an expert in sanitary, hydraulic, and railroad work. During 1881 and 1882 he made surveys and plans for one of the numerous Cape Cod Canal schemes. Following this and until 1890 he was engaged in making insurance surveys in Boston and vicinity and in Lynn. In 1887 he was made agent for the estate of James C. Ayer, of Lowell, and in his capacity as an engineer made plans of, and sold for the estate, all of its land





in Somerville, amounting to seventy acres.\* In 1895-'96 he made for the Metropolitan Park Commission the surveys and plans for the Mystic Valley Parkway, from Winchester Centre to the Old Mystic Pumping Station at the western end of the city of Somerville, and performed for the same Commission some work in the Middlesex Fells Reservation. From 1887 till his death he was constantly engaged as a consulting engineer, and employed as an expert by railroads, municipalities, corporations, and private individuals, and in the adjustment of damages and awards, and the apprisement of real estate.

His activities covered a broad field, and his recommendations resulted in many public improvements. His was the first suggestion to extend the Mystic Valley Parkway from the Pumping Station near West Medford to the Old Powder House in Somerville, afterwards constructed by the city and called Powder House Boulevard. As engineer to the Cambridge Electric Light Company, 1902-'04, he made a request to the Charles River Basin Commission that a lock forty-five feet wide, with a depth of eighteen feet at low water, be constructed through the new dam at Craigie's Bridge, instead of one of less dimensions, which was done. He was deeply interested in the Cross-town boulevard through the eastern part of Somerville, to connect Middlesex Fells with the reservations south of Boston, and as chairman of a committee of the Somerville Board of Trade appeared many times before the legislative committee at the State House to advocate it, and finally succeeded in having a bill passed, which, however, was vetoed by the Governor for economic reasons.

Mr. Elliot was one of the founders of the Somerville Historical Society, of which he was president for three years. He took great pleasure in collecting ancient maps and manuscripts relating to American history, and particularly to Somerville.

---

\*This was bounded approximately by Highland Avenue, Cedar Street, the main line of the Lowell Railroad, and Willow Avenue.





No person was better informed on the history of this section than Mr. Elliot, and he prepared a brief history of the town and city in 1896.

Though we have a number of articles from his pen relating to engineering, he wrote largely on historical subjects. His writings show complete knowledge of his subject, and are altogether interesting. A partial list of his publications is as follows:—

#### ON ENGINEERING.

As city engineer of Somerville, he prepared the reports for the years 1872-1874-1875; "Clay Pits and Free Baths," editorial in Somerville Journal, 1877; "Pollution of the Water Supply," Somerville Journal, about 1888; "What Somerville Needs," about 1890; "Civil Engineering as a Vocation," October 28, 1893; "A Feasible Metropolitan Boulevard for Somerville," December 29, 1894; "Proposed Charles River Dam and the Commerce and Industries of Cambridge," 1902; "Request for a Wide and Deep Lock in Charles River Dam," 1904.

#### HISTORICAL PAPERS.

Between February 8 and August 9, 1890, he contributed to the Somerville Journal nine articles on the following subjects: "Revolutionary Landmarks"; "Aborigines"; "The First National Flag"; "Paul Revere's Ride and the March to Concord"; "British Retreat from Concord"; "Battle of Bunker Hill"; "Old Roads"; "Historic Tablets"; "Historic Somerville"; and, following these, "The Early History of Ten Hills Farm," Somerville Journal, November 8, 1890, and May 23, 1891; "Somerville in War Times," and "Early History of Somerville," Somerville Journal, Semi-Centennial Souvenir, March 3, 1892; a brief "History of Somerville," in "Somerville Past and Present," 1896; "The Somerville Historical Society," "Myles Standish and the Plymouth Explorers," "Governor John Winthrop and His Ten Hills Farm," "Somerville in the Revolution," all in Somerville Historical Society Souvenir, November 28-





December 3, 1898; Genealogical Pamphlet, "Charles Darwin Elliot-Mary Elvira Elliot," 1901; obituaries, "Hon. Charles Hicks Saunders and Hon. Isaac Story," *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 1, July, 1902; "The Stinted Common," *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 1, October, 1902; inscription for Prospect Hill Tower, *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 2, January, 1904; "John Winthrop," *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 3, July, 1904; obituary, "Quincy Adams Vinal," *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 3, October, 1904; "The Blessing of the Bay," read before the Winter Hill Improvement Association, November 16, 1904; "The Old Royall House, Medford," *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 4, April, 1905; "Union Square and Its Neighborhood About the Year 1846," *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 6, April, 1907; "Somerville's Development and Progress," *Somerville Journal*, May 3, 1907; "Union Square Before the War," *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 6, July, 1907; "Port Hudson," *Historic Leaves*, Vol. 7, October, 1908; "Charles Tufts," read before the Somerville Historial Society November 24, 1908; "Sketch of George O. Brastow," *Somerville Journal*, December 13, 1908.

Mr. Elliot became a member of the Boston Society of Civil Engineers December 17, 1902. He was also a member of the American Society of Civil Engineers from August 7, 1872, to January 4, 1898; the National Geographic Society; Massachusetts Real Estate Exchange; Somerville Board of Trade, in which he took a very active part, and to which he devoted much of his valuable time. He was a member of the Men's Club of the First Universalist Church; the Winter Hill Improvement Association; the American Historical Association; New England Historic Genealogical Society; Sons of the American Revolution; and Delft Haven Colony of the Pilgrim Fathers.

Charles Darwin Elliot and Emily Jane, adopted daughter of Judge Nathaniel F. Hyer, were married in New Orleans, La., September 3, 1863. Five children were born of this union. He is survived by Mrs. Elliot; a brother, Alfred L. Elliot; a sister, Mary Elvira Elliot; and four children, Clara Zenora, Ella Flor-





ence, a professional genealogist, Charles Joseph, a civil engineer, and Adelaide Genevieve. The son was associated with his father in the engineering business, and has succeeded to his practice.

Mr. Elliot was very ill during the winter of 1907-'08. It was thought he had fully recovered from this attack, though his friends noticed a slight diminution of his accustomed vigor. His condition during the evening of November 24, while reading the paper on Charles Tufts before the Somerville Historical Society, caused great anxiety to his family and friends. He was much improved, however, on the following day, and went about his duties as usual.

On Saturday, December 5, Mr. Elliot spent the entire day out of doors. He must have become chilled by the exposure, for he was obliged to see his physician upon returning home, but was about the house on Sunday. During the evening he was taken seriously ill, and for a time it was thought he would not survive, and though he rallied from this attack and was in his usual cheerful frame of mind the following day, the possibility of his recovery was slight. From this time he did not leave his bed. There was another crisis on Wednesday, and the end came most peacefully the following morning. He died at 11 a. m. December 10, 1908. His death was due to heart trouble and other complications.

Services were held at his late residence, 59 Oxford Street, Somerville, on Sunday, December 13, and at the Winter Hill Universalist Church. The burial was at Woodlawn.

The Somerville Journal of December 18, 1908, gave a full account of the funeral services. The pastor, Rev. Francis A. Gray, paid a feeling tribute to the memory of the deceased, and again, at the memorial service, held October 31, 1909, spoke in eulogy of Mr. Elliot's many fine qualities as a citizen and a man.

Resolutions or letters of condolence were sent to Mr. Elliot's family from the Somerville Historical Society, the Somer-





ville Board of Trade, Willard C. Kinsley Post, No. 139, Department of Massachusetts, G. A. R., Somerville Woman's Relief Corps, Men's Club of the First Universalist Church, the Winter Hill Improvement Association, and the Haverhill Historical Society.

---

## MR. ELLIOT'S ARMY RECORD.

By Levi L. Hawes.

My acquaintance with our late friend and associate, Charles D. Elliot, dates from the birth of the Somerville Historical Society. From the acquaintance thus formed there naturally sprang a friendship that grew and strengthened, till the memory only remained.

I was quick to learn that we had, not a little, but much in common. In a heart-to-heart talk one day, friend Elliot made a remark that prompted me to tell him something of my feelings and emotions on that Sunday morning, December 14, 1862, as I stood on the parapet at Fort St. Philip and witnessed the passing of the fleet of transports bearing General Banks and his troops to New Orleans to relieve General Butler. Whereupon he very quietly and modestly said: "I accompanied that expedition." This was the first intimation I had of his connection with the Union Army. Needless to say, a fraternal feeling existed between us from that moment.

If from this point I quote freely from the History of the Nineteenth Army Corps, and from Mr. Elliot's paper on "The Siege of Port Hudson," read before the Somerville Historical Society, and printed in *Historic Leaves* for October, 1908, and from others, I trust you will hold me blameless.

The quality of the work of Mr. Elliot as an engineer and draftsman had become widely known, but the drawing of a plan of the siege of Yorktown, Va., from notes of General Henry L. Abbot, of Cambridge, was so finely executed that, in order to express his appreciation of the work, General Abbot procured for Mr. Elliot an appointment from the War Department as Assistant Topographical Engineer.





Leaving the virtues of the turkey to be discussed by others, Mr. Elliot, in his young, patriotic, and vigorous manhood, on the day before Thanksgiving took train for New York, and on December 4, 1862, embarked on the transport *North Star* with General Banks' headquarters staff, Nineteenth Army Corps, for the Department of the Gulf.

Upon arriving at New Orleans, December 14, 1862, General Banks took command December 15, although formal orders were not issued till December 17. So promptly did General Banks act that on December 16 General Grover's expedition got under way for Baton Rouge, and arrived there on December 17. The new staff of the department included Major David C. Houston, Chief Engineer, and Captain Henry L. Abbot, Chief of Topographical Engineers; the latter would therefore be regarded as Mr. Elliot's immediate commander. It appears from his paper on Port Hudson that Mr. Elliot commenced immediately to practice one branch of his profession, for he says that on January 14, 1863, he completed a detailed map of the Mississippi River from New Orleans to about thirty miles above Vicksburg—a piece of professional work that did him great credit. And now begins the first forward movement of the Nineteenth Army Corps in which Mr. Elliot participated. "By March 7, leaving T. W. Sherman to cover New Orleans, and Weitzel to hold strongly La Fourche, Banks had a marching column composed of Augur's, Emory's, and Grover's divisions, 15,000 strong. On March 9 tents were struck, to be pitched no more for five hard months." The troops proceeded to Baton Rouge, and there awaited the arrival of the delayed fleet. On March 12, all having arrived, General Banks for the first time reviewed his army. On March 13 and the day following the army marched to the rear of Port Hudson. Here the engineers found plenty of work in store for them, for the maps were more imperfect than usual; even the road by which the guns were to have gone into battery did not exist! Admiral Farragut's moving a portion of his fleet above Port Hudson before the hour agreed upon, and his signal either





not heard or not reported, placed General Banks in an awkward predicament. Briefly, the expedition was abandoned, and Banks returned to Baton Rouge, and then to New Orleans. On April 8 Mr. Elliot again moved with headquarters to Brashear, and for the next six weeks Banks, with Emory, Grover, and Weitzel, was skirmishing and fighting along the bayous of western Louisiana to the Red River. The two divisions into which the army had now been divided were commanded by Generals Banks and Grover, respectively. On April 12 Banks crossed to Berwick City, and here Mr. Elliot failed to connect with his horse and equipments, which mishap afforded him the opportunity of marching on foot for thirty miles, meanwhile participating in the capture of Fort Bisland, so called, on Bayou Teche. This was on April 13 and 14.

Here Banks ran up against Taylor's troops strongly entrenched on both banks of the Teche, while our troops were astride of it. After a stiff fight of two days Taylor made good his retreat at night, because Grover was so delayed in his march that he failed to get in Taylor's rear, as planned, and block his line of retreat. Brushing aside or pushing forward the Confederates, Banks reached Opelousas, "which," Mr. Elliot writes, "is one of the cleanest and prettiest towns in Louisiana. Here I rode in with our cavalry, and under orders seized and put a guard over the State Land Office, in which I found not only innumerable plans of that part of Louisiana, but also many arms stored under heaps of old papers and rubbish, among them the sword of the Confederate Colonel Riley, who had been killed in a recent engagement, and also the commission of another officer in the rebel army. Under instructions, I turned over all these trophies to our Provost Marshal. Soon after entering the town, I rode out to the outskirts, and narrowly escaped capture by an ambuscade in the woods near by, being warned by a slave to turn quickly, as the horsemen whom I was riding out to meet in the thick woods were rebels, not Union men, as I had supposed.

"On the march to Alexandria (reached about May 8) I was





taken sick with congestion of the lungs, or pleuro-pneumonia, and given clearly to understand that this was my last march; but, thanks to pleasant weather and several days' rest, I was soon convalescent. Reconnaissances by the Engineer Corps showed that there were fairly good roads nearly to the Mississippi; so orders were given, and the army commenced its march down the Red River. I, being on the invalid list, was carried down by boat . . . to Bayou Sara (May 21), several miles north of Port Hudson. From Bayou Sara we marched on the night of May 21 to the battlefield of Plains Store, arriving at 2 o'clock in the morning of May 22. I was carried in an ambulance. Augur had been attacked by the Confederates on May 21, but had driven them back behind their works with considerable loss. Banks' forces from the North now joined Augur's from the South, and the investment of Port Hudson was complete." On what date Mr. Elliot reported for duty I find no record, but it is well known that he rendered efficient service throughout the siege. He writes: "New batteries were erected, zigzags or approaches commenced, heavy guns borrowed from the Navy mounted, mines planned, and everything gave promise of a long and tedious siege. Our saps and approaches were run towards the rebel works to within a very short distance, and a mine was nearly completed and ready for its powder. This was done under the supervision of the Nineteenth Army Corps Staff of Engineers, who suffered severely at Port Hudson, three being killed and one wounded, out of less than a dozen of us in all." The mine was not exploded.

Port Hudson unconditionally surrendered July 8, 1863. From this date till July 26 Mr. Elliot had charge of the engineer's office, preparing meanwhile the official plan of the siege. This, too, was the work of an expert. In September he accompanied General Franklin on the Sabine Pass expedition. In October he took part in the second expedition under Franklin in the Teche district. This, also, was abandoned. Returning to New Orleans, he was stricken with malarial fever. For a short time in November he was detailed for service at Fort





Butler, and then to the Department of West Florida, under General Asboth, in December. Early in 1864 he was appointed engineer officer to General Grover in a proposed campaign against Mobile, where he had charge of construction of field fortifications in East Louisiana, for which he received from General Grover a personal letter commending him for his faithful and efficient service in designing and constructing the fortifications at Madisonville, on the east shore of Lake Pontchartrain. In the midst of this work the Red River campaign was entered upon, and Mr. Elliot was assigned to duty in this newly-formed army. He participated in all the fortunes and misfortunes of this campaign till Alexandria, on the Red River, was reached, when he was brought to a sudden halt by his not-to-be-avoided enemy, malarial fever, which entirely incapacitated him for further service in the Union Army.

Having executed the work in the army to which Providence had called him to the entire satisfaction of his commanding officers, Mr. Elliot, as a citizen engineer, received his honorable discharge from the Union service and returned to his Massachusetts home in April, 1864.

I have tried to give, though briefly and imperfectly, a chronological account of our late associate's army service. Let me add that commanding officers in the army have their own peculiar methods of showing their appreciation of the value of a man. Twice, at least, Mr. Elliot received special mention for meritorious service in the field, and was twice urged to accept a commission, both of which commissions he modestly declined to accept, the one act of his long and eminently useful life I deeply regret, because thereby he rendered himself ineligible to membership in the Grand Army of the Republic, for the comrades of which order he said and did so much! Nevertheless, for what he was and for what he did we revere his memory. Having conscientiously given the best there was in him to our common country in its time of dire necessity, he was satisfied to retire from the service with an honorable discharge as a citizen of this Grand Republic.





## ADDRESS OF WILLIAM H. ARMSTRONG AT MEMORIAL SERVICE OCTOBER 31, 1909.

Mr. Chairman, Ladies and Gentlemen: If I was to change my business or occupation, I would want to be a civil engineer. The study and education necessary to fit one for that work, the right sighting and accurate calculation, are the very things needed to start a man on his way for the business of life, be it what it may. George Washington was a surveyor, or civil engineer. He sighted a path through the trackless forest, set the corner-stones of towns, and ran the lines of estates in Virginia which stand to-day undisputed. The victorious army of the great Napoleon came to the bank of a river, and there found for the first time in all Europe something to halt their onward march. Calling his engineer, Napoleon said: "Tell me the distance across this stream." "Sire," said the engineer, "I cannot. I know no way by which it can be measured." "Tell me the distance across this river within one hour, or my corps will be without one of its engineers." Then came in play the training of the man in sighting and calculating distances. He fixed his eye on the opposite bank, where the water touched the shore; he pulled the visor of his cap down until it just met the edge of his view, and then, turning around, he sighted down the bank on which he stood to a certain mark. He paced this distance, reported his findings, and that night the army camped on the farther side of the river.

There are men with certain education and training whom we cannot do without; they are needed. No country can do without them, no army can do without them, no state, city, or town but must have its surveyor, or engineer.

Somerville is a city most prosperous and beautiful. It is a queen among the cities and towns of our glorious Commonwealth, and our friend had much to do with its beauty and prosperity. We were very fortunate in having for our first engineer Charles D. Elliot. He knew, as no one else could, the lay of the land, with its hills and its valleys. His trained eye saw





just how to convert its many hillsides, with their lines of beauty, into the city that we are now so proud of.

Mr. Elliot came to Somerville when he was nine years old. He was educated in our schools and in the Hopkins Classical at Cambridge. He then took up civil engineering, a calling suited to his taste and ability. In 1872-4-5 he was our city engineer. Then began the laying out of our streets with all the arteries of sewers, pipes, and wires which run through them. His eye sighted, his mind and cunning hand made the plans and established the lines which these should follow. Being brought into close touch with all our city's interests, he came to feel it a part of himself, for here he spent his early life, here he had his home, his family, his loved ones; his all was in Somerville.

I am to speak of the Board of Trade and Mr. Elliot's connection with it. The Board of Trade of our city is established, as it should be in every city, with one object in view, and that is to advance the interests of the community in every way possible. You are not surprised when I tell you that Mr. Elliot became a member of the Board at once, and put himself into the work of helping Somerville through its agencies.

The Board was organized in March, 1899; Mr. Elliot joined it in May. He had held the office of vice-president, was a member of several standing committees at different periods, and was a member of most of the special committees. I will name only a few of the more important ones, as those on boulevards, grade crossings, soldiers' monuments, rivers and harbors.

As a member of the boulevard committee, he saw the need of a connection, through Somerville, of the beautiful parks, driveways, and beaches on the north and east with the boulevards, parks, and fenway on the south and west of Boston. With our committee he worked earnestly, and if one of our governors had not used the veto power, Mr. Elliot and his friends would have seen the work completed with success, and we would now have a cross-town boulevard all our own.

As a member of the grade crossing committee, he was





deeply interested in the change of dangerous crossings at grade, and worked hard with some of us to do away with it, especially on the Fitchburg branch of the Boston & Maine Railroad, at Somerville Avenue, Medford Street, Webster Avenue, Park Street, etc. I wish he could see the advancement now made at Somerville Avenue. The construction has progressed so far that in a few weeks, we are told, we shall be able to cross in safety and without delays.

During the Civil War Mr. Elliot's services were promptly given to the country, and he did good and faithful work as a civil engineer in that branch of the service. His modesty alone kept him from having an officer's title attached to his name. On the special committee of our board for a memorial to our soldiers and sailors he did good work; his heart was in it. We now have the monument on our historic hilltop,—a work of art that will be a reminder for all time of love and sacrifice, home and country.

Rivers and harbors. You smile when our rivers and harbors are mentioned, we have so little of them. But Mr. Elliot had a vision of what might be done with our Mystic River front, and the picture of its beauty, as he would have it, was stamped upon his mind, and he often talked of it to his friends.

On several occasions he delivered interesting and valuable addresses before the Board. He was an active participant in our debates, a most constant attendant; he enjoyed his membership with us, and we enjoyed him.

On his death suitable resolutions were adopted, and our members attended his funeral services. We miss him from our membership, and as I think of it to-day, I do not know where we are to find one to fill his place. I knew him so well; he was so companionable and entertaining; he talked easily and well, was always a gentleman, clean and true. He has gone home a little while before us. We will, I know, meet again, and we shall know each other there, and in that City, in that better Country, I want him for a neighbor, I want to live on the same street with him.





When the great Phillips Brooks lay dead in the beautiful cathedral in yonder proud city, a great number came to pay their last respects to his memory: the young and old, rich and poor, learned and ignorant, from nation, state, and city, all anxious to take one last look at the face that was so dear to all. In the shadow of the doorway waited a poor old woman, with her shawl drawn closely about her. At last she found her way to the side of him who had been her friend. Taking from the folds of her garment a little flower, she dropped it with her tears into the casket, and then went her way. I want to put one little flower for myself and for the Board of Trade, that I represent, upon the memorial you are to-day building to the memory of our friend, Charles D. Elliot.

---

### ADDRESS OF F. M. HAWES AT MEMORIAL SERVICE

OCTOBER 31, 1909.

My personal relations with Charles D. Elliot were not of many years' standing. We were brought together, especially, as members and fellow-workers of the Somerville Historical Society. I can say I never came away from an interview with him without feeling I had learned something of historical interest; without being enriched by his estimate of men, or his wide knowledge of affairs.

Our tastes along historical lines and our views of life I found to be so congenial that I rejoiced greatly to have found in such a kindred spirit one who, by his enthusiasm and his fuller grasp of subjects, could lead me farther on the road which I had chosen. We all miss his companionship and cheer, and his loss to this Society is irreparable.

In selecting from the copious notes supplied me by the family, I may fail to touch upon all the salient features of his life, although even the minutest details have proved interesting to me.

A few words in relation to his boyhood. He used to like to tell that he was born the same day Victoria became Queen





of England (June 20, 1837). Being an only child for nearly ten years may have tended to make him sober-minded and serious beyond his years. His mother wished him to be a minister, and he was offered a scholarship in Tufts College when he was about twenty, but he declined, as he did not feel that he was fitted for that profession. But some very precocious religious meditations, written at the age of eight, show that, for a time, at least, his mother had very fertile ground to work upon. He had a fondness for standing on the church steps near his home and preaching, with any book he could get hold of for a Bible. One day, when he was much younger than eight, he took his father's new dictionary to preach from, but, becoming interested in something else, he left the book on the steps, where he forgot all about it. A long rain followed, much to the damage of the dictionary.

He could be as mischievous as other children, and once gave the teacher of the first school he attended so much trouble that she shut him up in the kindling closet, and, forgetting all about him, was locking up to go home for the night, when his mother came to look for him, as it was past the hour for his return. The frightened teacher hastened to open the door, and there he lay, fast asleep.

His first public speech before any considerable audience was on the occasion of his first attendance at church. As he became restless, he was allowed to stand up on the pew seat, and was given his mother's fan. Soon, loud enough to be plainly heard, and holding up the fan, he said: "See, mamma, I make it into two pieces!"

When very small, he was taken on a long drive to visit relatives in Vermont. Seeing a squirrel run across the road, he was sure it must be a bear, and wanted his father to get him a gun to shoot it with. When older grown he was very fond of a gun, and of shooting at a target, and became a very good marksman. As a young man he was athletic. He attended the gymnasium of Dr. Winship, and was once able to lift a weight of 1,000 pounds.





At school he was generally called on when visitors were present to "speak his pieces" for their edification. It was the custom then for the boys to learn a selection of their own choosing, and to speak every Friday afternoon. At one time the teacher complained that the selections were too short. Accordingly, several of the boys arranged to have very long ones. Young Elliot committed to memory twenty pages of Scott's "Marmion," and when his turn came, got as far, we will say, as the eighteenth, when the teacher asked how much longer he was going to speak, as there were several others to be heard from, and he did not wish to stay all night. There were no further objections to short selections after that.

When in his teens, he belonged to several debating clubs, and was well versed in Cushing's Manual. At the age of sixteen, or thereabouts, he was Secretary of the Cambridge Library Association, most of whose members were men of mature years. He was connected with the Franklin Literary Association before he was twenty, and at one time was its secretary. A Shakespeare Club of four members used to vie with each other to see who could produce the greatest volume of sound, "trying," as he used to say, "to raise the roof with their oratory."

From a lad Mr. Elliot was fond of using tools. The Fitchburg Railroad had machine and carpenter shops near Union Square then, and he was always welcomed by the men and allowed to use any tools which he wished. Among other things, he made the patterns and castings for a turning lathe, which he kept by him for many years.

When a small boy, he drew excellent maps and could letter them well, being self-taught. This probably led to his entering the engineer office of Mr. Stearns when he was eighteen, at the close of his high school course. At school he had taken lessons in drawing, and delighted in sketching. Several of his sketches, which are still preserved, show considerable artistic ability and much care and skill. The same could be said of his engineering plans and charts, and of his maps. The delicate





handiwork of some of these, not a few of which, reduced in size, have appeared in historical works, makes them veritable works of art.

But Mr. Elliot's artistic ability was not limited to drawing and sketching; he often wrote poetry, especially in his earlier years. Some of these efforts possessed considerable merit, and gave evidence of a delicacy of feeling and a fineness of touch. He was so modest, however, that he could not be prevailed upon to submit his poems for publication, and rarely showed them to any but members of the family. For the Good Templars, a temperance organization in which he was early interested, he wrote at least one occasional poem, entitled "The Templars."

Mr. Elliot was so fond of fun that rhyming squibs flowed from his pen without effort. The few that have been preserved serve to illustrate an agreeable side of his nature.

We should not do full justice to our subject, now that we are brought to this point of view, if we failed to speak of Mr. Elliot's social nature. It is no disparagement of a man to say that he is known to many of his friends and hailed by them by his Christian name. Mr. Elliot was fond of good company, and his fund of stories gave him an easy entrance to the inner circle. He loved a joke hugely, as long as it was a pleasant one, but he did not approve of those made at the expense of some one's feelings. Another trait, known to those who associated with him, was his natural refinement. For anything bordering on coarseness or vulgarity he felt only abhorrence and contempt.

A mind as active as Mr. Elliot's could not fail to be possessed of considerable originality and imagination. New ideas were constantly suggesting themselves, new projects were ever urging to some untried effort. These fields were varied and wide, and related not only to his profession, but to business enterprises of various kinds. Often they were schemes for improving existing conditions or advancing the public welfare; specific improvements in politics and government. He had many subjects stored away for magazine articles, and would





have liked, with a time of leisure, to enter the lecture field. These topics afforded interesting subjects for conversation when he met with a congenial friend. Many of these were drawn from history, but not all.

The range of his interests was wide, but, as those who knew him well need not be told, his chief interests, aside from his profession, were connected with the subjects of history and the public welfare. His public spirit and keen insight into human needs were dominating features of his character. He was interested in great public movements for the improvement of the race in all quarters and among all conditions of men. Characterized by sincerity of purpose and disinterestedness, he advocated measures from conviction, and always acted from principle, not for effect or for popularity. He was a man of the highest integrity. In connection with his devotion to historical matters, we ought to mention his fondness for looking over old records. He rarely went on a vacation without choosing some place where there were records which he wished to consult, and a large part of a holiday was spent over them. His love of genealogical research began early, and continued to the very end.

As a recreation, and for refreshment after the toils of the day, Mr. Elliot found time for reading and keeping abreast of the times. His literary menu was extensive, and besides history and biography, included travels, scientific researches, archaeological expeditions, a little fiction, and much poetry. He loved to read poetry aloud. Sometimes he would read a serious poem in comic fashion, to create a laugh. "The last time was on Thanksgiving night, when surrounded by his family. He had been poorly all day. Just as he was about to retire for the night, he was urged to give a reading, some one saying 'it would not seem like Thanksgiving without it.' He turned back and read for an hour in his happiest vein, winding up with Grey's 'Elegy,' read in such an amusing way as quite to change its character, and leave every one laughing. Two weeks later and he was gone, never to return."





In connection with his reading, we ought to mention that he was a great admirer of the first Napoleon, and collected all the books he could find about him.

Mr. Elliot was a collector in the real sense of the word. He loved books, especially old books, and was fond of attending book auctions. His library numbers several thousand volumes, largely, but by no means wholly, scientific and historical. Among his treasures of a purely literary character is a *de luxe* edition of Longfellow, who was perhaps his favorite poet. One volume which he loved to exhibit to those who cared for such things was printed in 1492. He was greatly interested in Arctic explorations, and owned the works of some of the earlier explorers in those fields. Mr. Elliot was a high authority on certain kinds of books, especially on Americana. He knew the best authorities, the excellencies and weaknesses of well-known writers, as well as those of lesser note. He knew about the different editions of authors and their market value.

Besides his library, he had an interesting collection of autographs, some of which were attached to documents of historic value. Among his autographs were the signatures of several signers of the Declaration of Independence, that of George Washington, and several other Presidents. He was particularly pleased to secure an original Revolutionary company's pay-warrant, bearing the signature of General William Heath and his under officer, Captain Thomas Urann (one of Mrs. Elliot's ancestors).

At one time Mr. Elliot had a valuable collection of postage stamps; he also possessed rare coins of all nations, and a relic collection which included Indian arrow-heads (one of which was found on his own home lot), a Revolutionary cannon ball, South Sea Island weapons, pistols once owned by Ethan Allen, etc. In connection with the study of geology, he once gathered together a very creditable cabinet of minerals.

He always placed a high value on such heirlooms as chanced to come to his branch of the family, whether it were





furniture, china, or other things. Like Mr. Hardcastle, he loved everything old. Among these heirlooms was a New England Primer, used by his grandfather, Joel Elliot, in 1784 or thereabouts.

Our friend was greatly interested in the law, and was well versed in some of its points. He was told more than once by men of the legal profession that, with a little study, he might easily be admitted to the bar. More than that, he was an authority on certain branches of the law.

Upon the legal aspects of his professional endeavor he always entered with a keen zest, whether called upon as an expert witness, or to negotiate, out of court, settlements for damages to estates. Because of his interest in the success of his clients, his keen perception of the drift of the opposing counsel's attack, and his coolness on the witness stand, his services were highly valued, and were not uncommonly sought afterwards by the lawyer or corporation against whom he had happened to be called. Many times he was sought by the other side of the same case, after he had engaged himself to the first comer. On one occasion it was a question of certain rights between a railroad and a town. (The case did not come into the courts.) At a preliminary meeting the railroad's counsel offered to give the town a quit-claim deed of the railroad's rights. Mr. Elliot, who was engaged for the town, said: "Sir, I will give you a quit-claim deed of the whole X Y Z railroad system." Asked what he meant, he replied: "I will release to you all my right in the railroad. That is all a 'quit-claim' means."

As witness for the Fitchburg Railroad in an accident case, at a crossing where there were fully 600 yards of clear track visible on either side of the station, he was asked by counsel for the plaintiff: "Do you mean to tell this jury that this man could have seen that train coming?" Using a legal phrase which carries great weight, Mr. Elliot replied: "Yes, I think he could have done so by using 'due care.'"

This reply did not please the opposition counsel, who thundered: "Does the Fitchburg Railroad *pay* you for *manufactur-*





*ing* testimony?" "Why, they always have paid my bills heretofore; I presume they will not refuse this time," was the easy reply, and the innocent smile which accompanied it caused mirth in the court room.

Mr. Elliot's services were occasionally called for in the appraising of estates. Because of the large number of plans which he had made of our city lots, and his knowledge of their history, a knowledge which went back in many instances to the days of the "Stinted Commons," and the first grants, no one had a better standard of land values. The secret of his knowledge in this, as well as in other fields, lay not alone in his excellent memory, but in the painstaking and accurate methods by which he had come at the knowledge. Whatever he was engaged upon, he always made thoroughness and accuracy the main objects. He used to say that he wanted whatever he did to be done right. Accordingly, he was never satisfied until he obtained the perfect result.

It will not be denied, I think, that Mr. Elliot lacked self-appreciation, and often set too light a value on his own abilities. Partly for this reason, and partly because he was too ready to trust some of those he dealt with, other people often reaped the benefit of his efforts. One of his best traits was his desire to think the best of his fellow-men.

He was always ready to take time, even when very busy with important affairs, to help people who came for information or advice; he thus gave freely what had cost him much time and effort. People were constantly seeking such help, not merely his friends, but sometimes entire strangers. He has been known to write for people articles or speeches which of course passed as their own compositions. Sometimes he revised other people's writings, often an entire book, but always as an accommodation. He never asked nor would he have accepted remuneration for such work. Not infrequently he assisted men professionally.

Too modest to place a sufficiently high value on his own services and experiences, he put off too long making a record





of much that he had learned, much that was well worth preserving, and which no one else can reproduce. When urged to write his war experiences, he would say: "Oh, nobody will be interested in them." He was much surprised by the great attention which his articles on "The History of Somerville" received when they appeared in the Somerville Journal some years ago.

The following letter from Mrs. Elliot will serve to throw light on Mr. Elliott's life in Louisiana. As a description of a wedding journey, it deserves to be copyrighted:—

"My parents emigrated to Wisconsin Territory in 1836 from New England. Mr. Hyer was made a judge of probate, and was a member of the State Constitutional Convention. His health demanding a warmer climate, he moved to St. Louis, Mo., in 1847 or 1848, and in 1854-5 to Texas. The breaking out of the Civil War found us in Louisiana, about sixty miles north of New Orleans, where Judge Hyer's too outspoken Union sentiments made him a 'marked man' by the Rebels. He had many friends, however, who aided him on several occasions when plots were laid against him. In the fall of 1862 we closed up our home, determined to reach New Orleans, then in control of the Union Army. At Madisonville, a small town near Lake Ponchartrain, we waited three weeks for a chance to cross to the city. Finally a small schooner loaded with charcoal arrived, which had received a permit from Richmond to cross, as they wished to send over some spies. By bribing the corporal of the Rebel guard to send off his men an hour early, we got our chance to go on board before daylight, and before dark the same day reached the entrance to the canal leading up to New Orleans. Before we were allowed to land we had to take an oath of allegiance to the United States, although we were Unionists.

"Judge Hyer went immediately to General Butler and showed him his plans of Eastern Louisiana, where we had been residing. Judge Hyer had been obliged to give up practicing law on account of his health, and had gone into surveying and





engineering. General Butler appointed Mr. Hyer on his Engineering staff. When General Banks superseded General Butler in the command of New Orleans, December, 1862, Mr. Elliot and Judge Hyer met in the Engineering Department, and Judge Hyer invited Mr. Elliot and several other young men to his home to introduce them to the Union people of the city, of whom there were many.

"September 3, 1863, Mr. Elliot and myself were married. During the ceremony an orderly was seen coming up the aisle of the church, making straight for us. He would have interrupted the ceremony to deliver his orders, if he had not been intercepted by Judge Hyer, who took the order, with the assurance that he would give it to Mr. Elliot himself. It proved to be an order to prepare immediately to join an expedition under General Franklin, who was then his engineer officer, to a destination unknown, which sailed the next day, and expected to be gone six months or more.

"They sailed up Sabine River, the boundary between Texas and Louisiana, were beaten back by a small fort, aided by the oyster banks in the river, on which two of our gunboats got aground under the guns of the fort. General Franklin's force, scattered and demoralized, returned to New Orleans, after an absence of eight days, but the headquarters ship, the Suffolk, on which Mr. Elliot was, was run into by another ship in the darkness during the retreat. The lights were out to prevent the Rebels from pursuing them with 'cotton clad' boats. The two ships lay side by side, crashing into each other for some time before any one had sense enough to separate them. The wheel house on the Suffolk was crushed, and the boat was said to be sinking. Nearly all on board, including General Franklin and most of his staff, and the ship's officers and crew, jumped over into the other ship. Mr. Elliot said he could not see that the Suffolk settled any, and all who jumped over to the other ship were likely to be crushed between the two, as they crashed together every few minutes. Mr. Elliot and a few others, about a dozen in all, including the ship's engineer,





stayed on board, and reached New Orleans in safety after three days, during which time they endured much hardship and danger. They encountered a storm, and the ship was badly shattered, but they reached the shelter of the Mississippi River before the storm reached its height.

"This was Mr. Elliot's wedding journey, taken alone. About seven months later we came to Massachusetts, by way of the Gulf and Atlantic, as the Rebels still held the intervening territory."

The following will not be out of place here: Mrs. Elliot was born in Union, Rock county, Wis., November 23, 1843. She was a teacher in one of the grammar schools of New Orleans, and secretary of the Union Ladies' Soldiers' Aid Society of that city, of which her mother (Mrs. Hyer) was president. This was one of the first organizations of the kind in the Southern states. Mrs. Elliot's own father was David Ring, Jr., who was born in Sumner, Me., April 7, 1801, and died in Wisconsin in June, 1874. He married, June 24, 1824, Mary, daughter of John, Jr., and Mary (Urann) Spencer. She was born in Bangor, Me., in 1806, and died in Wisconsin October 13, 1846. Mr. and Mrs. Elliot were married by Rev. F. E. R. Chubbuck, post chaplain and officiating clergyman at Christ Church, New Orleans. This was a double wedding, the other couple being George Hay Brown, one of the photographers belonging to the Engineer Corps, and Miss Lizzie Sakaski, a friend of Mrs. Elliot.

The Somerville Historical Society was incorporated in 1898, and Mr. Elliot was the first president after incorporation, having served as a vice-president before that time from the formation of the Society. In 1898 the Society rented the Oliver Tufts House on Sycamore Street as its headquarters, and in the early winter of that year gave the Historical Festival, in connection with which a relic exhibition at their headquarters was a successful feature, and one in which Mr. Elliot was very active. He was also a leading spirit in a similar exhibition held at the Somerville High School in 1892, the year of the Semi-Centennial of the city.





It would be impossible to give full credit to Mr. Elliot's devotion to this Society. From its formation to the end of his busy life, we who were present at his last meeting with us can truly say that he was the father of this organization. Not only was he a cheerful giver of his valuable time when called to serve upon committees and as a member of the Council, but every member went away from a literary meeting feeling that the evening had been enriched when Mr. Elliot, as was his invariable custom, illuminated the subject in hand from his storehouse of historical information. Often he would bring from his collections at home books, maps, autographs, or pictures, many of them of unique value, to illustrate the topic of the evening. Then, too, by his ready wit, his fondness for making a pun, or his skill at repartee, he sent us all home with a smile or a laugh at what in him seemed so innate, so purely spontaneous. He was a type of the true genial gentleman. At times he was called before other historical societies to read some of his papers, and I well remember the keen pleasure these visits afforded him, and the luminous report he would bring home from a sister organization. A case in point occurred two seasons ago, when he was entertained at the magnificent old mansion, "The Buttonwoods," the home of the Haverhill Historical Society.

Perhaps no truer estimate of the man whose memory we love to cherish could be given than was twice expressed by the Somerville Journal, once of the living, July 28, 1905, and again on the occasion of Mr. Elliot's death, in its issue of December 11, 1908.

"To mention the name of Charles Darwin Elliot is to call attention to one of the most active and prominent residents of Somerville during the whole of its municipal career. For nearly sixty years he has known Somerville, and during almost all of that time he has been a resident of the town and city. . . . His life has been a busy one from his earliest youth. As a boy he could run a mile in five and one-quarter minutes. He did things then, and he can do them now, although he has com-





pleted his sixty-eighth year. In the fullness of years, he is still engaged in civil engineering, which has been his life work. His has been an experience equaled by few men in the profession."

And again at the time of Mr. Elliot's death: "His career was remarkable for its usefulness to the nation and to the community. No man in the city was more conversant with Somerville history, and this fund of general information was always at the disposal of the public. Geniality was characteristic of the kindly-natured man, who was most happy when among his friends, and his entertaining reminiscences were frequently interspersed with amusing stories and witty speeches. He had an intense interest in the public welfare. In the family circle he was a tender husband and father. His death deprives Somerville of one of its most upright citizens, whose achievements in his chosen profession, in the realm of history, and in his private life will preserve an honored memory. . . . Besides his public service as the first City Engineer, and in the various organizations in which he was an active member, he was easily first of all men in his knowledge of Somerville history. For years . . . his literary talent and much of his time were devoted to preparing papers and arranging documentary material that had to do with the early days of Somerville. With him goes much valuable and interesting historical information which can never be replaced. . . . He was public-spirited in the highest degree. He was the man at whose suggestion the Somerville Journal was established, and from the early days of the city until his death he was actively concerned with projects looking towards the betterment of the city. His presence will be missed in many companies. Kindly, cheerful, entertaining, and talented, a man of high integrity and spotless character, he leaves a whole city to sympathize with his bereaved family."





# INDEX

- Abbot, Captain Henry L., 65.  
 Abbott, General Henry L., 57, 64.  
 "Aborigines," 61.  
 Acere, Siege of, 56.  
 Adams, Cheree, 2.  
 Adams, Henry, 47.  
 Adams, Georgiana, 48.  
 Adams, William, 45.  
 Aldersey Street, 14.  
 Alewife Bridge, 42.  
 Alewife Brook, 34, 47.  
 Alewife Brook School, 41.  
 Alexandria, La., 66.  
 Alexandria, Va., 41.  
 Allen, Alfred, 47, 48.  
 Allen, Ethan, 77.  
 American Congress, The, 52.  
 American Historical Association, 62.  
 American Society of Civil Engineers, 62.  
 American Tube Works, 18.  
 Ames, T. Edward, 57.  
 Andersonville, 34, 37.  
 Annapolis, Md., 40.  
 Appalachian Mountain Club, The, 24.  
 Arlington Heights, Va., 41.  
 Arlington, Mass., 3, 41, 43, 46.  
 Arlington Water Works, 59.  
 Armstrong, William H., 69.  
 Army of the Potomac, 32.  
 Army Record, Charles D. Elliot, 64.  
 Ashby, Mass., 4.  
 Asboth, General, 68.  
 Ashton Hall, England, 56.  
 Augur, —, 65, 67.  
 Austin, Tex., 46.  
 Avon, Mass., 45.  
 Ayer, John C., 59.  
 Ayer, John F., 22.  
 Ayer, Mrs. John F., 20.  
 Ayer, Vashfi Eunice, 22.  
 Baldwin, Loammi, 45.  
 Baltimore, Md., 40.  
 Bangor, Me., 82.  
 Banks, General Nathaniel P., 64, 65, 66, 67, 81.  
 Barbour, William S., 58.  
 Bartlett's, 32.  
 Baton Rouge, 65, 66.  
 "Battle of Bunker Hill," 61.  
 Bayou Sara, 67.  
 Bayou Teche, 66.  
 Beacon Trotting Park, Allston, 58.  
 Bean, George W., 32.  
 Bedford Cemetery, 3.  
 Bedford, Mass., 3.  
 Bell, Dr. Luther V., 25.  
 Bell, William Graham, 21.  
 Belle Isle, 33, 24.  
 Berwick City, La., 66.  
 Bickford, Robert, 57.  
 Bigelow, Abigail, 48.  
 Bigelow, Abigail (Witt), 48.  
 Bigelow, Jason, 48.  
 Blackshire Station, 38.  
 "Blessing of the Bay," The, 49, 62.  
 Bolles, David, 10, 12.  
 Bolles, Lucy Stone, 11.  
 Bond, Lieutenant-Colonel William, 5.  
 Bonner Avenue, 10, 14.  
 Bonner, David, 10.  
 Bonner, Eliza, 10.  
 Bonner, Emily, 10.  
 Bonner, George, 10.  
 Bonner, George Washington, 10.  
 Bonner, John, 10.  
 Bonner, Jonathan, 10.  
 Bonner, Mary, 10, 12, 13.  
 Bonner, Philip, 9, 13.  
 Bonner, William, 10, 14.  
 Booker, Simeon, 43.  
 Booth, Dr. Chauncy, 25.  
 Boston Chamber of Commerce, 17.  
 Boston Corn Exchange, 17.  
 Boston Harbor, 51.  
 Boston & Maine Railroad, 71.  
 Boston, Mass., 9.  
 Boston Society of Civil Engineers, 62.  
 Boston Street, 6, 20.  
 Boston Tea Party, The, 54.  
 Boston Transcript, 27.  
 Bow Street, 6, 7, 11, 13.  
 Boston Water Power Co., The, 58.  
 Bowdoin College, 46.  
 Brashcar, La., 66.  
 Brastow, George O., 62.  
 Bridgewater Normal School, 23.  
 Brimmer School, Boston, Mass., 23, 24.  
 Bristol, Eng., 53.  
 "British Retreat from Concord," 61.  
 Broadway, 5, 6.  
 Broadway Park, 17, 59.  
 Brookline, Mass., 58.  
 Brooks, Phillips, 72.  
 Brown, Ann, 43.  
 Brown, George Hay, 82.  
 Bryant, Wallace, 24.  
 Bull, David, 59.  
 Bunker Hill, 56.  
 Burbank, William A., 50.  
 Burgoyne, General, 26.  
 Burnham, Sarah M., 46.  
 Butler, General B. F., 64, 80, 81.  
 Butterfield, Samuel, 44.  
 "Buttonwoods, The," 83.  
 Cambridge Chronicle, The, 50.  
 Cambridge Common, 51.  
 Cambridge Divinity School, 46.  
 Cambridge Electric Light Co., 60.  
 Cambridge Gas Company, 17.  
 Cambridge Library Association, 74.  
 Cambridge, Mass., 1, 2, 5, 8, 11, 19, 47, 54, 64, 70.  
 Cambridge Parish, 9.  
 Cambridgeport, Mass., 9, 19, 51, 58.  
 Cambridge Street, 16.  
 Cambridge Street Railway, 22.  
 Cambridge Water Works, 57.  
 Camden Street Hospital, 40.





Camp Prospect Hill, 5.  
 Canaan, N. H., 47.  
 Cape Cod Canal, 59.  
 Capen, Rev. Samuel, 30.  
 Carpenter, Sara A. S., 1.  
 Carr, Lucretia Russell, 43, 45.  
 Castle William (Fort Independence), 51.  
 Caverno, Arthur, 47.  
 Caverno, Elizabeth A., 47.  
 Caverno, Jeremiah, 47.  
 Caverno, Margaret (Brewster), 47.  
 Caverno, Olive H. (Foss), 47.  
 Cedar Street, 60.  
 Central Square, 15, 16.  
 Central Street, 11, 18, 19, 24, 25, 27.  
 Champney, Richard, 53.  
 Champney, Samuel, 53.  
 Charles River, 11.  
 Charles River Basin Commission, 60.  
 Charleston, S. C., 38.  
 "Charlestown Estates," Wyman, 4, 8.  
 Charlestown, Mass., 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 18,  
 20, 24, 41, 47, 55, 57.  
 Charlestown Water Works, 57.  
 Chapman, Edmund, 19.  
 Chase, J. G., 57.  
 Chelmsford, Mass., 20.  
 Chenny, Ebenezer, 2.  
 Chilmark, Martha's Vineyard, 23.  
 Christ Church, New Orleans, La., 82.  
 Chubbuck, Rev. F. E. R., 82.  
 "Civil Engineering as a Vocation," 61.  
 Civil War, The, 71.  
 Claremont, N. H., 20.  
 "Clay Pits and Free Baths," 61.  
 Coburn, James M., 6.  
 Colburn, Joshua O., 43.  
 Cole, Caroline Adelaide, 21.  
 Cole, Erastus E., 21.  
 Columbus Avenue, 6.  
 Company E, Thirty-ninth Regiment, 32.  
 Concord Bridge, 2.  
 Concord, Mass., 2.  
 Concord, N. H., 9.  
 Cooke, S. N., 45.  
 Cook, Susanna Russell, 44, 46.  
 Cotting, Martha E., 47.  
 Craigie's Bridge, 60.  
 Cross Street, 6, 20.  
 Cross Street Universalist Church, 21.  
 Culpeper, 32.  
 Curtis, H. K., 45.  
 Cushing's Manual, 74.  
 Cutler, Martha, 4.  
 Cutter, Emma M., 19.  
 Cutter, Evelina, 18.  
 Cutter House, 5.  
 Cutter, Richard, 4.

Damon, Rev. David, 46.  
 Damon, Norwood P., 46.  
 Dana Street, Cambridge, 56.  
 Dartmouth, Mass., 23.  
 Davis, Jefferson, 33.  
 Davenport & Bridges, 19.  
 Declaration of Independence, 77.  
 Dedham, Mass., 47.  
 Defence, Ship, 4.  
 Delft Haven Colony of Pilgrim Fathers,  
 62.  
 Department of the Gulf, 65.

Department of Massachusetts, G. A. R.,  
 64.  
 Derby, Rebecca, 46.  
 Dickerman, Frank E., 24.  
 Dickerman, Quincy E., 20, 23, 24.  
 Dickson, Aaron P., 46.  
 Dodge, ———, 16.

Eames, Margaret, 2.  
 "Early History of Somerville," 61.  
 "Early History of Ten Hills Farm, The,"  
 61.  
 East Cambridge, Mass., 8.  
 Eastham, Mass., 22.  
 East Stoughton, Mass., 45.  
 Edgell, Captain Benjamin, 5.  
 Editorials in Somerville Journal by  
 Charles D. Elliot, 61.  
 Eliot, Abigail, 53.  
 Eliot, Abigail, 53.  
 Eliot, Benjamin, 53.  
 Eliot, Ebenezer, 53.  
 Eliot, Elizabeth, 53.  
 Eliot, Hannah, 53.  
 Eliot, Jacob, 54.  
 Eliot, Jane, 53.  
 Eliot, Joel, 54.  
 Eliot, John, 53.  
 Eliot, Joseph, 53, 54.  
 Eliot, Joseph, Jr., 53.  
 Eliot, Mercy, 54.  
 Eliot, Nehemiah, 53.  
 Eliot, Nehemiah, Jr., 54.  
 Eliot, Samuel, 53.  
 Eliot, Thomas, 53.  
 Eliot, Thomas, Jr., 53.  
 Elliot, Adelaide Genevieve, 63.  
 Elliot, Alfred Lawrence, 56, 62.  
 Elliot, Caroline, 54.  
 Elliot, Charles Edwin, 54.  
 Elliot, Charles Darwin, 49, 53-54.  
 Elliot, Charles Joseph, 63.  
 Elliot, Clara Lenora, 62.  
 Elliot, Ella Florence, 62.  
 Elliot, Hannah, 54.  
 Elliot, Joel, 78.  
 Elliot, Joel Augustus, 54.  
 Elliot, Joseph, 53, 54, 55.  
 Elliot, Mary Elvira, 32, 56, 62.  
 Elliot, Mary Joanna, 54.  
 Elliot, Mary Murray (Flagg), 54.  
 Elliot, Nancy Maria, 54.  
 Elliot, Sarah Elizabeth, 54.  
 Elliot, Timothy, 54.  
 Elliot, Zenora (Tucker), 53, 55.  
 Elm House, 34.  
 Emory, ———, 65, 66.  
 English Union, The, 52.  
 Enneking, John J., 26.  
 Everett, Edward, 26.

Fairhaven, Mass., 23.  
 Farragut, Admiral, 65.  
 "Feasible Metropolitan Boulevard for  
 Somerville," 61.  
 Federal Street, Boston, 11.  
 Female Writing School, Charlestown, 44.  
 Firemen's Relief Fund, 18.  
 First Church of Cambridge, 6.  
 First Congregational (Unitarian) So-  
 ciety in Somerville, 6, 13, 17, 18, 19.





- "First National Flag, The," 61.  
 First Parish, Cambridge, Mass., 8.  
 First Universalist Church, 13, 18.  
 First Universalist Church, Men's Club of, 62, 64.  
 First Universalist Society in Somerville, 55.  
 Fitchburg, Mass., 26.  
 Fitchburg Railroad, 57, 74, 78.  
 Five Cents Savings Bank, Charlestown, The, 25.  
 Flagg, Sarah (Hicks), 54.  
 Flagg, Timothy, 54.  
 Florence, S. C., 38.  
 Forster School, 50.  
 Fort Bisland, 66.  
 Fort Butler, 68.  
 Fort Darling, 38.  
 Fort St. Philip, 64.  
 Fowle, F. E., 48.  
 Foxboro Centre, Mass., 55.  
 Foxboro, Mass., 53, 54, 55.  
 Franklin, General, 67, 81.  
 Franklin Literary Association, 74.  
 Franklin Street, Arlington, Mass., 48.  
 Freetown, 5.  
 Frost, Elisha, 46.  
 Frost, Rebecca, 20.  
 Fuller, J. F., 58.  
 Gage, General, 52.  
 Gardenville, 32.  
 Gardner, Mary B., 47.  
 Gardner, Miles, 47.  
 Gardner Row, 47.  
 Gardner, Thomas, 5.  
 Gates, General, 51, 54.  
 Geddis' Twine Factory, 12.  
 Gerrish, Elizabeth, 43.  
 Goddard, Thomas, 19.  
 Goldsboro, 39.  
 Goodhue, Eliza, 10.  
 "Governor John Winthrop and His Ten Hills Farm," 61.  
 Grand Army of the Republic, 68.  
 Gray's Elegy, 76.  
 Gray, Rev. Francis A., 63.  
 Great Bromley, Essex County, Eng., 1.  
 Green, Marshal-General John, 53.  
 Grover, Benjamin, 9.  
 Grover, Elizabeth, 9.  
 Grover, General, 65, 66, 68.  
 Hague, Rev. William, 11.  
 Hale, Sarah Josepa (Buell), 31.  
 Haley, Mary A., 25.  
 "Hanneman Tub," 14.  
 Hapgood, Emily (Chase), 22.  
 Hapgood, Nahum R., 22.  
 Harvard College, 29, 46.  
 Harvard Square, 9.  
 Hastings, Jonas, 45.  
 Hastings, Joseph S., 45.  
 Hastings, Lucy, 45.  
 Hatch, —, 45.  
 Haverhill Historical Society, 64, 83.  
 Hawes, Frank M., 8, 41, 72.  
 Hawes, Levi L., 64.  
 Hawkins, Guy C., 47.  
 Hawkins House, 5, 17.  
 Hawkins, Nathaniel, 7.  
 Hayes, John S., 50.  
 Haynes, Amos, 44.  
 Haynes, Susan E., 44.  
 Hayward, Grace H., 24.  
 Hayward, Henry S., 24.  
 Haywood, J., 43.  
 Heath, General William, 77.  
 Henchman, Nathaniel H., 43.  
 Hicks, John, 54.  
 Hicks, Zachariah, 53.  
 Highland Avenue, 24, 60.  
 Hill, Ira, 59.  
 Hill, James, Jr., 47.  
 Historical Papers by Charles D. Elliot, 61.  
 "Historic Somerville," 61.  
 "Historic Tablets," 61.  
 "History of Somerville," 61.  
 Hitchcock, —, 57.  
 Hitchings, Augustus, 10.  
 Holland, Silas, 19.  
 Holland Street, 19.  
 Hollis Street Church, 9.  
 Holmes, J. Albert, 49, 56.  
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 2, 9.  
 Home for the Aged, 10.  
 Hopkins Classical School, 56, 70.  
 Hopkins, Edward, 56.  
 Hopkins, James R., 50.  
 Houston, Governor, 46.  
 Houston, Major David C., 65.  
 Howe, H., 32.  
 Hyde, F. J., 32.  
 Hyer, Emily Jane, 62.  
 Hyer, Nathaniel F., 62, 80, 81.  
 Ipswich, Mass., 53.  
 Jacob, Colonel John, 5.  
 James River, 33.  
 Jewett, Henry J., 46.  
 Jewett, Hon. Jedediah, 46.  
 John Abbot Lodge, 23.  
 Kent, Samuel, 7.  
 Kidder, Mary Williams, 21.  
 Kimball, Harriet, 30.  
 King Phillip, 26.  
 King Phillip's War, 53.  
 Kinsley, F. R., 32.  
 Knight, Hersina, 43.  
 La Fourche, 65.  
 Lake Ponchartrain, 63, 80.  
 Lane, Captain James, 3.  
 Lawrence, Lieutenant Eleazer, 53.  
 Lawrence, Major Eleazer, 53.  
 Lawrence, John, 56.  
 Lawrence, Sibil, 56.  
 Lawrence, Sibil (Robbins), 56.  
 Lawrence, Sir Robert, 56.  
 Lawrence, Simon, 56.  
 Lexington, Mass., 2, 44.  
 Libby, No. 1, 32.  
 Libby, No. 2, 32.  
 Libby, No. 3, 32.  
 Lincoln, Rollin T., 27.  
 Littlefield, Austin, 36.  
 Littleton, Mass., 56.  
 Lock, Captain Benjamin, 5.  
 Longfellow, Henry W., 77.





- Long Wharf, Boston, 51.  
 Loring, —, 30.  
 Lossing, Benson J., 52.  
 Lovett, W., 32.  
 Lowell, Mass., 59.  
 Lunenburg, Mass., 46.  
 Lynn, Mass., 59.  
 Lynnfield, Mass., 46.  
 Madisonville, La., 68, 80.  
 Magoun, Arg. Sarah, 18.  
 Magoun, John A., 46.  
 Main Street, Cambridge, 56.  
 Malden, Mass., 49, 53, 56.  
 Mallett, Isaac, 5.  
 Mallet, John, 50.  
 Mankato, Minn., 24.  
 Mann, Jairus, 15.  
 "Marmion," 74.  
 "Mary Had a Little Lamb," The Author of, 25-31.  
 Mason, William A., 58.  
 Massachusetts Bay, Province of, 51.  
 Massachusetts Institute of Technology, 59.  
 Massachusetts Real Estate Exchange, 62.  
 Massachusetts Truant Officers' Association, 23.  
 Maulsby, David L., 20.  
 Mayhew School, Boston, Mass., 23.  
 McKoun, Abigail, 46.  
 McKoun, Martha, 46.  
 McLean Asylum, 25, 26.  
 Meade, General, 32.  
 Medford Street, 7, 71.  
 Medford, Mass., 5, 21, 48, 55.  
 Menotomy, 3, 4, 6.  
 Metropolitan Park Commission, 60.  
 Middlesex Bleachery, 10, 19.  
 Middlesex Fells Reservation, 60.  
 "Milk Row," 7, 47.  
 Milk Row School, 7, 8, 10, 15, 41, 43, 56.  
 Miller's River, 8, 59.  
 Milton, Mass., 20.  
 Mississippi River, 65, 67, 82.  
 Mitchelson, Marshal-General Edward, 53.  
 Mobile, Ala., 68.  
 Morse, Elisha, 54.  
 Morse, Joanna, 54.  
 Morse, Rev. Dr., 10.  
 Mt. Auburn, 27.  
 Mt. Holly, Vt., 55, 56.  
 Munroe, —, 48.  
 Munroe, Edwin, 17, 21.  
 Munroe, Henry, 56.  
 Myles, Rev. John, 53.  
 "Myles Standish and the Plymouth Explorers," 61.  
 Mystic, No. 6, 14.  
 Mystic Pumping Station, 60.  
 Mystic River, 51, 71.  
 Mystic Valley Parkway, 50.  
 Nahant, Mass., 13.  
 Napoleon, 69, 77.  
 Nathan Tufts Park, 51.  
 National Geographic Society, 62.  
 Naval School Hospital, 40.  
 New Bridge, 9.  
 New England Historic Genealogical Society, 62.  
 New England Primer, 78.  
 New Ipswich, N. H., 48.  
 New Orleans, La., 62, 64, 65, 66, 67, 80, 81, 82.  
 Newton Centre, Mass., 58.  
 Newton, Joanna, 45.  
 Newton, Mass., 22.  
 Nineteenth Army Corps, 65.  
 Nineteenth Army Corps, History of the, 64.  
 Ninetieth Pennsylvania, 32.  
 Noble, Mary Ann, 10.  
 North Star, Transport, 65.  
 North Street, 45.  
 Norton North Precinct, 53.  
 Norton, Mass., 53.  
 Norwich, Conn., 22.  
 Nutting, John, 53.  
 Oasis Lodge, I. O. O. F., 23.  
 Oglethorpe Guard House, 38.  
 Oliver, F. J., 32.  
 Oliver, Judson W., 32, 33, 34.  
 Old Powder House, 5, 26, 41, 49, 51, 52, 60.  
 "Old Roads," 61.  
 "Old Royal House, Medford, The," 62.  
 Old South Church, 9.  
 Old South Meeting-house, 30.  
 Oliver Tufts House, 82.  
 Opelousas, La., 66.  
 Oxford Street, 59.  
 Paige, Rev. Lucius R., 47.  
 Park Street, 71.  
 "Paul Revere's Ride and the March to Concord," 61.  
 Pemberton's Factory, 32.  
 Perkins, Joseph P., 24.  
 Perkins, Rebecca M., 24.  
 Perkins, Sarah P., 24.  
 Perry, James, 48.  
 Perry, John, 48.  
 Perry, Jason Bigelow, 48.  
 Perry, Colonel J. P., 48.  
 Perry, Lydia, 48.  
 Perry, Sarah, 43.  
 Perry, William A., 50.  
 Pierce, —, 16.  
 Pierce, Almira L., 17.  
 Pierce, Augusta L., 18.  
 Pierce, Jacob, 42.  
 Pierce, Oliver, 47.  
 Pitt, William, 53.  
 Pleasant Street, Boston, 9.  
 "Pollution of the Water Supply," 61.  
 Pope School, 20.  
 "Port Hudson," 62, 63, 67.  
 "Port Hudson, The Siege of," 64.  
 Portland, Me., 46.  
 Powder House Boulevard, 60.  
 Prescott, Edwin R., 44.  
 Prescott, Mary M., 44.  
 Prescott School, 22.  
 Prospect Hill, 6, 26, 48, 49, 59.  
 Prospect Hill School, 9, 46, 56.  
 Prospect Hill Tower, 62.  
 Prospect Street, 8, 16.  
 Professors' Row, 34.  
 "Proposed Charles River Dam and the





Commerce and Industries of Cambridge," 61.  
 Province of Massachusetts Bay, 51.  
 Pundita Ramabai, The, 26.  
 Pythian Block, 7, 11, 59.

Quincy Street, 14.

Ramsdell, Eliza, 46.  
 Randolph Academy, 55.  
 Rand, Sarah, 11.  
 Rand, Thomas, 11.  
 Rapidan River, 32.  
 Raymond, Edward B., 27.  
 Red River, La., 66, 67, 68.  
 Reed, Joseph, 52.  
 Registry of Deeds, 11.  
 Rehoboth, Mass., 53.  
 "Request for a Wide and Deep Lock in Charles River Dam," 61.  
 Revere, Mass., 17, 18.  
 "Revolutionary Landmarks," 61.  
 Rice, Mary, 13.  
 Richard Coeur de Lion, 56.  
 Richardson, George L., 57.  
 Richmond, 80.  
 Richmond Hospital, 34.  
 Richmond, N. H., 11.  
 Richmond, Va., 33.  
 Riley, Colonel, 66.  
 Rindge, N. H., 48.  
 Ring, David, Jr., 82.  
 Rockland, Me., 58.  
 Rogers, Rev. Nathaniel, 53.  
 Roulston, John, 29, 30.  
 Runey, George, 16.  
 Runey, Horace, 16.  
 Runey, John, 14, 13.  
 Russ, Rev. Mr., 13.  
 Russell District, 48.  
 Russell, James, 43.  
 Russell, Levi, 42, 46, 47.  
 Russell, Philemon, 42.  
 Russell, Philemon R., Jr., 42, 44, 45.  
 Russell, Rebecca, 47.  
 "Russell's" School, The, 42.  
 Russell Street, 44.  
 Russell, Kezia, 45.  
 Russell, Kezia Teel, 45.

Sabine Pass, 67.  
 Sabine River, 81.  
 Sakaski, Lizzie, 82.  
 Sanborn, Albert L., 12, 15.  
 Sanborn Avenue, 14.  
 Sanborn, Daniel, 15.  
 Sanborn, Daniel A., 57.  
 Sanborn, David A., 12, 14, 15, 18.  
 Sanborn, George A., 12.  
 Sanborn, Hannah Adams (Stone), 18.  
 Sanborn Insurance Map Co., 57.  
 Sanborn, Martha, 14.  
 Sanborn, Robert, 11, 12, 14.  
 Sanborn, Martha Maria, 12.  
 Sanborn, Mary Jane, 12.  
 Sargent, Aaron, 20.  
 Sargent, Rev. John, 6.  
 Saugus, Mass., 45.  
 Saunders, Hon. Charles Hicks, 62.  
 Savannah, Ga., 38.

Sawyer, Mary E., 25, 26.  
 Sawyer, William Brewster, 27, 28.  
 Saxe, John G., 26.  
 Schofield, General, 39.  
 School Street, 6, 7.  
 Scituate, Mass., 13.  
 Scoville, Sarah, 10.  
 Scripture, Samuel, 53.  
 Seal, Our, 49-52.  
 Sharon, Mass., 23.  
 Shed, Samuel, 7.  
 Sherman, General, 35.  
 Sherman, T. W., 65.  
 Shrewsbury, Mass., 4, 22, 45.  
 Smith, Alfred, 24.  
 Snow, Lemuel H., 20, 22.  
 Soley Lodge, 24.  
 Somerville Avenue, 7, 11, 71.  
 Somerville Avenue, Widening of, 59.  
 Somerville Board of Trade, 60, 62, 64, 70.  
 Somerville City Hall, 56.  
 "Somerville's Development and Progress," 62.  
 Somerville High School, 56, 82.  
 Somerville Historical Society, 23, 24, 60, 62, 63, 64, 72, 82.  
 Somerville Journal, The, 59, 83, 84.  
 Somerville Light Infantry, 19.  
 "Somerville in the Revolution," 61.  
 Somerville, Mass., 22.  
 Somerville National Bank, 17.  
 Somerville, No. 1, 15.  
 "Somerville Past and Present," 61.  
 Somerville Public Library, 17.  
 Somerville Royal Arch Chapter, 24.  
 Somerville Savings Bank, 19.  
 "Somerville in War Times," 61.  
 Somerville Woman's Relief Corps, 64.  
 Sons of American Revolution, 62.  
 Sons of the Revolution, Massachusetts Society of, 51.  
 Southern Prison Life, Reminiscences of, 32-41.  
 South Sea Island, 77.  
 Southworth, Gordon A., 22.  
 Spear Place, Boston, 9.  
 Spencer, John, Jr., 82.  
 Spencer, Mary, 82.  
 Spencer, Mary (Urann), 82.  
 Squire, John P., 43.  
 St. Andrew, Cross of, 52.  
 State Constitutional Convention, 80.  
 State House, 60.  
 Stearns, —, 74.  
 Stearns, Rebecca Russell, 45.  
 Stearns & Sandborn, 57.  
 Stearns & Stevenson, 57.  
 Stearns, William B., 57.  
 St. George, Cross of, 52.  
 Sterling, Mass., 25, 26.  
 Stevenson, C. L., 57.  
 "Stinted Common, The," 62.  
 St. Louis, Mo., 80.  
 Ston, Mary, 7.  
 Stone Avenue, 14.  
 Stone, Bettsy, 7, 9.  
 Stone, Charles Henry, 11.  
 Stone, Chary, 2.  
 Stone, Chary Adams, 4.





- Stone, Daniel, 8, 13, 14.  
 Stone, David, 1, 8.  
 Stone, Eliza, 8.  
 Stone Family Association, 1.  
 Stone, Gregory, 1, 2, 4.  
 "Stone, Gregory, and Some of His De-  
 scendants," 1.  
 Stone, Hannah, 8, 14.  
 Stone, Hannah Adams, 8, 12, 14.  
 "Stone, John, and His Descendants in  
 Somerville," 1-19.  
 Stone, John Cutter, 8.  
 Stone, John Tufts, 8.  
 Stone, Jonathan, 2, 3, 4, 7, 8, 18.  
 Stone, Lucy, 7, 10.  
 Stone, Lydia, 8, 12, 13.  
 Stone, Martha, 8, 11.  
 Stone, Mary, 5, 8, 9, 14.  
 Stone, Nathaniel, 7.  
 Stone, Nathaniel Tufts, 11, 14, 18.  
 Stone, Samuel, 2, 4.  
 Stone, Sarah (Rand), 18.  
 Stone, Seth, 4, 5.  
 Stone, Simon, 1.  
 Stone, Susanna, 5.  
 Stone, Symond, 1.  
 Stone, Thomas Jefferson, 8, 13.  
 Storer, Rev. Seth, 2.  
 Story, Hon. Isaac, 62.  
 Stoughton, Mass., 22, 45.  
 Sturtevant, Richard H., 12.  
 Suffolk, The, 81.  
 Summer Street, 6, 25.  
 Sumner, Me., 82.  
 Sutton, Mass., 22.  
 Swan, George, 43.  
 Swan, James, 44, 45.  
 Swan, Reuben, 44, 45.  
 Swan, Samuel, 23.  
 Swan, Samuel (or Richard), 46.  
 Swansea, Mass., 53.  
 Sycamore Street, 82.  
 Taunton, Mass., 53.  
 Taunton North Purchase, 53.  
 Taylor, —, 66.  
 Teel, Emeline, 46.  
 Teel, Horatio, 46.  
 Teel, Louisa, 46.  
 Teel, Ruth, 45.  
 Teel, Samuel P., 43.  
 Teel, Thomas E., 46.  
 "Ten Hills Farm," 50, 51.  
 Texas, 81.  
 Townsend, Mass., 2, 3, 4.  
 Townsend, Vt., 25.  
 Trumpet, The, 55.  
 Tucker, Abigail (Newell), 55.  
 Tucker, Sibil (Laurence), 55.  
 Tucker, Captain Stephen, 55.  
 Tucker, Stephen, Jr., 55, 56.  
 Tucker, Zenora, 55.  
 Tufts, Ann Adams, 5.  
 Tufts, Benjamin, 5.  
 Tufts, Charles, 17, 62, 63.  
 Tufts College, 15, 17, 73.  
 Tufts, Elizabeth Perry, 6.  
 Tufts, John, 5.  
 Tufts, Mary, 5.  
 Tufts, Mary Pierce, 6.  
 Tufts, Nathan, 14, 51.  
 Tufts, Nathaniel, 6.  
 Tufts, Peter, 5, 6.  
 Tufts, Captain Peter, 6.  
 Tufts, Samuel, 7.  
 Tufts, Timothy, 7.  
 Turner, Rev. Edward, 43.  
 Turner, Captain William, 53.  
 Tyler, Mary E., 26, 30, 31.  
 Tyler, Columbus, 25, 27.  
 Underwood, James, 42, 48.  
 Union Flag Unfurled, 52.  
 Union Ladies' Soldiers' Aid Society, 82.  
 Union, Rock County, Wis., 82.  
 Union Square, 7, 8, 12, 15, 17, 19, 74.  
 "Union Square Before the War," 62.  
 "Union Square and Its Neighborhood  
 About the Year 1846," 62.  
 Unitarian Church, 27.  
 Unitarian Parsonage, 18.  
 United Colonies, 52.  
 Unity, N. H., 44.  
 Upham, John, 49.  
 Upham, William Henry, 49.  
 Urann, Captain Thomas, 77.  
 Veteran Firemen's Association, 18.  
 Vicksburg, 65.  
 Victoria, 72.  
 Vinal, Alfred E., 14, 18.  
 Vinal Avenue, 6, 14.  
 Vinal, Edward E., 14.  
 Vinal, Emmeline A., 14.  
 Vinal, John W., 14, 18.  
 Vinal, Lucy A., 14.  
 Vinal, Lydia, 14.  
 Vinal, Lydia M., 13, 18.  
 Vinal, Lydia (Stone), 17.  
 Vinal, Margaret F., 14.  
 Vinal, Martha A., 14.  
 Vinal, Mary Elizabeth, 13.  
 Vinal, Quincy Adams, 14, 15, 17, 62.  
 Vinal, Robert, 13, 17.  
 Vinal, Robert Aldersey, 13, 14, 15, 17.  
 Wade, Captain Jonathan, 53.  
 Wakefield, Mass., 22.  
 Walker, Leonard, 57.  
 Walnut Hill, 15.  
 Walnut Hill School, The, 41-48.  
 Walnut Street, 6, 11, 14, 16, 17, 56.  
 Waltham, Mass., 2, 3.  
 War Department, 64.  
 Warren Avenue, 13, 14.  
 Warren, Mary, 46.  
 Warren School, Charlestown, Mass., 24.  
 Washington, D. C., 41.  
 Washington, George, 26, 52, 54, 69, 77.  
 Washington Street, 5, 6, 14, 16, 20.  
 Waters, Elizabeth A., 20, 21.  
 Watertown, Mass., 1, 2, 4, 56.  
 Wayland, Mass., 46.  
 Weitzel, —, 65, 66.  
 Welch, Abram, 14.  
 Wellington Bridge, 50.  
 Wellington, Chary, 3.  
 Wellington, Thomas, 3.  
 Westboro, Mass., 45.  
 West Cambridge Road School, 44.  
 West Cambridge, Mass., 18, 19, 43, 45,  
 46, 48.





- Western Electric Company of Chicago, 21.  
 West Medford, Mass., 60.  
 Webster Avenue, 15.  
 Weymouth, Mass., 49.  
 "What Somerville Needs," 61.  
 Wheeler, ———, 16.  
 White, Hannah, 53.  
 White, John, 53.  
 White, Mercy, 53.  
 White, Lieutenant Nicholas, 53.  
 Whitman, Edmund B., 56.  
 Whitman, Ensign John, 53.  
 Whitridge, Elizabeth, 6.  
 Whittemore, Amos, Jr., 47.  
 Whittemore, Clara D., 47, 48.  
 Whittemore, James Russell, 47.  
 Whittemore, Jonathan, 43.  
 Whittemore, J. W., 32.  
 Whittemore, Miranda, 43, 44, 45.  
 Whittemore, Rev. Thomas, 55.  
 Whittemore, William, 41.  
 Wilkins, Mary, 44.  
 Willard C. Kinsley (Independent) Relief Corps, 32.  
 Willard C. Kinsley Post, No. 139, 64.  
 Williams, Charles, Jr., 20, 21.  
 Williams, Herbert Farmer Coe, 21.  
 Williams, Lester Holmes, 21.  
 Willow Avenue, 60.  
 Wilmington, N. C., 39, 40.  
 Wilson, Sally, 48.  
 Wilson, Sally (Scripture), 48.  
 Wilson, Major Supply, 48.  
 Winchester, Mass., 21, 60.  
 Winnik, Louisa H., 46.  
 Winnisimmet Square, Chelsea, Mass., 57.  
 Winship, Dr., 73.  
 Winter Hill, 47.  
 Winter Hill Congregational Church, 24.  
 Winter Hill Improvement Association, 62, 64.  
 Winter Hill Universalist Church, 63.  
 "Winthrop, John," 62.  
 Winthrop, Governor John, 49.  
 Wirtz, General, 35, 36, 37.  
 Wisconsin Territory, 80.  
 Woburn Road School, 45.  
 Woman's Christian Temperance Union, 27.  
 Woman's Relief Corps, 27.  
 Wonohaquaham Tribe of Red Men, 23.  
 Wood, James A., 11.  
 Wood, James Freeman, 11.  
 Woodlawn, 63.  
 Wood, Sarah Bolles, 11.  
 Worcester, George P., 46.  
 Worcester High School, 22.  
 Worcester, Mass., 22.  
 Wrentham, Mass., 55, 56.  
 Wyatt's Field, 10.  
 Wyman, Luke, 48.  
 Wyman, Thomas B., 44, 46.  
 Wyman, Dr. Morrill, 25.  
 Wyman, Ruth, 48.  
 Yorktown, Va., 57, 64.





# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

## 1909-1910

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	F. D. Lapham
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. Florence E. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. Ella R. Hurd
Treasurer . . . . .	William B. Holmes
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	J. Albert Holmes
Councillors-at-Large . . . . .	{ Rev. Francis A. Gray L. Roger Wentworth Anna P. Vinal

## Standing Committees for Year 1909-10

### Publication

Mr. Frank M. Hawes  
Mrs. Sara R. Stone Carpenter  
Mr. Samuel C. Earle  
Mr. Sam Walter Foss

### Rectology

Miss Elizabeth A. Waters  
Rev. Francis A. Gray  
Mr. Samuel C. Earle

### Historic Sites

Mr. Joseph O. Hayden  
Mr. Aaron Sargent  
Mr. John F. Ayer  
Mr. Amos W. Shepard

### Essays and Addresses

Mr. John F. Ayer  
Mr. Seth Mason  
Mr. William E. Brigham  
Miss Florence E. Carr

### Library and Cabinet

Mr. Levi L. Hawes  
Mrs. Mary D. Hawes  
Mrs. Ellen P. Angier

### Military Records

Mr. John H. Dusseault  
Mr. Levi L. Hawes  
Miss Mary A. Haley  
Mr. George M. Houghton

### Hospitality

Mrs. Florence E. Holmes  
Mr. William B. Holmes  
Mrs. E. B. Pillsbury  
Mrs. Helen M. Heald  
Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham

### Photographs

Mr. J. Albert Holmes  
Mr. B. F. Freeman  
Mr. A. L. Haskell  
Mr. James F. Whitney  
Mr. William C. Richardson

### Press

Mrs. Ella R. Hurd  
Miss Anna P. Vinal

### Clippings

Mrs. Charles D. Elliot  
Mrs. Ella R. Hurd  
Miss Mary E. Elliot

### Local History

Miss Mary A. Haley  
Miss Harriet E. Tuell  
Miss Mary E. Northup  
Mrs. Emma Walter Gray  
Dr. A. E. Winship

### Auditing

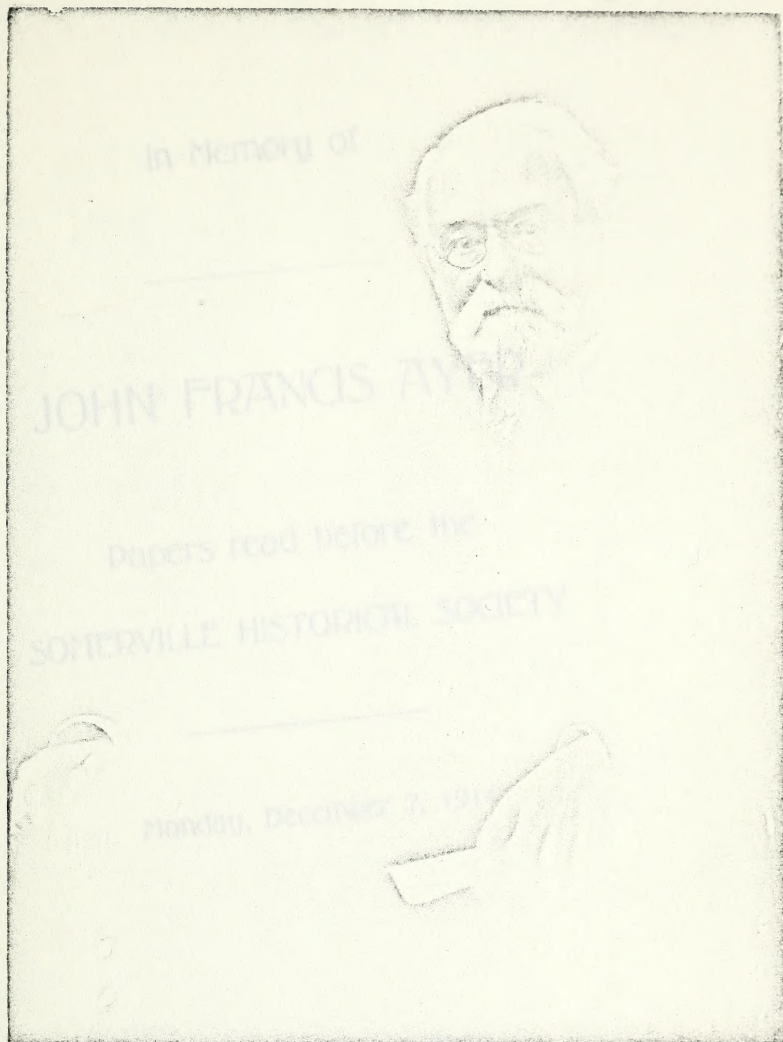
Mr. F. DeWitt Lapham  
Mr. James F. Whitney

### Building Fund

Mr. John F. Ayer  
Rev. Francis A. Gray  
Mr. John Albert Holmes  
Miss Elizabeth A. Waters  
Mrs. Ella R. Hurd







JOHN FRANCIS AYER





In Memory of

---

JOHN FRANCIS AYER

Papers read before the  
SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

---

Monday, December 7, 1914

310306





Historic Leaves

Volume 1

Historic Leaves

Volume 1

Volume 1

Volume 1





# Historic Leaves

Published by

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1915

Vol. IX

No. 1

(end)



Historic Leaves

Published by

Worcester Historical Society

Worcester, Mass.

October, 1915

No. 1

Vol. IX

F 84484.4

# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. IX.

OCTOBER, 1915

No. 1

## JOHN FRANCIS AYER

It is a great privilege you have accorded me to stand before so many friends of my dear father, and to contribute what I may to this gathering in his memory. I cannot think of any form of memorial that would be more acceptable to him than such a one as you have planned in the intimacy of this much-loved society. He saw the fitness of a sympathetic tribute to the departed, and worthy effort of his own had been expended to revivify the deeds and records of those no longer with you. He delighted in imagination to reconstruct the past and to give it honor.

His family is one most easily traced in many volumes in the early history.

Among these I find the exact Anti-  
quarian, the the Greely  
Family, the of lo-  
cal family records in America. The  
nately for the busy person who has not time to sift and  
calculate, they all bark back to the identical source, the  
father in England of those who arrived in America. The  
several strains are entirely distinct and can be followed  
without difficulty.

An interesting quotation from an old book of heraldry gives the origin of the name as follows: "Ayrre or Eyre; the first of the family was named Traslave, who was one of the followers of William the Conqueror. At the battle of Hastings, A. D. 1066, Duke William was thrown from his horse and his helmet beaten into his face; which Traslave, observing, pulled it off and horsed him again. The Duke told him





# HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. IX.

OCTOBER, 1915

No. 1

## JOHN FRANCIS AYER

It is a great privilege you have accorded me to stand before so many friends of my dear father, and to contribute what I may to this gathering in his memory. I cannot think of any form of memorial that would be more acceptable to him than such a one as you have planned in the intimacy of this much-loved society. He saw the fitness of a sympathetic tribute to the departed, and worthy effort of his own had been expended to revivify the deeds and records of those no longer with you. He delighted in imagination to reconstruct the past and to give it honor.

His family is one most easily traced, as many volumes in the Boston Public Library contain its early history. Among these I might mention the volumes of the Essex Antiquarian, the Genealogies of the Ayer Family, the Greely Family, the Tremain Family, and several brochures of local family records in different towns or states. Fortunately for the busy person who has not time to sift and calculate, they all hark back to the identical source, the father in England of those who settled in America. The several strains are entirely distinct and can be followed without difficulty.

An interesting quotation from an old book of heraldry gives the origin of the name as follows: "Ayres or Eyre: the first of the family was named Truelove, who was one of the followers of William the Conqueror. At the battle of Hastings, A. D. 1066, Duke William was thrown from his horse and his helmet beaten into his face; which Truelove, observing, pulled it off and horsed him again. The Duke told him





"Thou shalt be from Truelove called Eyre (or air) because thou hast given me the air I breathe. After the battle the Duke on inquiry respecting him, found him severely wounded (the leg and thigh having been struck off). He ordered him the greatest care, and on his recovery gave him lands in Derby in reward for his services, and the leg and thigh in armor cut off for his crest, an honorary badge yet worn by all the Eyres in England." (This is reproduced in the family histories.) "The seat he lived at he called Hope, because he had hope in the greatest extremity." He was knighted by William and became Sir Humphrey le Heyer. In direct descent from him was Galpedus le Heyer, of the time of Edward II. Fifth in descent from Galpedus was Thomas Ayer, of New Sarum, England, who held lands in Winston, County of Dorset, in the twenty-first year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth. He was the father of those who emigrated to America during the reign of Charles I.

Among the immigrants of that time were large numbers from the vicinity of Ipswich and Haverhill in Suffolk, Salisbury in Wiltshire, and Newbury. In establishing themselves in the new country, they named their settlements after their English home towns. Thus Ipswich in Massachusetts was founded in 1633, Newbury in 1635, Salisbury in 1639, and Haverhill in 1640. Conspicuous among these early settlers was John Ayer, son of Thomas, previously mentioned. John Ayer was born in Wiltshire, England, in 1592; died March 30, 1657, at Haverhill, Mass. He brought with him to this country in 1637, besides his wife, eight children. He lived first at Salisbury, then in Ipswich, and finally became a resident of Haverhill in 1645, where he remained until his death in 1657. He and his two brothers, Robert and Thomas, were leading men among the earliest settlers of Haverhill. Their descendants are very numerous. In 1700 it was supposed that nearly one-third of the inhabitants of Haverhill township were Ayers. John built a house on the main highway to the north, with land reaching south to the Merrimac River. Since that time





until beyond the middle of the last century, this house was constantly occupied by his descendants, its last owner having been of the sixth generation, a brother of my father's grandfather, who also was born in the house.

John Ayer's son Robert was born in England in 1625 before the emigration of the family. He died in Haverhill in 1711. He was a freeman, a farmer, selectman in 1685, and one of a committee of three to install the second minister of Haverhill, Rev. Benjamin Rolfe.

His son, Samuel, born in 1654, was one of the most worthy and intelligent citizens of Haverhill, serving as constable, member of the Provincial Assembly, selectman, tithing man, first town treasurer, deacon, and captain of militia. He performed valiant service against the Indians in King Phillip's war. On August 27, 1708, Haverhill, then a compact village of about thirty houses, was attacked and almost entirely destroyed by Indians under the direction of the French forces from Canada. Sixteen of the inhabitants, among them the minister before-mentioned, Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, were massacred, and many made captives. When the enemy retreated they were followed by Captain Samuel Ayer with a company of twenty men, who, though outnumbered thirteen to one, attacked them fearlessly, killing nine of their number and retaking several prisoners. The captain was shot in the groin and died just as his son reached the scene with reinforcements. From Samuel the descent proceeds through James, 1686, John, 1714, Obadiah, 1751, Nathaniel, 1787, Nathaniel, Jr., 1812, John Francis, 1858.\*

\*James Ayer, born Haverhill 27 October 1686; married Mary White, 10 May, 1711; died 19, December 1771. Their son John Ayer, born Haverhill 18 April, 1714; married (1) Elizabeth Hale of Newbury, 27 January, 1746; died 17 September 1757; married (2) Sarah, widow of Daniel Perkins of Boxford, 26 September, 1759; died 1777. By his first marriage, Obadiah Ayer was born Haverhill 24 June, 1751; married Elizabeth Whittier of Haverhill 22 January, 1778; died 28 March, 1823. Their fourth child and second son was Nathaniel Ayer, born Haverhill, 26 June, 1787; married Elizabeth Fordick, 12 September, 1811, born Charlestown 10 May, 1791, dau. David and Mary (Frothingham) Fordick; died Winchester, 27 October 1872. Nathaniel Ayer, Jr. born Charlestown 15 June, 1812; married 31 August 1834, Fanny dau. Hezekiah R. and Mary Miller; died Boston, 20 March, 1874.

John Francis Ayer, born Charlestown 18 March, 1838; married (1) Harriette Maria, dau. Charles Curtis and Harriet (Stevens) Smith of Charlestown, 15 September, 1858; married (2) Vashti E. Hapgood, 14 October, 1897; married (3) Cora F. Barnes, 20 November, 1909; died Wakefield, 20 April, 1914.





My father was born in Charlestown on March 18, 1838, the second son of Nathaniel Ayer, Jr., and Emmeline Miller, both born in Charlestown. He attended the Warren School then the Charlestown High School. His memory of Charlestown in those days is of a town "as aristocratic" (as he used to say) "as old Concord." He used to be sent by his grandmother to invite her friends to tea. The little boy of ten or twelve had to present himself at the front door with a little speech which his grandmother had prepared for him in which she had carefully drilled him. Thus he delivered himself: "Mrs. Ayer presents her compliments and asks the pleasure of your company to tea at five o'clock tomorrow afternoon."

He left the high school in 1854 at the end of his second year. Those were stirring days in American history. Missouri and other southern states desired Kansas, then just being settled, to vote as a slave state. The North, particularly New England, was equally anxious that it should be free. In response to the call of the Emigrant Aid Society my father at the age of sixteen, with a yearning for adventure, and stirred to patriotism through public addresses and newspaper articles, joined a company of young men, himself the youngest, and travelled West to help form a free soil settlement in the new territory. The trains went only as far west as the Mississippi, to Alton, Illinois. From that point the young traveler went four hundred miles south on a Mississippi River boat to St. Louis. The next stage of his journey was by boat up the Missouri, for about as long a distance to Kansas City, then only a wharf and a straggling settlement. From there, a party sent out prospecting chose a spot thirty miles away where the young emigrants pitched their tents and gave the name of Lawrence to their town. My father, always clever with his pencil, made a picture of the first house in the town, which he sent folded in a letter to my mother. This house was used as a store for supplies for the settlers and the Indians. My father acted as clerk in the daytime





and slept upon the counter at night. He learned to trade with the Indians in their own language. He became a member of a shot-gun battalion, the first military organization in the town, whose duty was largely to assist the sheriff in carrying out the edicts of the squatter courts.

The two years he spent in Kansas were full of rich experience for him. As children we never tired of hearing stories of real Indians, and the war whoop was as familiar to our ears as the sound of his voice. His recollections included pro-slavery agitations and disagreeable acquaintance with advocates of such measures.

I think sometime in later life my father had a half-regret that he had not remained in Lawrence. Members of the party became prominent citizens, honored throughout the state, one of them being the first governor. Later the State University was established there, and the city is now and has been for many years the intellectual and literary centre of the state. At the time of its semi-centennial in 1904, my father was invited to return and to take part in its celebration. He was an honored guest on that occasion, and renewed his acquaintance with the few surviving first settlers. The little log-house, a picture of which he had made fifty years before, was re-produced and graced many a souvenir.

I suppose he was really drawn back to the East through his love for my mother, to whom, young as he was, he had been devoted for many years. She was two years his senior, and at the time of his return was teaching in the Charles-town High School. Two years later, in 1858, they were married and came to Somerville to live in a house still standing, although remodeled, on Chester avenue, in which Mr. Sears Condit lived for many years.

They became identified with the Cross Street Universalist Church, which they loved and served throughout thirty-eight years of a singularly congenial married life, all of which was spent in Somerville with the single interruption of a year or two in Medford.





During their earlier years in Somerville they retained some connection with the city of their birth, and in particular with The Charlestown High School Association, of which my father was president for a time.

The outward events of his life are really few, for his interest was mostly in his home and the plot of ground in which his flowers and vegetables grew, and his pleasure was in caring for them and his live-stock. He never belonged to a purely social club. He was a member and for a time treasurer of The Universalist Club, which is composed of laymen in that church in Greater Boston. He never held public office and had no ambition so to do. At various times in his life he belonged to dramatic, literary and historical societies, serving in nearly all of them as president through some part of their existence. He was president of The Montrose Reading Club after moving to Wakefield. He was one of the earliest members of The Somerville Historical Society and of The Bay State Historical League, of which he was formerly secretary.

After my mother's death in 1896 he was twice married. His wife, Vashti E. Hapgood, was known to many of this company. She was corresponding secretary of The Somerville Historical Society for some time. Before her marriage she had taught school in Somerville for many years. She was a lady of refinement and ability both mental and practical, and for eleven years she was the ornament of his home. She shared his joy in the exercise of hospitality, and was a loyal and true wife.

His third marriage to Miss Cora F. Barnes, of Worcester, was equally happy. She cared for him with great devotion and he lavished upon her the affection which was one of his strongest characteristics.

Perhaps a short analysis of his personality may not be out of place. He was reticent, although a certain pleasantness of manner may have concealed the withdrawing sen-





sitiveness underneath; but I think it was difficult for people to discover *himself*. His pleasantness of manner was a perfect index, however, of the pleasantness of his disposition, that manifestation of a man's character which is most in evidence in his own home circle, which, as we who knew him best can testify, grew sweeter and kinder as the years went by. Enjoying almost perfect health through all his life, he gave a noticeable impression of perennial youth. Although his hair grew white at an early age, his eyes were bright, his cheeks rosy, his step springing, and, best of all, his thought was young almost to the end of his life. It was only in the last year or two that we felt he was beginning to take the old man's view of things. Until a year or two of his death he rarely ascended the stairs of his home except upon the run. He never used a cane, and would have felt a great humiliation if it had become necessary. His interest in historical matters was fed by what was a very fundamental characteristic, a temperamental love of the picturesque. He reached back through his associations with his grandparents to the last part of the eighteenth century. His imagination was constructive. He visualized the deeds and environment of an earlier day, and he revelled in the picture. He wanted to commemorate such deeds and such environment, and worked diligently to have historical tablets fittingly inscribed for that purpose. The picture in his mind rather than the historical significance of the event may have been the incentive to perpetuate in memory such scenes as the launching of the Blessing of the Bay, the slow-moving boats through the Middlesex Canal, or the raising of the flag on Prospect Hill. His Kansas experiences were important to him in the same way. The strange new country, the war whoops and paint of the Indians, the sullen slaves along the way in Missouri, the weird lights and bonfires seen from the river boats, all these colored and augmented his interest in the entrance of Kansas into the Union as a





free state. The log-hut, the muddy Shawnee River, the squaws with their papposes on their backs, the long, lonely night rides across the prairies for supplies, these were the things that lingered in absolute vividness in memory and were cherished as valuable possessions, quite as much as the fact that, living in that environment, he had played his small part in a great national crisis. This same seizing hold of the picturesque in any situation explains his enjoyment of nature. No one could ever have found more delight in natural beauty than he. He saw it in every phase of every season. It was his solace in trouble. Although his ear was dulled for music so-called, he heard a thousand sounds in nature with joy; the call of the birds, whose names and notes and haunts he knew, the noise of running water, the boom of surf upon the rocks, or even the silence of the woods which he claimed was vocal to him.

An ever-youthful spirit, a lover of the birds, of brooks and fields, of sunrise, the ocean, and the mountains, he was a poet unexpressed, an elemental artist. Of singular purity of personal life and thought, he cherished the verities of the spirit and furthered their advancement. Although not an educated man in the common acceptance of that term, he valued learning and the fruits of it, and was open-minded toward its newer forms. His children and grandchildren rejoice in the rich legacy of his memory.

Lillian F. A. Maulsby.





## TRIBUTE OF MR. WILL C. EDDY, AUBURNDALE, MASS.

Mr. President and Associates in Historical Work:—

You do well to memorialize one who has been such an active force in promoting historical work as did Mr. John F. Ayer, so long connected with the work of the Bay State Historical League.

You knew him in your own Society and we all knew him in connection with the Bay State Historical League.

Life is the mirror of king and slave—

'Tis just what we are and do;

Then give to the world the best you have,

And the best will come back to you.

—Madeline S. Bridges.

He was the “moving spirit” in the organization of the League and its president during 1903-4-5, and then, at his own request, was retired at Ipswich from the presidency, but not allowed to retire from active participation in its management, for he was elected secretary. As to his purposes in this, the League, this evidence is gleaned from the records of that meeting: “A year ago this month the Bay State Historical League was organized and the government set about formulating a plan of operation. It was a new thing; there was no similar organization in the state, there was no precedent to refer to, to fall back upon. To bring the local organizations into the League, to ascertain the needs of each, the methods of work of every local society, the sources of success in this instance, the cause of partial failure, the formulating of plans whereby all might benefit, the holding of meetings from time to time in various places, to organize societies where none existed, to stimulate historical study and assist the local societies in their efforts to preserve everything of value pertaining to the history of their several districts by suggestion or advice,”—These were the prime objects and the reason for the existence of the League.





"I am not concerned that I have no place;  
I am concerned how I may fit myself for one.  
I am not concerned that I am not known; I  
seek to be worthy to be known."

There is no record of the first meeting of the League, but from the second meeting there is evidence most complete as to the work marked out for the organization by Mr. Ayer. It has been a great force in building historical societies and the strongest ones today are those that have followed the League persistently.

The record of June 2, 1906, has this, when Mr. Ayer declined to accept re-election as president: "What the League absolutely needs is: first, a secretary, someone to put into shape for use, or for reference, the information furnished by the several members; and second, funds to meet the expenses of this work and also for office room with vault or safe accommodations, and for proper stationery."

I do not understand that Mr. Ayer was seeking the position of secretary when he made these remarks, but it came about that the speaker was elected president to "rattle around in his shoes" and he was elected secretary. As a secretary he was a pronounced success. He knew what he wanted for that position and he fulfilled his own ideal. His records were a marvel of completeness and detail and so put that they make a readable story. They were often so much in detail that we did not have time to read them for approval. But they were "approved without reading," for we had learned to know that they were correct.

While he was secretary it fell to his lot to edit the publication of the League and here again he showed his literary ability as well as his executive ability.

While I was president, Mr. Ayer was secretary and although my ideas were somewhat advanced over those previously followed by the League, I found Mr. Ayer equal to





adopting other methods and always willing to co-operate to that end.

When I retired from the office of president I was elected a member of the Executive Committee and have remained there since (although I doubt the wisdom of the League in so continuing me), but it gave me the opportunity of keeping in touch with Mr. Ayer and his part in the work.

June 24, 1911, Mr. Ayer "read his report of the proceedings of the year." He then read what might be called his valedictory in which he positively declined a re-election; he also gave a very interesting resume of the history of the League."

And so he ended his active work as an officer of the League, but not his interest in it. This brought to the

"Where is the individual on the busy road of life who has any right to judge another? The fellow who does nothing is seldom criticised." Helen Keller has said:—

"I long to accomplish a great and noble task, but it is my chief duty and joy to accomplish humble tasks as though they were great and noble."

No better memorial to efficient and faithful service can be desired for anyone than the records of the League written by Mr. Ayer, and we can all say: "Well done, good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord." Mr. Ayer has passed to his last reward and we all have the pleasantest memories of him.

In closing let me say: "When the cradles of the universe shall have returned to the garret to rock no more; when the last tear shall have been wiped from sorrow's eye; when the dewdrops of heaven shall no longer quench the aching thirst of tender flowers; when the roses of the field shall have bowed their last sad good-night to God; when the sun shall have grown cold and is confined by destruction, then shall the work of such men cease, only to hear the glad response of angelic choirs, and to be received into that better world where pain and sorrow shall be no more."





## FROM THE SECRETARY OF THE BAY STATE HISTORIC LEAGUE

I first made the acquaintance of Mr. Ayer in February, 1904, when the Nantucket Historical Association joined the Bay State Historical League and appointed me its delegate. In that connection I was brought into frequent contact with him and could not fail to note the cheery, optimistic way in which he conducted the affairs of the League. He had that unflinching faith in its future which impressed itself upon others and compelled success. Earnest, indefatigable, ever on the alert to find new avenues for usefulness, and to enlist new gleaners in the field, with a personal magnetism that communicated itself to all his associates, working with him became a pleasure and he lived to see over fifty per cent. of the historical associations in Massachusetts arrayed under the banner that he had raised and borne with such distinguished success. We all greatly regretted when the time came, in 1906, that he felt he must put off the mantle of the presidency and, unwilling to lose his services in some official capacity, he was persuaded to accept the office of secretary, to which he was unanimously elected so long as he would serve. In 1909 he declined further official honors. His declination was reluctantly accepted and I became his successor. His earnestness and efficiency have made him a hard man to follow. I am glad to have the opportunity to pay my personal tribute to the memory of one whose geniality, ability and zeal made companionship with him a long-to-be-remembered pleasure.

Alexander Starbuck.

Waltham, July, 1915.





## REMARKS OF FRANK M. HAWES

Before speaking of Mr. Ayer and his relations with the Somerville Historical Society, I cannot, on account of our intimacy, forbear alluding to the many years during which we knew each other. In 1861, when I was a lad, not yet in my teens, he dwelt a near neighbor of ours. Mr. and Mrs. Ayer, with their little son, went to the Cross Street Church where we attended, and between the two families acquaintance soon ripened into friendship. Mr. Ayer was active in Sunday School work, as a teacher, and later as the superintendent.

My recollections of him at that time, when in the full vigor of his early manhood, is of one whom you would not pass with a casual glance. He was a fine specimen of the genus, well-built, good-looking, with a glowing complexion, a full, expressive eye, a cheerful countenance, a cordial manner—all of which gave him a marked personality. And my picture of him, though imperfect, even those who have known him only in his later years will admit is fairly accurate.

As showing the leanings of the man and his fondness for local history, I will add here that when the Cross Street Society celebrated its fiftieth anniversary, Mr. Ayer was chosen the historian of the occasion. His address was put in permanent book form, and is one of the best things of the kind which he ever did. It must have been a labor of love.

My personal acquaintance with Mr. and Mrs. Ayer and their children, two of whom I had the pleasure of instructing while they were passing through their High School course, is a bright period to look back upon. I might speak of the two homes of Mr. Stephen A. Fuller and Mr. Ayer, who were partners in the lumber business. The houses which they built side by side on Walnut street are still standing. Later, the Ayers lived for many years on Flint





street, and later still on Walter street. From these homes they extended a hearty welcome to their friends and dispensed a cordial hospitality. It was my sad privilege to attend the funeral of Mrs. Ayer from the home on Walter street.

Mr. Ayer was the most fortunate of men in his second marriage, and to this wife, as much as to him, our Historical Society is greatly indebted. Her previous training made her an invaluable corresponding secretary. It was due to them, more than any others, that this Society held together during the last years that it occupied the Oliver Tufts House. Mr. Ayer, aided by his personality and a persuasiveness of speech, often raised funds without and within the society to pay off annual deficits or past indebtednesses. It is rather remarkable, it seems to me, after the cares and annoyances of his terms of office as our president, that he and Mrs. Ayer continued such a lively interest in the Society and more so because about this time they removed from Somerville to Wakefield. In spite of the distance and the inclemency of winter evenings, they endeavored to be present at our meetings.

During the remaining years of his life, after he ceased to be our president, Mr. Ayer continued in office as one of our vice-presidents and served as chairman of the Committee on Papers and Essays. He took delight in arranging annually our programmes for the season's list of speakers, and occasionally he would himself read a paper. One of these, on his experiences as a young man in Kansas, during the exciting days of its early history, was especially interesting and deserves to be printed as a valuable contribution to the story of that section and epoch.

Mr. Ayer was remarkably optimistic and had visions of seeing our Society highly prosperous and commodiously housed in a building of its own that would have been a credit to the city. He even went so far as to have plans





drawn and to devise means of raising the wherewithal. But his courage met only with discouragement. About this time I am pleased to think, his hopeful nature found recompense in the satisfaction which must have come to him as the originator and founder (as much as any one man was) of the Bay State Historic League. The successful accomplishment of this task will be set forth in this memorial by others.

In conclusion, then, to Mr. Ayer, because of his unstinted services as president of this Society and as a member of its Council almost from the beginning, we who knew him best, who worked with him for the good of the order, and derived from him an inspiration to continued effort, although the results of our labors have not always been so apparent as we could wish—would express here our grateful remembrance.

It was the sad office of some of us, on a bright spring day in 1914, to pay the last sad rites of respect to him for whom we are holding this memorial service tonight. By thus meeting together we wish to express our continued appreciation and to show that we still keep his memory green.





## REMARKS BY MR. SETH MASON

Mr. Mason offered the following:—

Mr. President: Having been associated with Mr. Ayer officially for many years, both as a former treasurer and vice-president of this Society, I wish to bear tribute to his memory and to the conscientious and painstaking work for the interest of our society and the zeal he always displayed in its behalf. The success of our Society was always uppermost in his thoughts, and during the dark and somewhat discouraging period through which we have passed his cheerful optimism and sunny disposition has pierced the gloom and imbued us with fresh courage to face the uncertain future. We do well to hold this memorial in his honor, and enter on our records these well-merited tributes to one who has earned our love and respect. Let us strive to emulate his virtue and so may our lives be a blessing to all in the community in which we live.

1916.

January 4—Holland and the Pilgrims  
Rev. Hendrik Vroom

January 12—The American Indian  
Edwin R. Short, U. S. A.

February 1—The Somersville High School from 1822 to 1875.  
Dr. George L. Baxter.

February 15—Recent Studies in Virginia, from Richmond to  
Williamsburg.

Colonel Darwin Caldwell Parke.

March 1—Some Phases of Woman's Work During the Civil  
War.

Mrs. Mary E. Elliot.

March 15—Old Chapel Church, Cambridge, Mass.  
Mr. William E. Wall.





## .. PROGRAM ..

For the year 1914-1915

October 5—Semi-Annual Business Meeting.

November 2—The Relation of Church and Town in New England.

Rev. Edward Tallmadge Root.

November 16—Massachusetts Metes and Bounds; Past and Present.

Mr. John Stetson Edmands.

December 7—Memorial Tribute to John F. Ayer.

President Frank M. Hawes and Others.

1915.

January 4—Holland and the Pilgrims.

Rev. Hendrik Vossema

January 18—The American Indian.

Edwin R. Short, U. S. A.

February 1—The Somerville High School from 1852 to 1872.

Dr. George L. Baxter.

February 15—Recent Studies in Virginia, from Richmond to Williamsburg.

Colonel Darwin Cadwell Pavey.

March 1—Some Phases of Woman's Work During the Civil War.

Miss Mary E. Elliot.

March 15—Old Christ Church, Cambridge, Mass.

Mr. William E. Wall.





## CONTENTS.

---

	Page
SOME OLD TREES—NUMBER 1 . . . . .	Sara A. Stone 1
GUY C. HAWKINS PAPERS—NUMBER 1 . . . . .	12
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1835 . . . . .	Frank Mortimer Holmes 13

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and Curator Alfred Morton Cutler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

---

### PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE





# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1906

Vol. V

No. 2

X 2030



6202 X











